



Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

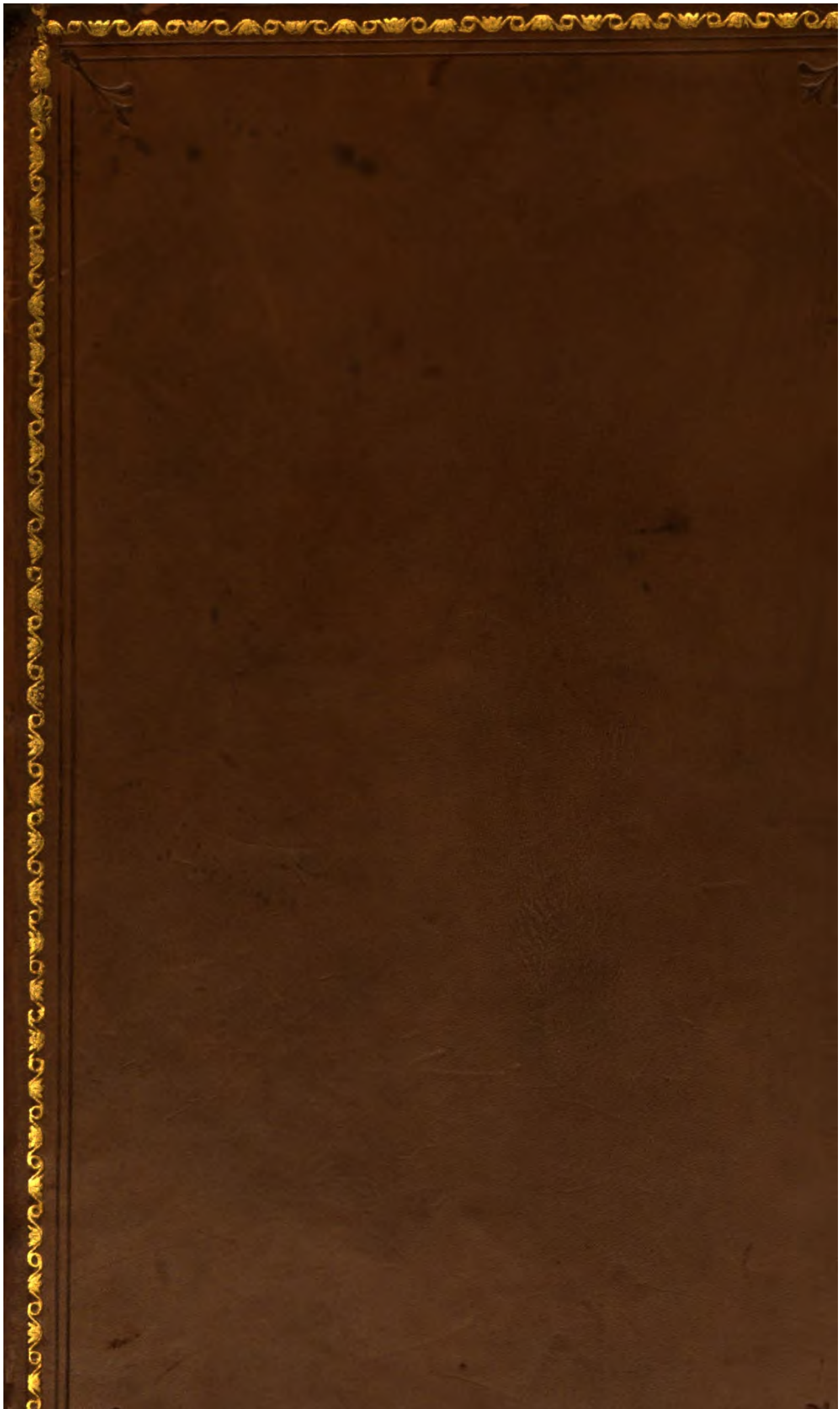
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

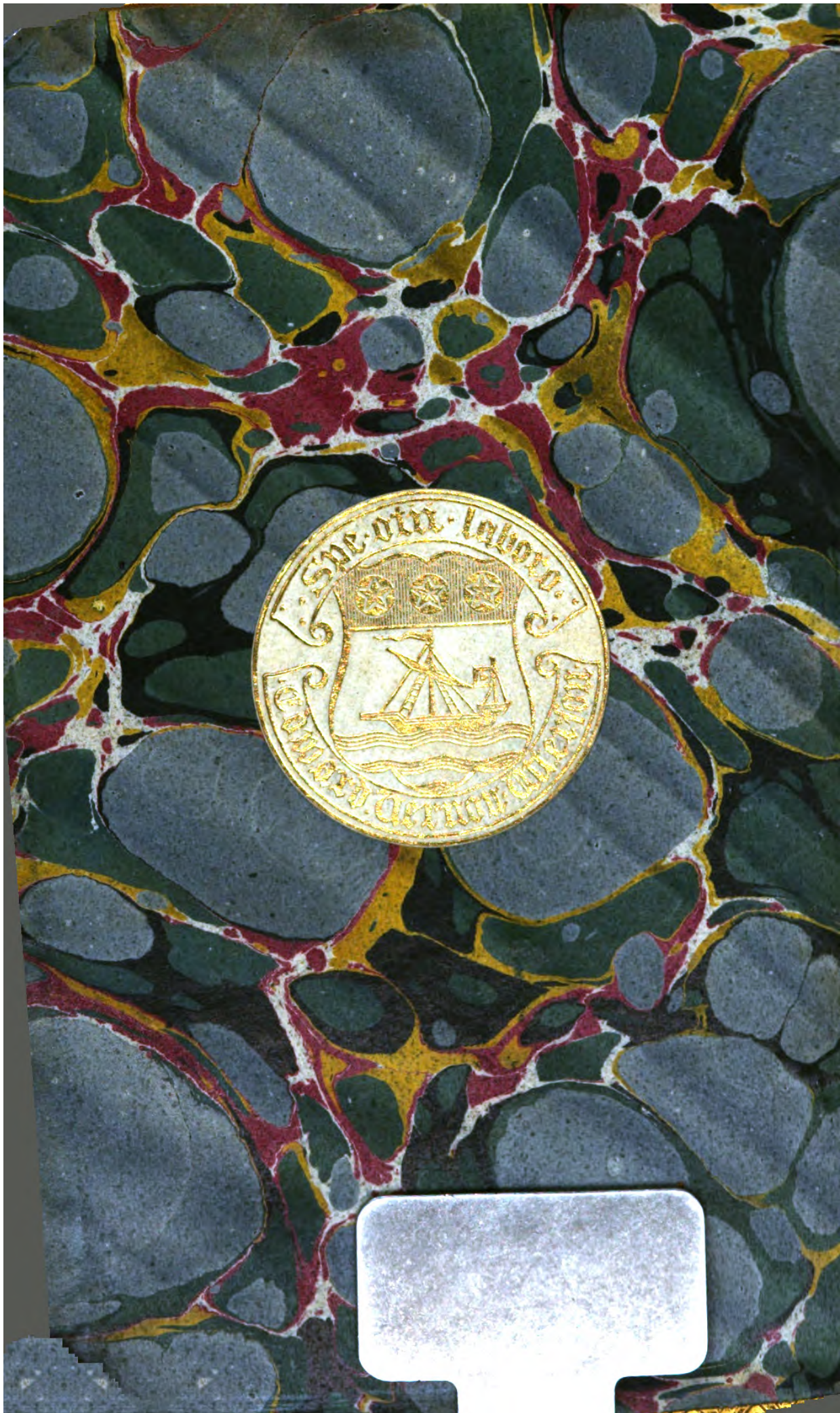
For more information see:

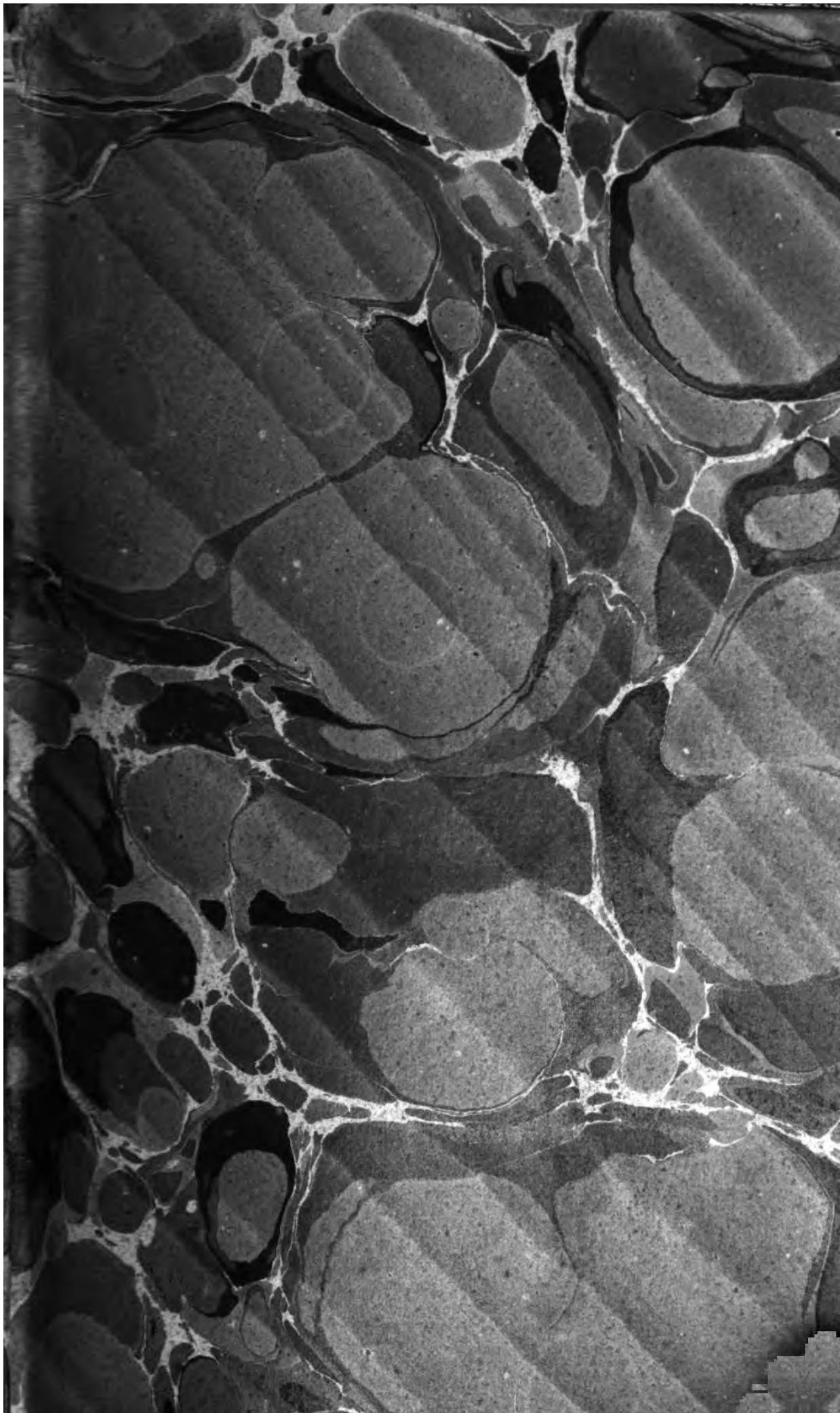
<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.

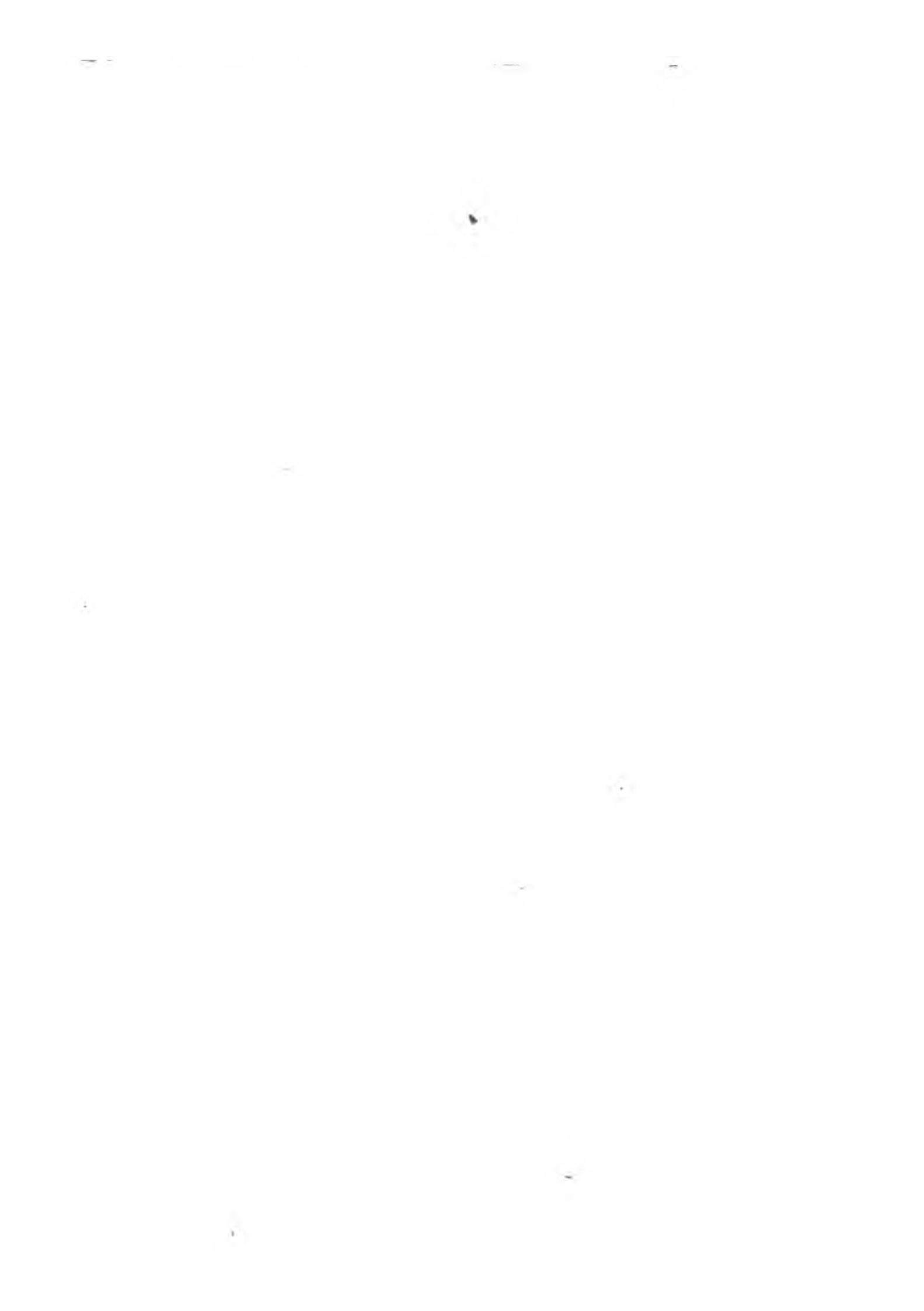




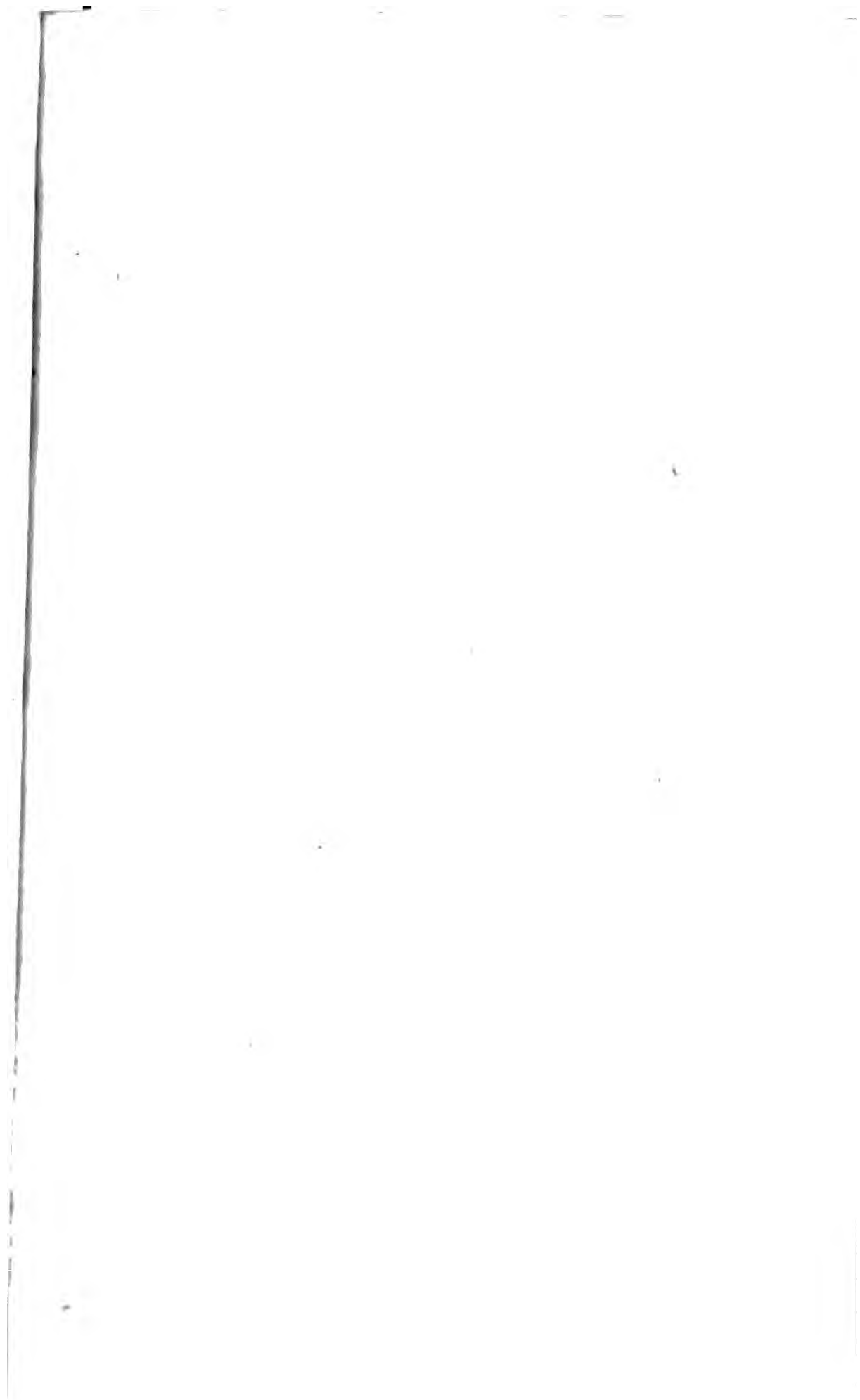


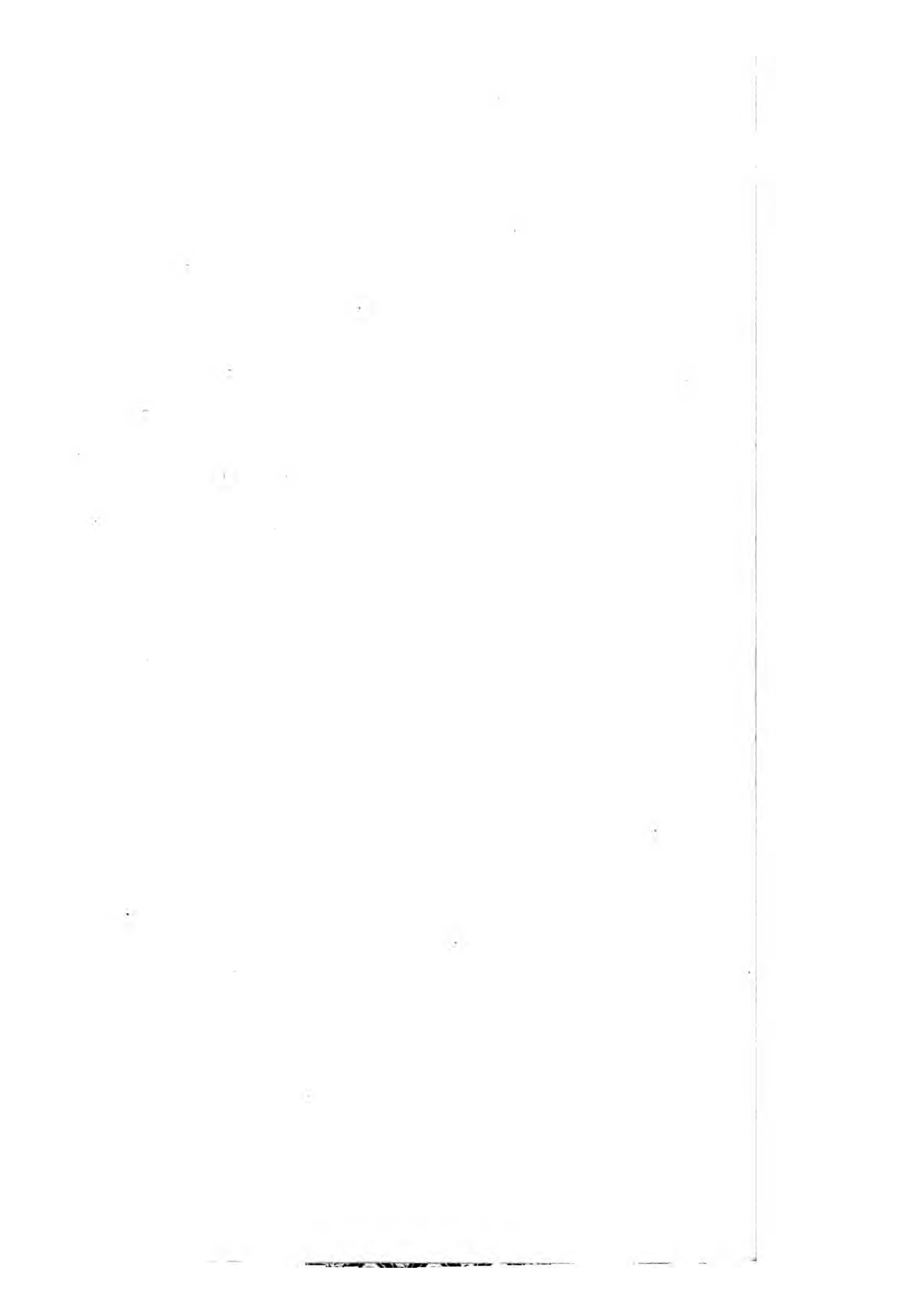
6107

Mason
A.A. 250.









P L A Y S

Written by the Late

Ingenious Mrs. *BEHN*.

V O L. IV.

C O N T A I N I N G,

Sir PATIENT FANCY.	The AMOROUS
The WIDOW RAN-	PRINCE.
TER; or, the His-	The YOUNGER
tory of BACON	BROTHER; OF,
in <i>Virginia</i> .	the AMOROUS
The EMPEROR of	JILT.
the MOON.	

The Third EDITION.

L O N D O N;

Printed for MARY POULSON, and sold by
A. BETTESWORTH in *Pater-noster-Row*, and
E. CLAY without *Temple-Bar*. M.DCC.XXIV.

105

STANIS

Written by the Duke

Imperial and Royal

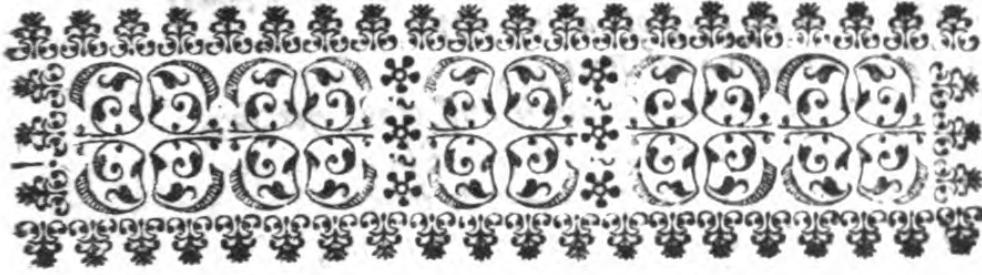
Library

THE
BRITISH MUSEUM LIBRARY
LONDON



1851

LONDON



Sir Patient Fancy.

PROLOGUE,

Spoken by *Mr. Betterton.*

WE write not now, as th' antient Poets writ,
 For your Applause of Nature, Sense and Wit;
 But, like good Tradesmen, what's in fashion vent,
 And cozen you, to give ye all content.
 True Comedy, writ even in Dryden's Style,
 Will hardly raise your Humours to a Smile.
 Long did his Sovereign Muse the Scepter sway,
 And long with Joy you did true Homage pay:
 But now, like happy States, luxurious grown,
 The Monarch Wit unjustly you dethrone,
 And a tyrannick Commonwealth prefer,
 Where each small Wit starts up and claims his share;
 And all those Laurels are in pieces torn,
 Which did e'er while one sacred Head adorn.
 Nay, even the Women now pretend to reign;
 Defend us from a Poet Joan again!

That Congregation's in a hopeful way
 To Heaven, where the Lay-Sisters teach and pray.
 Oh the great Blessing of a little Wit!
 I've seen an elevated Poet sit,
 And hear the Audience laugh and clap, yet say,
 Gad after all, 'tis a damn'd silly Play:
 He unconcern'd, cries only—— Is it so?
 No matter, these unwitty things will do,
 When your fine fustian useless Eloquence
 Serves but to chime asleep a drowsy Audience.
 Who at the vast expence of Wit would treat,
 That might so cheaply please the Appetite?
 Such homely Fare you're like to find to night:
 Our Author

Knows better how to juggle than to write:
 Alas! a Poet's good for nothing now,
 Unless he have the knack of conjuring too;
 For 'tis beyond all natural Sense to guess
 How their strange Miracles were brought to pass.
 Your Presto Jack be gone, and come again,
 With all the Hocus Art of Legerdemain;
 Your dancing Tester, Nut-meg, and your Cups,
 Out-does your Heroes and your amorous Fops.
 And if this chance to please you, by that rule,
 He that writes Wit is much the greater Fool.

Dramatis Personæ.

M E N.

<i>Sir Patient Fancy</i> , an old rich Alderman, and one that fancies himself always sick,	}	Mr. Leigh.
<i>Leander Fancy</i> , his Nephew, in love with <i>Lucretia</i> ,		Mr. Crosby.
<i>Wittmore</i> , Gallant to the <i>Lady Fancy</i> , a wild young Fellow of a small Fortune,	}	Mr. Betterton.
<i>Lodwick Knowell</i> , Son to the <i>Lady Knowell</i> , in love with <i>Isabella</i> ,		Mr. Smith.
<i>Sir Credulous Easy</i> , a foolish <i>Devonshire</i> Knight, design'd to marry <i>Lucretia</i> ,	}	Mr. Nokes.
<i>Curry</i> , his Groom,		Mr. Richards.
<i>Roger</i> , Footman to the <i>Lady Fancy</i> .		
Five Doctors, Six Servants to <i>Sir Patient</i> , Ballad-Singers and Scenaders; Page to the <i>Lady Knowell</i> .		


W O M E N.

The <i>Lady Fancy</i> , Young Wife to <i>Sir Patient</i> ,	}	Mrs. Curren.
The <i>Lady Knowell</i> , an affected learned Woman, Mother to <i>Lodwick</i> and <i>Isabella</i> , <i>Lucretia</i>		Mrs. Gwin
<i>Lucretia</i> , Daughter to the <i>L. Knowell</i> ,	}	Mrs. Price,
<i>Isabella</i> , Daughter to <i>Sir Patient Fancy</i> ,		Mrs. Betterton.
<i>Fanny</i> , a Child of seven Years old, Daughter to <i>Sir Patient Fancy</i> .		
<i>Maudy</i> , the <i>Lady Fancy</i> 's Woman,		Mrs. Gibbs.
<i>Betty</i> , Waiting-woman to <i>Isabella</i> .		

S C E N E *London*, in two Houses.

ACT I. SCENE I.

*A Room.**Enter Lucretia with Isabella.*

Isab.  IS much I owe to Fortune, my dear *Lucretia*, for being so kind to make us Neighbours, where with Ease we may continually exchange our Souls and Thoughts without the attendance of a Coach, and those other little Formalities that make a Business of a Visit; it looks so like a Journey, I hate it.

Lucr. Attendance is that Curse to Greatness that confines the Soul, and spoils good Humour; we are free whilst thus alone, and can laugh at the abominable Fopperies of this Town.

Isab. And lament the numberless Impertinences wherewith they continually plague all young Women of Quality.

Lucr. Yet these are the precious things our grave Parents still chuse out to make us happy with, and all for a filthy Jointure, the undeniable argument for our Slavery to Fools.

Isab. Custom is unkind to our Sex, not to allow us free Choice; but we above all Creatures must be forced to endure the formal Recommendations of a Parent, and the more insupportable Addresses of an odious Fop; whilst the obedient Daughter stands——thus——with her Hands pinn'd before her, a set Look, few Words, and a Mein that cries—Come marry me: out upon't.

Lucr. I perceive then, whatever your Father designs, you are resolv'd to love your own way.

Isab.

SIR PATIENT FANCY.

7

Isab. Thou mayst lay thy Maidenhead upon't, and be sure of the Misfortune to win.

Lucr. My Brother *Lodwick's* like to be a happy Man then.

Isab. Faith my dear *Lodwick* or no body in my heart, and I hope thou art as well resolv'd for my Cousin *Leander*.

Lucr. Here's my Hand upon't, I am; yet there's something sticks upon my stomach, which you must know.

Isab. Spare the Relation, for I have observ'd of late your Mother to have order'd her Eyes with some softness, her Mouth endeavouring to sweeten it self into Smiles and Dimples, as if she meant to recal Fifteen again, and give it all to *Leander*, for at him she throws her Darts.

Lucr. Is't possible thou shou'dst have perceiv'd it already?

Isab. Long since.

Lucr. And now I begin to love him, 'twould vex me to see my Mother marry him——well, I shall never call him Father.

Isab. He'll take care to give himself a better Title.

Lucr. This *Devonshire* Knight too, who is recommended to my Mother as a fit Husband for me, I shall be so tormented with——My Brother swears he's the penest, most unsufferable Fool he ever saw; when he was at my Uncle's last Summer, he made all his Diversion.

Isab. Prithee let him make ours now, for of all Fops your Country Fop is the most tolerable Animal; those of the Town are the most unmanageable Beasts in Nature.

Lucr. And are the most noisy, keeping Fops.

Isab. Keeping begins to be as ridiculous as Matrimony, and is a greater Imposition upon the Liberty of Man; the Insolence and Expence of their Mistresses has almost tir'd out all but the old and doting part of Mankind: the rest begin to know their value, and set a price upon a good Shape, a tolerable Face and Mein:—and some there are who have made excellent Bargains for themselves that way, and will flatter ye and jilt ye an antiquated Lady as artfully as the most experienc'd Miss of 'em all.

Lucr. Lord, Lord! what will this World come to? —— but this Mother of mine——*Isabella.*

[Sighs.]

Isab.

Isab. Is discreet and virtuous enough, a little too affected, as being the most learned of her Sex.

Lucr. Methinks to be read in the Arts, as they call 'em, is the peculiar Province of the other Sex.

Isab. Indeed the Men would have us think so, and boast their Learning and Languages; but if they can find any of our Sex fuller of Words, and to so little purpose as some of their Gownmen, I'll be content to change my Petticoats for Pantaloons, and go to a Grammar-school.

Lucr. Oh they're the greatest Babelards in Nature.

Isab. They call us easy and fond, and charge us with all weakness; but look into their Actions of Love, State or War, their roughest business, and you shall find 'em sway'd by some who have the luck to find their Foibles; witness my Father, a Man reasonable enough, till drawn away by doting Love and Religion: what a Monster my young Mother makes of him! flatter'd him first into Matrimony, and now into what sort of Fool or Beast she pleases to make of him.

Lucr. I wonder she does not turn him to Christianity; methinks a Conventicle should ill agree with her Humour.

Isab. Oh, she finds it the only way to secure her from his Suspicion, which if she do not e'er long give him cause for, I am mistaken in her Humour.— But see your Mother and my Cousin *Leander*, who seems, poor man, under some great Consternation, for he looks as gravely as a Lay-Elder conducting his Spouse from a Sermon.

Enter L. Knowel and Leander.

L. Kno. Oh sy upon't. See Mr. *Fancy*, where your Cousin and my *Lucretia* are idling: *Dii boni*, what an insupportable loss of time's this?

Lean. Which might be better employ'd, if I might instruct 'em, Madam.

L. Kno. Ay, Mr. *Fancy*, in consultation with the Antients.— Oh the delight of Books! when I was of their age, I always employ'd my looser Hours in reading— if serious, 'twas *Tacitus*, *Seneca*, *Plutarch's Morals*, or some such useful Author; if in an Humour gay, I was for Poetry, *Virgil*, *Homer* or *Tasso*. Oh that Love between

Renaldo

SIR PATIENT FANCY.

9

Renaldo and Armida, Mr. Fancy! Ah the Caresses that fair *Corcereis* gave, and received from the young Warrior, ah how soft, delicate and tender! Upon my Honour I cannot read them in the Excellence of their Original Language, without I know not what Emotions.

Lean. Methinks 'tis very well in our Mother Tongue, Madam.

L. Kno. O faugh, Mr. *Fancy*, what have you said, Mother Tongue! Can any thing that's great or moving be express'd in filthy *English*?—I'll give you an energetical proof, Mr. *Fancy*; observe but divine *Homer* in the *Grecian* Language—*Ton d' apamibominous prosiphe podas ochus Achilleus!* Ah how it sounds! which english'd dwindles into the most grating stuff—Then the swift-foot *Achilles* made reply: oh faugh.

Lucr. So now my Mother's in her right Sphere.

L. Kno. Come, Mr. *Fancy*, we'll pursue our first design of retiring into my Cabinet, and reading a leaf or two in *Martial*; I am a little dull, and wou'd fain laugh.

Lean. Methinks, Madam, Discourse were much better with these young Ladies. Dear *Lucretia*, find some way to release me. [Aside.]

L. Kno. Oh, how I hate the impertinence of Women, who for the generality have no other knowledge than that of dressing; I am uneasy with the unthinking Creatures.

Lucr. Indeed 'tis much better to be entertaining a young Lover alone; but I'll prevent her, if possible. [Aside.]

L. Kno. No, I am for the substantial pleasure of an Author. *Philosophemur!* is my Motto,—I'm strangely fond of you Mr. *Fancy*, for being a Scholar.

Lean. Who, Madam, I a Scholar? the greatest Duncie in Nature—Malicious Creatures, will you leave me to her mercy? [To them aside.]

Lucr. Prithce assist him in his misery, for I am mad, and can do nothing towards it. [Aside.]

Isab. Who, my Cousin *Leander* a Scholar, Madam?

Lucr. Sure he's too much a Gentleman to be a Scholar.

Isab. I vow, Madam, he spells worse than a Country Farrier when he prescribes a Drench.

Lean. Then, Madam, I write the leudest hand.

10 **SIR PATIENT FANCY.**

Ifab. Worse than a Politician or a States-man.

Lucr. He cannot read it himself when he has done.

Lean. Not a word on't, Madam.

L. Kno. This agreement to abuse him, I understand—

[*Aside.*

—Well then, Mr. *Fancy*, let's to my Cabinet—
your hand.

Lean. Now shall I be teas'd unmercifully,—I'll wait
on you Madam. [Exit *Lady.*

—Find some means to redeem me, or I shall be mad.

[Exit *Lean.*

Enter Lodwick.

Lod. Hah my dear *Isabella* here, and without a Spy! what a blessed opportunity must I be forc'd to lose, for there is just now arriv'd my Sister's Lover, whom I am oblig'd to receive: but if you have a mind to laugh a little—

Ifab. Laugh! why are you turn'd Buffoon, Tumbler, or Presbyterian Preacher?

Lod. No, but there's a Creature below more ridiculous than either of these.

Lucr. For love's sake what sort of Beast is that?

Lod. Sir *Credulous Easy*, your new Lover just come to town Bag and Baggage, and I was going to acquaint my Mother with it.

Ifab. You'll find her well employ'd with my Cousin *Leander*.

Lucr. A happy opportunity to free him: but what shall I do now, Brother?

Lod. Oh let me alone to ruin him with my Mother: get you gone, I think I hear him coming, and this Apartment is appointed for him.

Lucr. Prithce haste then, and free *Leander*, we'll into the Garden. [Exeunt *Luc. and Ifab.*

A Chair and a Table. Enter *Sir Credulous* in a riding habit, Curry his Groom carrying a Portmanteau.

Lod. Yes—'tis the Right Worshipful, I'll to my Mother with the News. [Ex. *Lod.*

Sir Cred. Come, undo my Portmanteau, and equip me, that I may look like some body before I see the Ladies—

Curry,

SIR PATIENT FANCY. II

Curry, thou shalt e'en remove now from Groom to Footman ; for I'll ne'er keep Horse more, no, nor Mare neither, since my poor *Gillian's* departed this Life.

Cur. 'Ds diggers, Sir, you have griev'd enough for your Mare in all Conscience ; think of your Mistress now, Sir, and think of her no more.

Sir Cred. Not think of her ! I shall think of her whilst I live, poor Fool, that I shall, tho I had forty Mistresses.

Cur. Nay, to say truth, Sir, 'twas a good-natur'd civil beast, and so she remain'd to her last gasp, for she cou'd never have left this World in a better time, as the saying is, so near her Journey's End.

Sir Cred. A civil Beast ! Why was it civilly done of her, thinkest thou, to die at *Brentford*, when had she liv'd till to morrow, she had been converted into Money and have been in my Pocket ? for now I am to marry and live in Town, I'll sell off all my Pads ; poor Fool, I think she e'en-died for grief I wou'd have sold her.

Cur. 'Twas unlucky to refuse Parson *Cuffer's* Wife's Money for her, Sir.

Sir Cred. Ay, and to refuse her another kindness too, that shall be nameless which she offer'd me, and which wou'd have given me good luck in Horse-flesh too ; Zoz I was a modest fool, that's truth on't.

Cur. Well, well, Sir, her time was come you must think, and we are all mortal as the saying is.

Sir Cred. Well, 'twas the lovingst Tit :—but Grass and Hay, she's gone—where be her Shoes, *Curry* ?

Cur. Here, Sir, her Skin went for good Ale at *Brentford*.

[Gives him the Shoes.]

Sir Cred. Ah, how often has she carry'd me upon these Shoes to Mother *Fumbles* ; thou remember'st her handsome Daughter, and what pure Ale she brew'd ; between one and t'other my Rent came short home there ; but let that pass too, and hang sorrow, as thou sayst, I have something else to think on.

[Takes his things out, lays them upon the Table] And *Curry*, as soon as I am dress'd, go you away to *St. Clement's* Church-yard, to *Jackson* the Cobler there.

Cur. What your Dog-tutor, Sir ?

Sir Cred. Yea, and see how my Whelp proves, I put to him last Parliament.

Cur. Yes, Sir.

Enter Leander, and starts back seeing Sir Cred.

Sir Cred. And ask him what Gamesters come to the Ponds now adays, and what good Dogs.

Cur. Yes, Sir.

Lean. This is the Beast *Lodwick* spoke of; how cou'd I laugh were he design'd for any but *Lucretia*! [*Aside.*

Sir Cred. And dost hear, ask him if he have not sold his own Dog *Diver* with the white Ear; if I can purchase him, and my own Dog prove right, I'll be Duke of *Ducking-Pond* ads zoz.

[*Sir Cred. dresses himself.*

Well, I think I shall be fine anon, he.

Cur. But zo, zo, Sir, as the saying is, this Suit's a little out of fashion, 'twas made that very year I came to your Worship, which is five Winters, and as many Summers.

Sir Cred. What then Mun, I never wear it, but when I go to be drunk, and give my Voice for a Knight o'th' Shire, and here at *London* in Term time, and that but eight times in eight Visits to eight several Ladies to whom I was recommended.

Cur. I wonder that amongst eight you got not one, Sir.

Sir Cred. Eight! Zoz I had Eight-score, Mun; but the Devil was in 'em, they were all so forward, that before I cou'd seal and deliver, whip quoth *Fethro*, they were either all married to some body else, or run quite away; so that I am resolv'd if this same *Lucretia* prove not right, I'll e'en forswear this Town and all their false Wares, amongst which, zoz I believe they vent as many false Wives as any *Metropolitan* in Christendom, I'll say that for't, and a Riddle for't, i'faith:— come give me my Watch out,—so, my Diamond Rings too: so, I think I shall appear pretty well all together, *Curry*, nah.

Lean. Like something monstrously ridiculous, I'll be sworn. [*Aside.*

Cur.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 13

Cur. Here's your Purse of broad Gold, Sir, that your Grandmother gave you to go a wooing withal, I mean to shew, Sir.

Sir Cred. Ay, for she charg'd me never to part with it:—so, now for the Ladies. [*Shakes his Ribbons.*]

Lod. *Leander*, what mak'st thou here, like a Holy-day Fool gazing at a Monster?

Enter Lodwick.

Lean. And one I hope I have no great reason to fear.

Lod. I am of thy opinion; away, my Mother's coming; take this opportunity with my Sister, she's i'th Garden, and let me alone with this Fool, for an Entertainment that shall shew him all at once: away— [*Exit Lean.*]

[*Lod. goes in to Sir Cred.*]

Sir Cred. *Lodwick*, my dear Friend! and little Spark of Ingenuity!—Zoz Man, I'm but just come to Town.

[*Embrace.*]

Lod. 'Tis a joyful hearing, Sir.

Sir Cred. Not so joyful neither, Sir, when you shall know poor *Gillian's* death, my little grey Mare; thou knew'st her, mun: Zoz 'thas made me as melancholy as the Drone of a *Lancashire* Bag-pipe. But let that pass; and now we talk of my Mare, Zoz I long to see this Sister of thine.

Lod. She'll be with you presently, *Sir Credulous.*

Sir Cred. But hark ye, Zoz, I have been so often fob'd off in these matters, that between you and I, *Lodwick*, if I thought I shou'd not have her, Zoz, I'd ne'er lose precious time about her.

Lod. Right, Sir; and to say truth, these Women have so much Contradiction in 'em, that 'tis ten to one but a Man fails in the Art of pleasing.

Sir Cred. Why, there's it:—therefore prithee dear *Lodwick* tell me a few of thy Sister's Humors, and if I fail,—then hang me Ladies at your Door, as the Song says.

Lod. Why faith she has many odd Humors hard enough to hit.

Sir Cred. Zoz let 'em be as hard as *Hercules* his Labors in the Vale of *Basse*, I'll not be frighted from attempting her.

Lod.

14 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Lod. Why, she's one of those fantastick Creatures that must be courted her own way.

Sir Cred. Why let's hear her way.

Lod. She must be surpriz'd with strange Extravagancies wholly out of the Road and Method of common Courtship.

Sir Cred. Shaw, is that all? Zoz I'm the best in Christendom at your out-of-the-way bus'nesses.—Now do I find the Reason of all my ill Success; for I us'd one and the same method to all I courted, whatever their Humors were; hark ye, prithee give me a hint or two, and let me alone to manage Matters.

Lod. I have just now thought of a way that cannot but take——

Sir Cred. Zoz, out with it Man.

Lod. Why, what if you should represent a dumb Ambassador from the blind God of Love.

Sir Cred. How, a dumb Ambassador? Zoz Man, how shall I deliver my Embassy then, and tell her how much I love her?—besides, I had a pure Speech or two ready by heart, and that will be quite lost. *[Aside.*

Lod. Fy, fy! how dull you are! why, you shall do it by Signs, and I'll be your Interpreter.

Sir Cred. Why faith this will be pure; I understand you now Zoz, I am old excellent at Signs;—I vow this will be rare.

Lod. It will not fail to do your business, if well manag'd—but stay, here's my Sister, on your life not a syllable.

Enter Lean. Lucr. and Isab.

Sir Cred. I'll be rackt first, Mum budget,——prithee present me, I long to be at it, sure.

[He falls back, making Faces and Grimaces.

Lod. Sister, I here present you with a worthy Knight, struck dumb with admiration of your Beauty; but that's all one, he is employ'd Envoy Extraordinary from the blind God of Love: and since, like his young Master, he must be defective in one of his Senses, he chose rather to be dumb than blind.

Lucr. I hope the small Deity is in good Health, Sir?

Isab.

Isab. And his Mistress *Psyche*, Sir?!

[*He smiles and bows, and makes signs.*]

Lod. He says that *Psyche* has been sick of late, but somewhat recovered, and has sent you for a Token a pair of Jet Bracelets, and a Cambrick Handkerchief of her own spinning, with a Sentence wrought in't, *Heart in hand, at thy command.* [*Looking every word upon Sir*

Credulous as he makes signs.]

Sir Cred. Zoz, *Lodwick*, what do you mean? I'm the Son of an *Egyptian* if I understand thee.

[*Pulls him, he makes signs to him to hold his peace.*]

Lod. Come, Sir, the Tokens, produce, produce——

[*He falls back making damnable signs.*]

How! Faith I'm sorry for that with all my heart, —— he says, being somewhat put to't on his Journey, he was forced to pawn the Bracelets for half a Crown, and the Handkerchief he gave his Landlady on the Road for a Kindness received, —— this 'tis when People will be fooling ——

Sir Cred. Why, the Devil's in this *Lodwick*, for mistaking my Signs thus: hang me if ever I thought of Bracelets or a Handkerchief, or ever received a Civility from any Woman breathing, —— is he bewitcht trow? [*Aside.*]

Lean. *Lodwick*, you are mistaken in the Knight's meaning all this while. Look on him, Sir, —— do not you guess from that Look, and wrying of his Mouth, that you mistook the Bracelets for Diamond Rings, which he humbly begs, Madam, you would grace with your fair Hand?

Lod. Ah, now I perceive it plain.

Sir Cred. A Pox of his Compliment. Why this is worse than t'other. —— What shall I do in this case? —— should I speak and undeceive them, they would swear 'twere to save my Jems: and to part with 'em —— Zoz, how simply should I look! —— but hang't, when I have married her, they are my own again.

[*Gives the Rings, falls back into Grimaces.*]

Leander whispers to *Lodwick*.

Lod. Enough —— Then Sister, she has sent you a Purse of her own knitting full of Broad Gold.

Sir

16 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

Sir Cred. Broad Gold! why, what a Pox does the Man conjure?

Lod. Which, Sister, faith you must accept of, you see by that Grimace how much 'twill grieve him else.

Sir Cred. A pretty civil way this to rob a Man.—Why, Lodwick,—why what a Pox will they have no mercy?—Zoz I'll see how far they'll drive the Jest.

[Gives the Gold and bows, and scrapes and screws.

Lod. Say you so, Sir? well I'll see what may be done.—Sister, behold him, and take pity on him; he has but one more humble request to make you, 'tis to receive a Gold Watch which he designs you from himself.

Sir Cred. Why, how long has this Fellow been a Conjuror? for he does deal with the Devil, that's certain,—Lodwick—— [Pulls him.

Lod. Ay do, speak and spoil all, do.

Sir Cred. Speak and spoil all, quoth he! and the Duce take me if I am not provok'd to't; why how the Devil should he light flap-dash, as they say, upon every thing thus? Well, Zoz, I'm resolv'd to give it her, and shame her if she have any Conscience in her.

[Gives his Watch with pitiful Grimaces.

Lod. Now, Sister, you must know there's a Mystery in this Watch, 'tis a kind of Hieroglyphick that will instruct you how a married Woman of your Quality ought to live.

Sir Cred. How, my Watch Mysteries and Hieroglyphicks! the Devil take me, if I knew of any such Virtues it had. [They are all looking on the Watch.

Lod. Beginning at Eight, from which down to Twelve you ought to imploy in dressing, till Two at Dinner, till Five in Visits, till Seven at the Play, till Nine i'th' Park, Ten at Supper with your Lover, if your Husband be not at home, or keep his distance, which he's too well bred not to do; then from Ten to Twelve are the happy Hours the Bergere, those of intire Enjoyment. ———

Sir Cred. Say you so? hang me if I shall not go near to think I may chance to be a Cuckold by the shift.

Isab. Well, Sir, what must she do from Twelve till Eight again?

Lod.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 17

Lod. Oh! those are the dull Conjugal hours for sleeping with her own Husband, and dreaming of Joys her absent Lover alone can give her.

Sir Cred. Nay an she be for Sleeping, Zoz, I am as good at that as she can be for her Heart; or Snoring either.

Lod. But I have done; *Sir Credulous* has a dumb Oration to make you by way of farther Explanation.

Sir Cred. A dumb Oration! Now do I know no more how to speak a dumb Speech than a Dog.

Luc. Oh I love that sort of Eloquence extremely.

Lod. I told you this would take her.

Sir Cred. Nay, I know your silent Speeches are incomparable, and I have such a Speech in my Head.

Lod. Your Postures, your Postures, begin, Sir.

[*He puts himself into a ready Posture as if he would speak, but only makes Faces.*

Enter Page.

Pag. Sir, my Lady desires to speak with you. [*To Lean.*

Lean. I'll wait on her, — a Devil on't. —

Pag. I have command to bring you Sir, instantly.

Lean. This is ill luck, Madam, I cannot see the Face out; I'll wait on you as soon as my good Fortune will permit me. [*Exit.*

Luc. He's going to my Mother, dear *Ifabella*, let's go and hinder their Discourse: Farewel, Sir Ambassador, pray remember us to *Psyche*, not forgetting the little blind Archer, ha, ha, ha. — [*Ex. laughing.*

Sir Cred. So, I have undone all, they are both gone, flown I protest; why what a Devil ail'd 'em? Now have been dumb all this while to no purpose, you too never told her my meaning right; as I hope to breathe, had any but yourself done this, I should have sworn by *Helicon* and all the rest of the Devils, you had had a design to have abus'd me, and cheated me of all my Moveables too.

Lod. What a hopeful Project was here defeated by my mistake! but courage, *Sir Credulous*, I'll put you in a way shall fetch all about again.

Sir Cred. Say you so? ah dear *Lodwick*, let me hear it.

Lod.

18 **SIR PATIENT FANCY.**

Lod. Why, you shall this Night give your Mistress a Serenade.

Sir Cred. How! a Serenade!

Lod. Yes, but it must be perform'd after an extravagant manner, none of your dull amorous Night-walking Noises so familiar in this Town; *Lucretia* loves nothing but what's great and extravagant, and passes the reach of vulgar practice.

Sir Cred. What think you of a silent Serenade? Zoz, say but the word and it shall be done Man, let me alone for Frolicks, i'faith.

Lod. A silent one! no, that's to wear a good humour to the Stumps; I wou'd have this want for no Noise; the extremes of these two Addresses will set off one another.

Sir Cred. Say you so? what think you then of the Bagpipe, Tongs, and Grid-iron, Cat-calls, and loud-sounding Cymbals?

Lod. Naught, naught, and of known use; you might as well treat her with Viols and Flute-doux, which were enough to disoblige her for ever.

Sir Cred. Why, what think you then of the King of *Bantam's* own Musick?

Lod. How! the King of *Bantam's* Musick?

Sir Cred. Ay, Sir, the King of *Bantam's*: a Friend of mine had a Present sent him from thence, a most unheard of curiosity I'll assure you.

Lod. That, that by all means, Sir.

Sir Cred. Well, I'll go borrow 'em presently.

Lod. You must provide your self of a Song.

Sir Cred. A Song! hang't, 'tis but rummaging the Play-Books, stealing thence is lawful Prize — Well, Sir, your Servant. [Exit.

Enter Leander.

Lod. I hope 'twill be ridiculous enough, and then the Devil's in't if it do not his Business with my Mother, for she hates all impertinent Noises but what she makes herself. She's now going to make a Visit to your Uncle, purposely to give me an opportunity to *Isabella*.

Lean.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 19

Lean. And I'm ingaged to wait on her thither, she designs to carry the Fiddles too; he's mad enough already, but such a Visit will fit him for Bedlam.

Lod. No matter, for you have all a leud Hand with him; between his continual imaginary Sickness, and perpetual Physic, a Man might take more Pleasure in an Hospital. What the Devil did he marry a young Wife for? and they say a handsome Creature too.

Lean. To keep up his Title of Cuckold I think, for she has Beauty enough for Temptation, and no doubt makes the right use on't: wou'd I cou'd know it, that I might prevent her cheating my Uncle longer to my undoing.

Lod. She'll be cunning enough for that, if she have Wit: but now thou talk'st of Intrigues, when didst see *Witmore*? that Rogue has some lucky Haunt which we must find out. — But my Mother expects your attendance; I'll go seek my Sister, and make all the Interest there I can for you, whilst you pay me in the same Coin to *Isabella*. *Adieu.*

Lean. Trust my Friendship. — [Ex. severally.]

ACT II. SCENE I.

A Garden.

Enter Lady Fancy, Wittmore, and Maundy.

Wit. ENOUGH, my charming Mistress, you've set my Soul at Peace, and chas'd away those Fears and Doubts my Jealousy created there.

Maun. Mr. *Wittmore's* saitsfy'd of your Constancy, Madam; tho had I been your Ladyship, I should have given him a more substantial Proof, which you might yet do, if you wou'd make a handsome use of your time.

Wit. *Maundy* advises well; my dearest, let's withdraw to yonder Covert Arbour, whose kind Shades will secure

secure us a Happiness that Gods might envy.

[Offers to lead her out.]

L. Fan. I dare not for the world, Sir *Patient* is now asleep, and 'tis to those few Minutes we are oblig'd for this Enjoyment, which shou'd Love make us transgress, and he shou'd wake and surprize us, we were undone for ever: no, let us employ this little time we have in consulting how we may be often happy, and securely so: Oh how I languish for the dear opportunity!

Wit. And cou'd you guess what Torments I have suffer'd in these few fatal Months that have divided us, thou wou'dst pity me.

L. Fan.—But to our Business; for tho I am yet unsuspected by my Husband, I am eternally plagu'd with his Company; he's so fond of me, he scarce gives me time to write to thee, he waits on me from room to room, hands me in the Garden, shoulders me in the Balcony, nay does the office of my Women, dresses and undresses me, and does so smirk at his handywork; in fine, dear *Wittmore*, I am impatient till I can have less of his Company, and more of thine.

Wit. Does he never go out of Town?

L. Fan. Never without me.

Wit. Nor to Church?

L. Fan. To a Meeting house you mean, and then too carries me, and is as vainly proud of me as of his rebellious Opinion, for his Religion means nothing but that, and Contradiction; which I seem to like too, since 'tis the best Cloke I can put on to cheat him with.

Wit. Right, my fair Hypocrite.

L. Fan. But dear *Wittmore*, there's nothing so comical as to hear me cant, and even cheat those Knaves, the Preachers themselves, that delude the ignorant Rabble.

Wit. What Miracles cannot your Eyes and Tongue perform!

L. Fan. Judge what a fine Life I lead the while, to be set up with an old formal dotting sick Husband, and a Herd of snivelling grinning Hypocrites, that call themselves the teaching Saints; who under pretence of securing me to the number of their Flock, do so sneer upon me,

pat my Breasts, and cry fie, fie upon this fashion of tempting Nakedness.

Wit. Dear Creature, how cou'd we laugh at thy new way of living, had we but some Minutes allow'd us to enjoy that Pleasure alone. [Thro the Nose.]

L. Fan. Think, dear *Wittmore* think, *Maundy* and I have thought over all our Devices to no purpose.

Wit. Pox on't I'm the dullest Dog at plotting, thinking, in the world; I should have made a damnable ill Town Poet: Has he quite left off going to the Change?

L. Fan. Oh, he's grown cautiously rich, and will venture none of his substantial Stock in transitory Traffick.

Wit. Has he no mutinous Cabal, nor Coffee-houses, where he goes religiously to consult the Welfare of the Nation?

L. Fan. His imagin'd Sicknefs has made this their Rendezvous.

Wit. When he goes to his blind Devotion, cannot you pretend to be sick? that may give us at least two or three opportunities to begin with.

L. Fan. Oh! then I should be plagu'd with continual Physick and Extempore Prayers till I were sick indeed.

Wit. Damn the humorous Coxcomb and all his Family, what shall we do?

L. Fan. Not all, for he has a Daughter that has good Humour, Wit, and Beauty enough to save her,—stay— that has jogg'd a Thought, as the Learned say, which must jog on, till the motion have produc'd something worth my thinking.

Enter Roger running.

Maun. Ad's me here's danger near, our Scout comes in such haste.

L. Fan. Roger, what's the matter?

Rog. My Master, Madam, is risen from sleep, and is come in to the Garden.—— See, Madam, he's here.

L. Fan. What an unlucky Accident was this?

Wit. What shall I do, 'tis too late to obscure my self?

L. Fan. He sees you already, thro the Trees,—here— keep your distance, your Hat under your Arm; so, be very ceremonious, whilst I settle a demure Countenance.——

Maun.

Maun. Well, there never came good of Lovers that were given to too much talking; had you been silently kind all this while, you had been willing to have parted by this time.

Enter Sir Patient in a Night-Gown, reading a Bill.

Sir Pat. Hum,—Twelve Purges for this present *January*—as I take it, good Mr. Doctor, I took but Ten in all *December*.—By this Rule I am sicker this Month, than I was the last.—And good Master Apothecary, methinks your Prizes are somewhat too high: at this rate no body wou'd be sick.—Here, *Roger*, see it paid however,—Ha, hum. [*Sees 'em, and starts back.*] What's here, my Lady Wife entertaining a leud Fellow of the Town? a flanting Cap and Feather Blade.

L. Fan. *Sir Patient* cannot now be spoken with. But, Sir, that which I was going just now to say to you, was, that it would be very convenient in my opinion to make your Addresses to *Isabella*,—'twill give us opportunities. [*Aside*] We Ladies love no Imposition; this is Counsel my Husband perhaps will not like, but I would have all Women chuse their Man, as I have done,—my dear *Witmore*.

[*Aside.*

Sir Pat. I profess ingenuously an excellent good Lady this of mine, tho I do not like her Counsel to the young Man, who I perceive would be a Suitor to my Daughter *Isabella*.

Wit. Madam, should I follow my inclinations, I should pay my Vows no where but there,—but I am inform'd *Sir Patient* is a Man so positively resolv'd.—

L. Fan. That you should love his Wife. [*Aside.*

Wit. And I'll comply with that Resolve of his, and neither love nor marry *Isabella*, without his Permission; and I doubt not but I shall by my Respects to him gain his Consent,—to cuckold him. [*Aside.*

Sir Pat. I profess ingenuously, a very discreet young Man.

Wit. But, Madam, when may I promise my self the satisfaction of coming again? For I'm impatient for the Sight and Enjoyment of the fair Person I love.

L. Fan.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 23

L. Fan. Sir, you may come at night, and something I will do by that time shall certainly give you that access you wish for.

Wit. May I depend upon that happiness?

L. Fan. Oh, doubt not my power over Sir Patient.

Sir Pat. My Lady Fancy, you promise largely.

L. Fan. Sir Patient here!

Wit. A Devil on him, wou'd I were well off: now must I dissemble, profess, and lye most confoundedly.

Sir Pat. Your Servant, Sir, your Servant.—My Lady Fancy, your Ladyship is well entertain'd I see; have a care you make me not jealous, my Lady Fancy.

L. Fan. Indeed I have given you cause, Sir Patient, for I have been entertaining a Lover, and one you must admit of too.

Sir Pat. Say ye so, my Lady Fancy?—Well, Sir, I am a Man of Reason, and if you shew me good causes why, can bid you welcome, for I do nothing without Reason and Precaution.

Wit. Sir I have.—

Sir Pat. I know what you wou'd say, Sir; few Words denoteth a wise Head,—you wou'd say that you have an Ambition to be my Son-in-Law.

Wit. You guess most right, Sir.

Sir Pat. Nay, Sir, I'll warrant I'll read a Man as well as the best, I have studied it.

Wit. Now Invention, help me or never.

Sir Pat. Your Name I pray? [*Putting off his Hat*

Wit. Fainlove, Sir. [*gravely at every Word.*

Sir Pat. Good Mr. Fainlove, your Country?

Wit. Yorkshire, Sir.

Sir Pat. What, not Mr. Fainlove's Son of Yorkshire, who was knighted in the good days of the late Lord Protector? [*Off his Hat.*

Wit. The same, Sir.—I am in, but how to come off again the Devil take me if I know. [*Aside.*

Sir Pat. He was a Man of admirable parts, believe me, a notable Head-piece, a publick-spirited Person, and a good Commonwealths-man, that he was, on my word.—Your Estate, Sir, I pray?

Wit.

Wit. I have not impair'd it Sir, and I presume you know its value:— For I am a Dog if I do. [*Aside.*]

Sir Pat. O' my Word 'tis then considerable, Sir; for he left but one Son, and fourteen hundred Pounds *per Annum*, as I take it: which Son, I hear, is lately come from *Geneva*, whither he was sent for virtuous Education. I am glad of your Arrival, Sir,——Your Religion, I pray?

Wit. You cannot doubt my Principles, Sir, since educated at *Geneva*:

Sir Pat. Your Father was a discreet Man; ah Mr. *Fainlove*, he and I have seen better days, and wish'd we cou'd have foreseen these that are arriv'd.

Wit. That he might have turn'd honest in time, he means, before he had purchas'd Bishops Lands.

Sir Pat. Sir, you have no Place, Office, Dependance or Attendance at Court, I hope?

Wit. None Sir,——Wou'd I had—so you were hang'd. [*Aside.*]

L. Fan. Nay, Sir, you may believe, I knew his Capacities and Abilities before I would encourage his Addresses.

Sir Pat. My Lady *Fancy*, you are a discreet Lady;— Well I'd marry her out of hand, to prevent Mr. *Lodwick's* hopes: for tho' the young man may deserve well, that Mother of his I'll have nothing to do with, since she refused to marry my Nephew. [*Aside.*]

Enter Fanny.

Fan. Sir, Father, here's my Lady *Knowell*, and her Family come to see you.

Sir Pat. How! her whole Family! I am come to keep open House, very fine, her whole Family! she's Plague enough to mortify any good Christian,——Tell her, my Lady and I am gone forth; tell her any thing to keep her away.

Fan. Shou'd I tell a lye, Sir Father, and to a Lady of her Quality?

Sir Pat. Her Quality and she are a Couple of impertinent things, which are very troublesome, and not to be indur'd I take it.

Fan.

Fan. Sir, we shou'd bear with things we do not love sometimes, 'tis a sort of Trial, Sir, a kind of Mortification fit for a good Christian.

Sir Pat. Why, what a notable talking Baggage is this! How came you by this Doctrine?

Fan. I remember, Sir, you preach'd it once to my Sister, when the old Alderman was the Text, whom you exhorted her to marry, but the wicked Creature made ill use on't.

Sir Pat. Go your way for a prating Huswife, go, and call your Sister hither. [*Exit Fanny.*] — Well, I'm resoly'd to leave this Town, nay, and the World too, rather than be tormented thus.

L. Fan. What's the matter, Dear, thou dost so fret thyself?

Sir Pat. The matter! my House, my House is besieged with Impertinence; the intolerable Lady, Madam Romance, that walking Library of profane Books is come to visit me.

L. Fan. My Lady Knowell?

Sir Pat. Yes, that Lady of eternal Noise and hard Words.

L. Fan. Indeed 'tis with pain I am oblig'd to be civil to her, but I consider her Quality, her Husband was too an Alderman, your Friend, and a great Ay and No Man in th' City, and a painful Promoter of the good Cause.

Sir Pat. But she's a Fop, my Lady Fancy, and ever was so, an idle conceited she Fop; and has Vanity and Tongue enough to debauch any Nation under civil Government: but, Patience, thou art a Virtue, and Affliction will come. — Ah, I'm very sick; alas, I have not long to dwell amongst the Wicked, Oh, oh. — Roger, is the Doctor come?

Enter Roger.

Rog. No, Sir, but he has sent you a small draught of a Pint, which you are to take, and move upon't.

Sir Pat. Ah, — Well, I'll in and take it; — Ah — Sir, I crave your Patience for a moment, for I design you shall see my Daughter, I'll not make long work on't, Sir:

alas I would dispose of her before I die: Ah,—I'll bring her to you, Sir, Ah, Ah.—— [Goes out with Roger.]

L. Fan. He's always thus when visited, to save Charges, —But how, dear *Wittmore*, can'st thou to think of a Name and Country so readily?

Wit. Egad I was at the height of my Invention, and the Alderman civilly and kindly assisted me with the rest; but how to undeceive him——

L. Fan. Take no care for that, in the mean time you'll be shrewdly hurt to have the way laid open to our Enjoyment, and that by my Husband's procurement too: But take heed, dear *Wittmore*, whilst you only design to feign a Courtship, you do it not in good earnest.

Wit. Unkind Creature!

L. Fan. I would not have you endanger her Heart neither: for thou hast Charms will do't.—Prithee do not put on thy best Looks, nor speak thy softest Language; for if thou dost, thou canst not fail to undo her.

Wit. Well, my pretty Flatterer, to free her Heart and thy Suspicions, I'll make such aukard Love as shall persuade her, however she chance to like my Person, to think most leudly of my Parts.—— But 'tis fit I take my leave, for if *Lodwick* or *Leander* see me here, all will be ruin'd; death I had forgot that.

L. Fan. *Leander's* seldom at home, and you must time your Visits: but see *Sir Patient's* return'd, and with him your new Mistress.

Enter *Sir Patient* and *Isabella*.

Sir Pat. Here's my Daughter *Isabella*, Mr. *Fainlove*: she'll serve for a Wife, Sir, as times go; but I hope you are none of those.—— Sweet-heart, this Gentleman I have design'd you, he's rich and young, and I am old and sickly, and just going out of the World, and would gladly see thee in safe Hands.

Maun. He has been just going this twenty Years. [Aside.]

Sir Pat. Therefore I command you to receive the tenders of his Affection.

Enter *Fanny*.

Fan. Sir Father, my Lady *Knowell's* in the Garden.

L. Fan. My Dear, we must go meet her in decency.

Sir

Sir *Pat.* A hard case, a Man cannot be sick in quiet.

[*Exit.*]

Isab. A Husband, and that not *Lodwick!* Heaven forbid.

[*Aside.*]

Wit. Now Foppery assist to make me very ridiculous.— Death she's very pretty and inviting; what an insensible Dog shall I be counted to refuse the Enjoyment of so fair, so new a Creature, and who is like to be thrown into my Arms too whether I will or not?—but Conscience and my Vows to the fair Mother: No, I will be honest.—Madam,——as Gad shall save me, I'm the Son of a Whore, if you are not the most Belle Person I ever saw, and if I be not damnably in love with you; but a pox take all tedious Courtship, I have a free-born and generous Spirit; and as I hate being confin'd to dull Cringing, Whining, Flattering, and the Devil and all of Foppery, so when I give an Heart, I'm an Infidel, Madam, if I do not love to do't frankly and quickly, that thereby I may oblige the beautiful Receiver of my Vows, Protestations, Passions, and Inclination.

Isab. You're wonderful ingaging, Sir, and I were an Ingrate not to facilitate a return for the Honour you are pleas'd to do me.

Wit. Upon my Reputation, Madam, you're a civil well-bred Person, you have all the Agreeemony of your Sex, *la belle Taille, la bonne Mine, & Repartee bien,* and are *tout oure toore,* as I'm a Gentleman, *fort agreeable.*— If this do not please your Lady, and nauseate her, the Devil's in 'em both for unreasonable Women.—

[*To Maund.*]

Fan. Gemini, Sister, does the Gentleman conjure?

Isab. I know not, but I'm sure I never saw a more affected Fop.

Maund. Oh a damnable impertinent Fop! 'tis pity, for he's a proper Gentleman.

Wit. Well, if I do hold out, Egad I shall be the bravest young Fellow in Christendom: But, Madam, I must kiss your Hand at present, I have some Visits to make, Devoirs to pay, necessities of Gallantry only, no Love Engagement by *Jove,* Madam; it is sufficient I have given

28 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

my Parole to your Father, to do him the honour of my Alliance ; and an unnecessary Jealousy will but disoblige, Madam, your Slave.—— Death, these Rogues see me, and I'm undone.—— [Exit.

Enter Lady Fancy, Lady Knowell, Sir Credulous and Lucretia, with other Women and Men.

L. Know. *Isabella*, your Servant, Madam: being sensible of the insociable and solitary Life you lead, I have brought my whole Family to wait on your Ladyship, and this my Son *in Futuro*, to kiss your Hands, I beseech your Ladyship to know him for your humble Servant: my Son and your Nephew, Madam, are coming, with the Musick too, we mean to pass the whole Day with your Ladyship:——and see they are here.

Enter Lodwick pulling in Wittmore, Leander with them.

Lod. Nay, since we have met thee so luckily, you must back with us.

Wit. You must excuse me, Gentlemen.

Lod. We'll shew you two or three fine Women.

Wit. Death, these Rogues will ruin me—— but I have Business, Gentlemen, that——

Lean. That must not hinder you from doing Deeds of Charity: we are all come to teeze my Uncle, and you must assist at so good a Work;——come, gad thou shalt make love to my Aunt.—— I wou'd he wou'd effectually. [Aside.

Lod. Now I think on't, what the Devil dost thou do here?

Wit. Here!——oh Sir——I have a design upon the Alderman.

Lod. Upon his handsome Wife thou meanest; ah Rogue!

Wit. Faith no,—a—'tis to— borrow Money of him; and as I take it Gentlemen, you are not fit Persons for a Man of Credit to be seen with, I pass for a graver Man.

Lod. Well, Sir, take your Course——but egad he'll sooner lend thee his Wife than his Money.

[Exit Wittmore.

Lean. Aunt, I have taken the boldness to bring a Gentleman of my acquaintance to kiss your Ladyship's Hands.

Lod.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 29

Lod. Thy Aunt! —death, she's very handsome— Madam, your most humble Servant. [*Kisses the L. Fan.*]

Lean. Prithce imploy this Fool, that I may have an opportunity to entertain thy Sister.

Lod. *Sir Credulous*, what not a Word? not a Compliment? Hah, ——— be brisk, Man, be gay and witty, talk to the Ladies.

Sir Cred. Talk to 'em! why, what shall I say to 'em?

Lod. Any thing, so it be to little purpose.

Sir Cred. Nay, Sir, let me alone for that matter—but who are they, prithce?

Lod. Why, that's my Lady *Fancy*, and that's her Daughter-in-Law, salute 'em Man. ———

Sir Cred. Fair Lady, —I do protest and vow, you are the most beautiful of all Mothers-in-Law, and the World cannot produce your equal.

Lod. The Rogue has but one method for all Addresses. [*They laugh.*]

L. Kno. Oh absurd! this, Sir, is the beautiful Mother-in-Law. [*To L. Fan.*]

Enter Sir Patient.

Sir Cred. Most noble Lady, I cry your mercy. Then Madam, as the Sun amongst the Stars, or rather as the Moon not in conjunction with the Sun, but in her opposition, when one rises the other sets, or as the Vulgar call it, Full Moon—I say, as the Moon is the most beautiful of all the sparkling Lights, even so are you the most accomplish'd Lady under the Moon—and Madam, I am extremely sensible of your Charms and celestial Graces.

[*To Isabella.*]

Sir Pat. Why this is abominable and insupportable.

Lucr. I find Sir, you can talk to purpose when you begin once.

Sir Cred. You are pleas'd to say so, noble Lady: but I must needs say, I am not the worst bred Gentleman for a Country Gentleman that ever you saw; for you must know, incomparable Lady, that I was at the University three Years, and there I learnt my Logick and Rhetorick, whereby I became excellent at Repartee, sweet Lady. As

for my Estate, my Father died since I came of Age, and left me a small younger Brother's Portion, dear Lady.

Lucr. A younger Brother's, Sir?

Sir Cred. Ha, ha, I know what you would infer from that now: but you must know, delicious Lady, that I am all the Children my Father had.

Lucr. Witty, I protest.

Sir Cred. Nay, Madam, when I set on't I can be witty.

Lean. Cruel *Lucretia*, leave 'em, and let us snatch this opportunity to talk of our own Affairs.

Sir Cred. For you must know, bright Lady, tho I was pleas'd to railly my self, I have a pretty competent Estate of about 3000 l. a Year, and am to marry Madam *Lucretia*.

L. Fan. You are a happy Man, Sir.

Sir Cred. Not so happy neither, inestimable Lady, for I lost the finest Mare yesterday, — but let that pass: were you never in *Devonshire*, Madam?

L. Fan. Never, Sir.

Sir Cred. In troth, and that's pity sweet Lady; for if you lov'd Hawking, Drinking, and Whoring, — oh, Lord, I mean Hunting; i'faith there be good Fellows would keep you Company, Madam.

Sir Pat. This is a Plot upon me, a mere Plot. — My Lady *Fancy*, be tender of my Reputation, Foppery's catching, and I had as lieve be a Cuckold as Husband to a vain Woman.

Sir Cred. Zoz, and that may be as you say, noble Sir. Lady, pray what Gentleman's this? — Noble Sir, I am your most humble Servant.

Sir Pat. Oh cry your mercy, Sir. [Walks away.]

Sir Cred. No Offence, dear Sir, I protest: 'sife I believe 'tis the Master of the House, he look'd with such Authority; — why who cares, let him look as big as the four Winds, East, West, North and South, I care not this, — therefore I beg your Pardon, noble Sir.

Sir Pat. Pray spare your Hat and Legs, Sir, till you come to Court, they are thrown away i'th' City.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 31

Sir Cred. O Lord! dear Sir, 'tis all one for that, I value not a Leg nor an Arm amongst Friends, I am a *Devonshire* Knight, Sir, all the world knows, a kind of Country Gentleman, as they say, and am come to Town, to marry my Lady *Knowell's* Daughter.

Sir Pat. I'm glad on't, Sir. [*Walks away, he follows.*]

Sir Cred. She's a deserving Lady, Sir, if I have any Judgment; and I think I understand a Lady, Sir, in the Right Honourable way of Matrimony.

Sir Pat. Well, Sir, that is to say, you have been married before, Sir; and what's all this to me, good Sir?

Sir Cred. Married before! incomparable, Sir! not so neither, for there's difference in Men, Sir.

Sir Pat. Right, Sir, for some are Wits, and some are Fools.

Sir Cred. As I hope to breathe, 'twas a saying of my Grandmother's, who us'd to tell me, Sir, that bought Wit was best. I have brought Money to Town for a small purchase of that kind; for, Sir, I wou'd fain set up for a Country Wit.—Pray Sir, where live the Poets? for I wou'd fain be acquainted with some of them.

Sir Pat. Sir, I do not know, nor do I care for Wits and Poets. Oh, this will kill me quite; I'll out of Town immediately.

Sir Cred. But, Sir, I mean your fine railing Bully Wits, that have Vinegar, Gall and Arsenick in 'em, as well as Salt and Flame, and Fire, and the Devil and all.

Sir Pat. Oh defend me! and what is all this to me, Sir?

Sir Cred. Oh, Sir, they are the very Soul of Entertainment; and, Sir, it is the prettiest sport to hear 'em rail and baul at one another.—Zoz wou'd I were a Poet.

Sir Pat. I wish you were, since you are so fond of being rail'd at.—If I were able to beat him, I would be much angry,—but Patience is a Virtue, and I will into the Country. [*Aside.*]

Sir Cred. 'Tis all one case to me, dear Sir,—but I should have the pleasure of railing again, *cum privilegio*; I love fighting with those pointless Weapons.—Zoz, Sir, you know if we Men of Quality fall out—(for you are

32 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

a Knight I take it) why there comes a Challenge upon it, and ten to one some body or other is run thro the Gills; why, a Pox on't, I say, this is very damnable, give me Poet's Licence.——

L. Fan. Take him off in pity. [To Leander.

Lod. Indeed Railing is a Coin only current among the Poets, Sir *Credulous*.

Sir Pat. Oh blest Deliverance!—— what a profane Wretch is here, and what a leud World we live in—Oh *London, London*, how thou aboundest in Iniquity! thy young Men are debauch'd, thy Virgins deflowered, and thy Matrons all turn'd Bauds! My Lady *Fancy*, this is not Company for you, I take it, let us fly from this vexation of Spirit, on the never-failing Wings of Discretion.——

[Going to lead Lady Fancy off,—the Lady Knowell speaking to Isabella all this while.

L. Kno. How! marry thee to such a Fop, say'st thou? Oh egregious!—as thou lovest *Lodwick*, let him not know his Name, it will be dangerous, let me alone to evade it.

Isab. I know his fiery Temper too well to trust him with the secret.

L. Kno. Hark ye, Sir, and do you intend to do this horrible thing?——

Sir Pat. What thing, my Lady *Knowell*?

L. Kno. Why, to marry your Daughter, Sir.

Sir Pat. Yes, Madam.

L. Kno. To a beastly Town Fool? *Monstrum horrendum!*

Sir Pat. To any Fool, except a Fool of your Race, of your Generation.——

L. Kno. How! A Fool of my Race, my Generation! I know thou meanest my Son, thou contumelious Knight, who, let me tell thee, shall marry thy Daughter *invito te*, that is, (to inform thy obtuse Understanding) in spite of thee; yes, shall marry her, tho she inherits nothing but thy dull Enthusiam, which had she been legitimate she had been possess'd with.

Sir Pat. Oh abominable! you had best say she is none of my Daughter, and that I was a Cuckold.——

L. Kno.

L. Kno. If I should, Sir, it would not amount to *Scandalum Magnatum*: I'll tell thee more, thy whole Pedigree,—and yet for all this, *Lodwick* shall marry your Daughter, and yet I'll have none of your Nephew.

Sir Pat. Shall he so, my Lady *Knowell*? I shall go near to out-trick your Ladyship, for all your politick Learning. 'Tis past the canonical Hour, as they call it, or I wou'd marry my Daughter instantly; I profess we ne'er had good days since these canonical Fopperies came up again, mere Popish Tricks to give our Children time for Disobedience,—the next Justice wou'd ha' serv'd turn, and have done the Business at any Hour: but Patience is a Virtue — *Roger*, go after Mr. *Fain-love*, and tell him I wou'd speak with him instantly.

L. Kno. Come, come, Ladies, we lose fleeting time, upon my Honour we do; for Madam, as I said, I have brought the Fiddles, and design to sacrifice the intire Evening to your Ladyship's Diversion.

Sir Cred. Incomparable Lady, that was well thought on; Zoz, I long to be jigging.

Sir Pat. Fiddles, good Lord! why, what am I come to?—Madam, I take it, Sir *Patient Fancy's* Lady is not a proper Person to make one at immodest Revellings, and profane Masqueradings.

L. Fan. Why; ah, 'tis very true, Sir, but we ought not to offend a Brother that is weak, and consequently a Sister.

Sir Pat. An excellent Lady this, but she may be corrupted, ah she may fall; I will therefore without delay, carry her from this wicked Town.

L. Kno. Come, come, Gentlemen, let's in; Mr. *Fancy*, you must be my Man;—Sir *Credulous* come, and you sweet Sir, come Ladies,—*Nunc est saltandum, &c.*

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE *changes to a Chamber.*

Enter Sir Patient as before, Lady Fancy, Wittmore, Maundy, and Roger with things.

Sir Pat. Maundy, fetch my Clothes, I'll dress me and out of Town instantly,—— persuade me not. [*To Wit. Roger, is the Coach ready, Roger?*]

Rog. Yes, Sir, with four Horses.

L. Fan. Out of Town! Oh I'm undone then, there will be no hopes of ever seeing Wittmore. [*Aside.*]—— Maundy, oh help me to contrive my stay, or I'm a dead Woman.—— Sir, sure you cannot go and leave your Affairs in Town.

Sir Pat. Affairs! what Affairs?

L. Fan. Why, your Daughter's Marriage, Sir:—and— Sir,——not, Sir, but that I desire of all things in the World the Blessing of being alone with you, far from the Noise and loud Disorders of this filthy Town.

Sir Pat. Most excellent Woman! ah thou art too good for sinful Man, and I will therefore remove thee from the Temptations of it.—— Maundy, my Clothes—— Mr. Fainlove, I will leave Isabella with my Lady Fidget, my Sister, who shall to morrow see you married, to prevent farther Inconveniences.

L. Fan. What shall I do?

Maun. Madam, I have a Design, which considering his Spleen, must this time do our Business,—— 'tis——

L. Fan. I like it well, about it instantly, hah—— [*Whispers.*]

[*Ex. Maundy.*]

Alas, Sir, what ails your Face? good Heaven,—— look, Roger.

Sir Pat. My Face! why, what ails my Face? hah!

L. Fan. See, Mr. Fainlove, look on my Dear, is he not strangely alter'd?

Wit. Most wonderfully.

Sir Pat. Alter'd, hah—— why where, why how alter'd?—— hah, alter'd say you?

Wit. Lord, how wildly he stares!

Sir Pat. Hah, stare wildly!

Rog. Are you not very sick, Sir?

L. Fan. Sick! oh Heavens forbid!—How does my dearest Love?

Sir Pat. Methinks I feel myself not well o'th' sudden—ah—a kind of shivering seizes all my Limbs, —and am I so much chang'd?

Wit. All over, Sir, as big again as you were.

L. Fan. Your Face is frightfully blown up, and your dear Eyes just starting from your Head; oh, I shall swoon with the apprehension on't.

[Falls into Wittmore's Arms.]

Sir Pat. My Head and Eyes so big, say you:—oh I'm wondrous sick o'th' sudden,—all over say you—oh, oh—Ay, I perceive it now, my Senses fail me too.

L. Fan. How, Sir, your Senses fail you?

Wit. That's a very bad sign, believe me.

Sir Pat. Oh, ay, for I can neither feel nor see this mighty growth you speak of.

[Falls into a Chair, with great signs of Disorder.]

Wit. Alas, I'm sorry for that, Sir.

Rog. Sure 'tis impossible, I'll run and fetch a Glass, Sir.

[Offers to go.]

L. Fan. Oh stay, I wou'd not for the world he should see what a Monster he is, —and is like to be before to-morrow.

[Aside.]

Rog. I'll fit him with a Glass, —I'll warrant ye, it shall advance our Design.

Enter Maundy with the Clothes, she starts.

Maun. Good Heaven, what ails you, Sir?

Sir Pat. Oh—oh—'tis so.

Maun. Lord, how he's swoln! see how his Stomach fruts.

Sir Pat. Ah 'tis true, tho I perceive it not.

Maun. Not perceive it, Sir! put on your Clothes and be convinc'd, —try 'em, Sir.

[She pulls off his Gown, and puts on his Doublet and Coat, which come not near by a handful or more.]

Sir Pat. Ah it needs not, ——— mercy upon me! ———

[Falls back.
I'm lost, I'm gone! Oh Man, what art thou but a Flower?
I am poison'd, this talking Lady's Breath's infectious;
methought I felt the Contagion steal into my Heart; send
for my Physicians, and if I die I'll swear she's my Mur-
derer: oh see, see, how my trembling increases, oh hold
my Limbs, I die. ———

Enter Roger with a magnifying Glass, shews him the
Glass; he looks in it.

Rog. I'll warrant I'll shew his Face as big as a Bushel.
[Aside.

Sir Pat. Oh, oh, — I'm a dead Man, have me to Bed,
I die away, undress me instantly, send for my Physicians,
I'm poison'd, my Bowels burn, I have within an *Ætna*,
my Brains run round, Nature within me reels.

[They carry him out in a Chair.

Wit. And all the drunken Universe does run on Wheels.
ha, ha, ha.

Ah my dear Creature, how finely thou hast brought him
to his Journey's end!

L. Fan. There was no other way but this to have se-
cur'd my Happiness with thee; there needs no more than
that you come anon to the Garden Back-gate, where you
shall find admittance; ——— Sir Patient is like to lie alone
to night.

Wit. Till then 'twill be a thousand Ages.

L. Fan. At Games of Love Husbands to cheat is fair,
'Tis the Gallant we play with on the square.

[Exeunt severally.

ACT

A C T III. S C E N E I.

Scene draws off, and discovers Lady Knowell, Isabella, Lucretia, Lodwick, Leander, Wittmore, Sir Credulous, other Men and Women, as going to dance.

L. Kno. **C**OME, one Dance more, and then I think we shall have sufficiently teaz'd the Alderman, and 'twill be time to part.—Sir *Credulous*, where's your Mistress?

Sir Cred. Within a Mile of an Oak, dear Madam, I'll warrant you.—Well, I protest and vow, sweet Lady, you dance most nobly,—Why, you dance——like——like a——like a hasty Pudding, before *Jove*.

[*They dance some Antick, or Rustick-Antick.*
Lodwick speaking to Isabella.

S O N G made by a Gentleman.

Sitting by yonder River side,
Parthenia thus to Cloe cry'd,
Whilst from the fair Nymph's Eyes apace
Another Stream o'er-flow'd her beauteous Face;
Ah happy Nymph, said she, that can
So little value that false Creature, Man.

Oft the perfidious things will cry,
Alas they burn, they bleed, they die;
But if they're absent half a Day,
Nay, let 'em be but one poor Hour away,
No more they die, no more complain,
But like unconstant Wretches live again.

38 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Lod. Well, have you consider'd of that Business yer, *Isabella*?

Isab. What Business?

Lod. Of giving me admittance to night.

Isab. And may I trust your honesty?

Lod. Oh doubt me not, my Mother's resolv'd it shall be a match between you and I, and that very Consideration will secure thee; besides, who would first sully the Linen they mean to put on?

Isab. Away, here's my Mother.

Enter Lady Fancy.

L. Fan. Madam, I beg your pardon for my absence, the effects of my Obedience, not Will; but Sir *Patient* is taken very ill o'th' sudden, and I must humbly intreat your Ladyship to retire, for Rest is only essential to his Recovery.

L. Kno. Congruously spoken, upon my Honour. Oh the impudence of this Fellow your Ladyship's Husband, to espouse so fair a Person only to make a Nurse of!

L. Fan. Alas, Madam! —

L. Kno. A Slave, a very Household Drudge. — Oh laugh, come never grieve; — for, Madam, his Disease is nothing but Imagination, a Melancholy which arises from the Liver, Spleen, and Membrane call'd *Mesenterium*; the *Arabians* name the Distemper *Myrathial*, and we here in *England*, *Hypochondriacal Melancholy*; I cou'd prescribe a most potent Remedy, but that I am loth to stir the Envy of the College.

L. Fan. Really Madam, I believe —

L. Kno. But as you say, Madam, we'll leave him to his Repose; pray do not grieve too much.

Lod. Death! wou'd I had the consoling her, 'tis a charming Woman!

L. Kno. Mr. *Fancy*, your Hand; Madam, your most faithful Servant. — *Lucretia*, come *Lucretia*. — Your Servant Ladies and Gentlemen.

L. Fan. A Devil on her, wou'd the Nimbleness of her Ladyship's Tongue were in her Heels, she wou'd make more haste away: oh I long for the blest Minute.

Lod. Isabella, shall I find admittance anon?

Isab.

Isab. On fair Conditions.

Lod. Trust my Generosity.—Madam, your Slave. [*Ex.*
[*To L. Fan. gazing on her, goes out.*

Sir Cred. Madam, I wou'd say something of your Charms and celestial Graces, but that all Praises are as far below you, as the Moon in her Opposition is below the Sun ;—and so luscious Lady, I am yours : Now for my Serenade—— [*Ex. all but L. Fan. and Maundy.*

L. Fan. Maundy, have you commanded all the Servants to bed ?

Maun. Yes, Madam, not a Mouse shall stir, and I have made ready the Chamber next the Garden for your Ladyship.

L. Fan. Then there needs no more but that you wait for *Wittmore's* coming to the Garden-Gate, and take care no Lights be in the House for fear of Eyes.

Maun. Madam, I understand Lovers are best by dark, and shall be diligent : the Doctor has secur'd Sir *Patient* by a sleeping Pill, and you are only to expect your approaching Happiness. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Lady Knowell's Chamber.*

Enter Lady Knowell and Leander.

L. Kno. *Leander,* raise your Soul above that little trifle *Lucretia* ;——cannot you guess what better Fate attends you ? fy, how dull you are ! must I instruct you in plain right-down Terms ? and tell you, that I propose you Master of my Fortune.——Now possibly you understand me.

Enter Lucretia, and peeps.

Lean. I wish I did nor, Madam,
Unless I'd Virtue to deserve the Bounty ;
I have a thousand hidden Faults Dissimulation hides,
Inconstant, wild, debauch'd as Youth can make me.

Lucr. All that will not do your Business. [*Aside.*

L. Kno. Yet you wou'd have my Daughter take you with these Faults ; they're Virtues there, but to the name of Mother, they all turn retrograde : I can endure a Man as wild and as inconstant as she can.

40 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

I have a Fortune too that can support that Humour,
That of *Lucretia* does depend on me,
And when I please is nothing ;
I'm far from Age or Wrinkles, can be courted
By Men, as gay and youthful as a new Summer's Morn',
Beauteous as the first Blossoms of the Spring,
Before the common Sun has kiss'd their Sweets away,
If with salacious Appetites I lov'd.

Leau. Faith Madam I cou'd wish—

L. Kno. That I were but Fifteen ; but
If there be inequality in Years,
There is so too in Fortunes, that might add
A Lustre to my Eyes, Charms to my Person,
And make me fair as *Venus*, young as *Hebe*.

Lean. Madam, you have enough to engage any unconquer'd Heart ; but 'twas, I thought, with your allowance I dispos'd of mine, and 'tis a Heart that knows not how to change.

L. Kno. Then 'tis a foolish unambitious Heart, unworthy of the Elevation it has not glorious Pride enough to aim at :—Farewel, Sir, ——— when you are wiser, you may find admittance. [Goes out.]

Lean. Stay, Madam——

Enter Lucretia.

Lucr. For what ? to hear your Penitence ? Forgive me, Madam, I will be a Villain, forget my Vows of Love, made to *Lucretia*,

And sacrifice both her, and those to Interest.

Oh how I hate this whining and dissembling !

Lean. Do, triumph o'er a wretched Man, *Lucretia* !

Lucr. How ! wretched in loving me so entirely, or that you cannot marry my Mother, and be Master of her mighty Fortune ? 'Tis a Temptation indeed so between Love and Interest, hang me if ever I saw so simple a Look as you put on when my Mother made love to you.

Lean. You may easily guess the Confusion of a Man in my Circumstances, to be languishing for the lov'd Daughter, and pursu'd by the hated Mother, whom if I refuse will ruin all my hopes of thee.

Lucr. Refuse her ! I hope you have more Wit.

Lean.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 41

Lean. *Lucretia*, cou'd she make a Monarch of me, I cou'd not marry her.

Lucr. And you wou'd be so wise to tell her so?

Lean. I wou'd no more abuse her, than I cou'd love her.

Lucr. Yet that last must be done.

Lean. How!

Lucr. Dost believe me so wicked to think I mean in earnest? No, tell her a fine Story of Love and Liking, gaze on her, kiss her Hands, and sigh, commend her Face and Shape, swear she's the Miracle of the Age for Wit, cry up her Learning, vow you were an Ass not to be sensible of her Perfections all this while; what a Coxcomb, to doat upon the Daughter when such Charms were so visible in the Mother? Faith she'll believe all this.

Lean. It may be so, but what will all this serve for?

Lucr. To give us time and opportunity to deceive her, or I'm mistaken.

Lean. I cannot teach my Tongue so much Deceit.

Lucr. You may be a Fool, and cry, Indeed forsooth I cannot love, for alas I have lost my Heart, and am unworthy of your proffer'd Blessings—do, and see her marry me in spite to this Fop *Easy*, this Knight of Nonsense: no, no, dissemble me handsomely and like a Gentleman, and then expect your good Fortune.

Enter Antick.

Ant. Madam, your Mother's coming.

Lucr. Away then, she must not see us together, she thinks you gone.

Lean. But must I carry off no Comfort with me?

Lucr. Will you expose me to the incens'd Jealousy of a Parent? go, or I shall hate ye. *[Thrusts him out.]*

SCENE, A Garden.

Enter Maundy by dark: Opens the Garden-Door.

Maun. Now am I return'd to my old Trade again, fetch and carry my Lady's Lovers; I was afraid when she had been married, these Night-works wou'd have ended; but

42 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

but to say truth, there's a Conscience to be used in all things, and there's no reason she shou'd languish with an old Man when a young Man may be had.—The Door opens, he's come.—

Enter Lodwick.

I see you're a punctual Lover, Sir, pray follow me as softly as you can.

Lod. This is some one whom I perceive *Isabella* has made the Confident to our Amours. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE *draws off, and discovers L. Fancy in her Night-gown, in a Chamber as by the dark.*

L. Fan. Oh the agreeable Confusion of a Lover high with expectation of the approaching Bliss! What Tremblings between Joy and Fear possess me? All my whole Soul is taken up with *Wittmore*; I've no Ideas, no Thoughts but of *Wittmore*, and sure my Tongue can speak no other Language, but his Name.—Who's there?

Enter Maundy leading Lodwick.

Maun. Madam, 'tis I, and your expected Lover here— I put him into your hands, and will wait your Commands in the next Chamber, [*Exit Maun.*

Lod. Where are you, my dearest Creature?

L. Fan. Here.— give me your Hand, I'll lead you to those Joys we both so long have sigh'd for.

Lod. Hah! to Joys; sure she doth but dally with me.

[*Aside.*

L. Fan. Why come you not on, my dear?

Lod. And yet, why this Admission, and i' th' dark too, if she design'd me none but virtuous Favours?— What damn'd Temptation's this?

L. Fan. Are you bewitch'd? what is't that frights you?

Lod. I'm fix'd: Death, was ever such a Lover?

Just ready for the highest Joys of Love,
And like a bashful Girl restrain'd by Fear
Of an insuing Infamy.— I hate to cuckold my own Expectations.

L. Fan. Heavens! what can you mean?

Lod.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 43

Lod. Death, what's this?—sure 'tis not Virtue in me,—Pray Heaven it be not Impotence!—Where got I this damn'd Honesty, which I never found my self master of till now?—why shou'd it seize me when I had least need on't?

L. Fan. What ails you? are you mad?—we are safe, and free as Winds let loose to ruffle all the Groves; what is't delays you then? Soft.

Lod. Pox o' this thought of Wife, the very Name destroys my appetite.

Oh with what Vigour I could deal my Love
To some fair leud unknown,
To whom I'd never made a serious Vow!

L. Fan. Tell me the Mystery of this sudden Coldness: have I kept my Husband in Town for this? Nay, persuaded him to be very sick to serve our purpose, and am I thus rewarded—ungrateful Man!

Lod. Hah,—'tis not *Isabella's* Voice,—your Husband say you?— [Takes hold greedily of her Hand.

L. Fan. Is safe, from any fear of interrupting us.
Come—these Delays do ill consist with Love
And our Desires; at least if they are equal.

Lod. Death, 'tis the charming Mother!
What lucky Star directed me to night?

O my fair dear Dissembler, let us haste
To pay the mighty Tributes due to Love.

L. Fan. Follow me then with careful Silence,—for *Isabella's* Chamber joins to this, and she may hear us.

Lod. Not Flowers grow, nor smooth Streams glide
Not absent Lovers sigh, nor breaks the Day, (away,
More silently than I'll those Joys receive,
Which Love and Darkness do conspire to give. [Exeunt.

SCENE changes again to a Garden.

Enter Isabella and Fanny in their Night-gowns.

Isab. Well, I have no mind to let this dear mad Devil *Lodwick* in to night.

Fan. Why, Sister, this is not the first Venture you have made of this kind, at this Hour, and in this Place; these
Arbours

44 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

Arbours were they tell-tales, cou'd discover many pretty stories of your Loves, and do you think they'll be less faithful now? pray trust them once again. Oh I do so love to hear Mr. *Lodwick* protest, and vow, and swear, and dissemble, and when you don't believe him, rail at you,——avads 'tis the prettiest Man——

Isab. I have a strange apprehension of being surpriz'd to night.

Fan. I'll warrant you, I'll sit on yon Bank of Pinks, and when I hear a Noise I'll come and tell you; so *Lodwick* may slip out at the back Gate, and we may be walking up and down as if we meant no harm.

Isab. You'll grow very expert in the Arts of Love, *Fanny.*

Fan. When I am big enough I shall do my Endeavour, for I have heard you say, Women were born to no other end than to love: And 'tis fit I should learn to live and die in my calling.——Come open the Gate, or you'll repent it, we shall have my Father marry you within a day or two to that ugly Man that speaks hard Words,—avads I can't abide him.

Isab. What Noise is that?

Fan. Why 'tis Mr. *Lodwick* at the Garden-Door;—let him in whilst I'll to my flowry Bank, and stand Centinel.——

[Runs off. *Isabella* opens the Gate.

Enter *Wittmore.*

Wit. Who's there?

Isab. Speak low, who shou'd it be but the kind Fool her self, who can deny you nothing but what you dare not take?

Wit. Not take! what's that? hast thou reserves in store? —Oh come and let me lead thee to thy Bed, Or seat thee on some Bank of softer Flowers, Where I may rifle all thy unknown Store.

Isab. How! surely you're not in earnest?— Do you love me?

Wit. Love thee! by thy dear self, all that my Soul I'm all impatient Flame! all over Love! [adores, —You do not use to doubt, but since you do, Come, and I'll satisfy thy obliging Fears,

And

And give thee Proofs how much my Soul is thine,
I'll breathe it all a-new into thy Bosom.—

Oh thou art fit for the transporting Play,
All loose and wanton, like the Queen of Love
When she descends to meet the Youth in Shades.

Isab. And are you Sir in earnest? can it be?

Wit. That question was severe, what means my Love?
What pretty Art is this to blow my Flame?
Are you not mine? did we not meet t' enjoy?
I came not with more vigorous eager Haste,
When our first Sacrifice to Love we paid,
Than to perform that Ceremony now.
Come do not let the Sacred Fire burn out,
Which only was prepar'd for Love's rich Altar,
And this is the divine, dark, silent Minute—

[Goes to lead her off.]

Isab. Hold, Ravisher, and know this saucy Passion
Has render'd back your Interest. Now I hate ye,
And my Obedience to my Father's Will
Shall marry me to *Fain-love*, and I'll despise ye.

[Flings from him.]

Wit. Hah! *Isabella!* Death I have made sweet work,—
stay gentle Maid,— she'll ruin all if she go:— stay— she
knew me, and cunningly drew me to this Discovery; I'll
after her and undeceive her.

[Runs after her.]

*A confus'd Noise of the Serenade, the Scene draws off to
Lady Fancy's Anti-chamber.*

Enter Isabella groping as in the dark.

Isab. Pray Heaven I get undiscover'd to my Chamber,
where I'll make Vows against this perjured Man; hah,
sure he follows still; no Wood-Nymph ever fled before
a Satyr, with half that trembling haste I flew from *Lod-
wick*.—Oh he has lost his Virtue, and undone me.

[Goes out groping, and the noise of Serenade again.]

SCENE

SCENE changes to Lady Fancy's Bed-chamber, discovers her as before; Lodwick as just risen in Disorder from the Bed, buttoning himself, and setting himself in order; and Noise at the Door unlatching it.

Enter Isabella groping, Sir Patient without.

L. Fan. It is this Door that open'd, and which I thought I had secur'd.

Sir Pat. Oh insupportable, abominable, and not to be indur'd!

Ifab. Hah my Father! I'm discover'd and pursu'd,—grant me to find the Bed.

L. Fan. Heavens! 'twas my Husband's Voice, sure we're betray'd. It must be so, for what Devil but that of Jealousy cou'd raise him at this late hour?

Ifab. Hah, where am I, and who is't that speaks—
[*To her self.*]

Lod. So, he must know that I have made a Cuckold of him.
[*Aside.*]

Sir Pat. within.] Call up my Men, the Coachman, Groom, and Butler, the Footmen, Cook and Gardiner; bid 'em all rise and arm, with long Staff, Spade and Pitchfork, and sally out upon the Wicked.

Lod. S'heart! what a Death shall I die:—is there no place of safety hereabouts—for there is no resisting these unmerciful Weapons.

Ifab. A Man's Voice!

L. Fan. I know of none, nor how to prevent your Discovery.

Enter Sir Patient.

Sir Pat. Oh, oh, lead me forward, I'll lie here on the Garden-side, out of the hearing of this hellish Noise.

L. Fan. Hah, Noise!—what means he?

Lod. Nay, I know not, is there no escaping?—

Ifab. Who can they be that talk thus? sure I have mistook my Chamber.

L. Fan. Oh he's coming in—I'm ruin'd; what shall we do? here—get into the Bed—and cover your self with
with

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 47

with the Clothes—quickly—oh my Confusion will betray me.
 [Lodwick gets into the Bed, Isabella hides behind the Curtain very near to him.]

Enter Sir Patient, led by Nurse and Maundy, with Lights.

Maun. Pray go back, Sir, my poor Lady will be frightened out of her Wits, at this danger you put your self into, the Noise shall be still'd.

L. Fan. Oh, what's the matter with my Love? what, do you mean to murder him? oh lead him instantly back to his Bed.

Sir Pat. Oh, oh, no, I'll lie here, — put me to bed, oh I faint, — my Chamber's possess'd with twenty thousand Evil Spirits.

L. Fan. Possess'd! what sickly Fancy's this?

Sir Pat. Ah the House is beset, surrounded and confounded with profane tinkling, with Popish Horn-Pipes, and Jesuitical Cymbals, more antichristian and abominable than Organs, or Anthems.

Nurse. Yea verily, and surely it is the spawn of Cathedral Instruments plaid on by Babylonish Minstrels, only to disturb the Brethren.

Sir Pat. Ay, 'tis so, call up my Servants, and let them be first chastiz'd and then hang'd; accuse 'em for French Papishes, that had a design to fire the City, or any thing: — oh I shall die—lead me gently to this Bed.

L. Fan. To hinder him will discover all:—stay, Sir.—

Sir Pat. Hah, my Lady turn'd rebellious!— put me to Bed I say;—[Throws himself forward to the Bed]—hah—what's here?—what art thou,—a Man,—hah, a Man, Treason! betray'd! my Bed's defil'd, my Lady polluted, and I am cornured; oh thou vile Serpent of my Bosom!

[She stands with her Face towards the Stage in signs of fear.]

Isab. A Man, and in my virtuous Lady Mother's Chamber! how fortunate was I to light on this discovery!

L. Fan. Well, Sir, since you have seen him, I beseech you for my sake, Dear, pardon him this one time.

[Coaxing him.]
 Sir

Sir Pat. Thou beg his Pardon! Oh was ever heard such Impudence!

L. Fan. Indeed, my Love, he is to blame; but we that are judicious should bear with the Frailties of Youth.

Sir Pat. Oh insupportable Audacity!—what canst thou say, false Woman?

L. Fan. Truly not much in his Defence, my Dear.

Isab. Oh cunning Devil!—

L. Fan. But, Sir, to hide the weakness of your Daughter, I have a little strain'd my Modesty.—

Isab. Heavens! what says she?—

L. Fan. 'Tis *Isabella's* Lover, Sir, whom I've conceal'd.

Lod. A good hint to save both our Credits.

Sir Pat. How, Mr. *Fain-love* mean you?

[*Lodwick rises and comes a little more forward, Isabella does the like, till both meet at the feet of the Bed, and start, Lodwick looking simply.*]

L. Fan. Ay, my dear, Mr. *Fain-love*.

Lod. *Isabella* here! must she know too what a fine inconstant Dog I am?—

Isab. *Lodwick!* and in my Mother's Chamber! may I believe my Eyes!

Sir Pat. But how got he hither?—tell me that:—oh Youth, Youth, to what degree of Wickedness art thou arriv'd?

L. Fan. She appointed him to come this Night, Sir, and he going to her Chamber, by mistake came into mine, it being the next to her's.

Maun. But, Lord, Sir, had you heard how my Lady school'd him, whilst I ran down to fetch a light!

Lod. Now does my Conscience tell me, I am a damn'd Villain.— [Aside, looking pitifully on *Isabella*.]

L. Fan. But the poor Man presently perceiv'd his mistake, and beg'd my pardon in such feeling Terms—that I vow I had not the heart to deny it him.

Isab. Oh Traitor! wou'd thou hadst been that Ravisher I took thee for, rather than such a Villain—false! and with my Mother too!

L. Fan.

Sir PATIENT FANCY. 49

L. Fan. And just then, Sir, you came to the Door, and lest you shou'd see him, intreated me to hide him from your Anger,—the Offence is not so heinous, Sir, considering he is so soon to marry her.

Sir Pat. Well, Sir, and what have you to say in your Defence?—hah, how, *Mr. Knowell*,—worse and worse, —why how came you hither, Sir? hah,——

L. Fan. Not *Wittmore*! oh I am ruin'd and betray'd.
[Falls almost in a swoon.]

Sir Pat. Hah, *Isabella* here too!

Isab. Yes, Sir, to justify her Innocence.

Sir Pat. Hah! Innocence! and justify! take her away; go out of my sight, thou Limb of Satan,——take her away, I say, I'll talk with you to morrow, Lady Fine-tricks——I will.——

Isab. —And I'll know before I sleep, the mystery of all this, and who 'twas this faithless Man sent in his room to deceive me in the Garden. [Goes out.]

Lod. A plague of all ill-luck—how the Devil came she hither? I must follow and reconcile her.

[Going out, *Sir Patient* stays him.]

Sir Pat. Nay, Sir, we must not part so till I have known the truth of this Business, I take it.

Lod. Truth, Sir! oh all that your fair Lady has said, Sir; I must confess her Eyes have wounded me with Anger, you need not add more to my Shame.——

L. Fan. Some little comfort yet, that he prov'd indeed to be *Isabella's* Lover: Oh, that I should mistake so unluckily! [Aside.]

Sir Pat. Why, I thought it had been *Mr. Fair-love*.

L. Fan. By all that's good, and so did I.

Lod. I know you did, Madam, or you had not been so kind to me: Your Servant, dear Madam.——

[Going, *Sir Patient* stays him.]

L. Fan. Pray Sir let him go; oh how I abominate the sight of a Man that cou'd be so wicked as he has been!

Sir Pat. Ha,—good Lady, excellent Woman: well Sir, for my Lady's sake I'll let you pass with this, but if I catch you here again, I shall spoil your Intrigues, Sir, marry shall I, and so rest ye satisfied, Sir.——

Lod. At this time, I am, Sir—Madam, a thousand Blessings on you for this Goodness.

L. Fan. Ten thousand Curses upon thee,—go, boast the Ruin you have made. [*Aside to Lod.*

Sir Pat. Come, no more Anger now, my Lady; the Gentleman's sorry you see, I'll marry my pert Huswife to morrow for this.—*Maundy*, see the Gentleman safe out:—ah put me to Bed; ah, this Night's Work will kill me, ah, ah. [*Exeunt Lodwick and Maundy.*

The Scene draws over Sir Patient and Lady: draws again and discovers the Garden, Wittmore, Fanny, and Isabella.

Isab. How, Mr. *Fain-love*, it cannot be.

Fan. Indeed, Sister, 'tis the same, for all he talks so; and he told me his coming was but to try your Virtue only.

Enter Lodwick and Maundy as passing over, but stand.

Isab. That *Fain-love*! whom I am so soon to marry! and but this day courted me in another Dialect!

Wit. That was my Policy, Madam, to pass upon your Father with. But I'm a Man that knows the value of the Fair, and saw Charms of Beauty and of Wit in you, that taught me to know the way to your Heart was to appear my self, which now I do. Why did you leave me so unkindly but now?

Lod. Hah, what's this? whilst I was grafting Horns on another's Head, some kind Friend was doing that good Office for me.

Maud. Sure 'tis *Wittmore*!—oh that Dissembler—this was his Plot upon my Lady, to gain time with *Isabella*.

[*Aside.*

Wit. And being so near my Happiness, can you blame me, if I made a trial whether your Virtue were agreeable to your Beauty, great, and to be equally ador'd?

Lod. Death, I've heard enough to forfeit all my Patience!—Draw, Sir, and make a trial of your Courage too.

Wit.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 51

Wit. Ha, what desperate Fool art thou? [*Draws.*

Lod. One that will see thee fairly damn'd, e'er yield his Interest up in *Isabella*—oh thou false Woman!

[*They fight out, Isabella and Maundy run off.*

SCENE changes to the long Street, a Pageant of an Elephant coming from the farther end with Sir Credulous on it, and several others playing on strange confused Instruments.

Sir Cred. This sure is extraordinary, or the Devil's in't; and I'll ne'er trust Serenade more.

[*Come forward, and all play again.*

—Hold, hold, now for the Song, which because I wou'd have most deliciously and melodiously sung, I'll sing my self : look ye, — hum — hum. —

Sir Credulous should have sung.

Thou Grief of my Heart, and thou Pearl of my Eyes,
D'on thy Flannel Petticoat quickly, and rise;
And from thy resplendent Window discover
A Face that wou'd mortify any young Lover :
For I, like great Jove transformed, do wooe,
And am amorous Owl, to wit to wooe, to wit to wooe.

A Lover, *Ads Zox*, is a sort of a Tool
That of all things you best may compare to an Owl :
For in some dark Shades he delights still to sit,
And all the Night long he crys wo to wit.
Then rise my bright *Cloris*, and d'on on slip shoe :
And hear thy amorous Owl chant, wit to wooe, wit to wooe.

—Well, this won't do, for I perceive no Window open, nor Lady bright appear, to talk obligingly :—perhaps the Song does not please her : you Ballad-singers, have you no good Songs of another fashion ?

I Man. Yes, Sir, several, *Robin*—Hark how the Waters fall, fall, fall!

Sir Cred. How Man! Zoz, remove us farther off, for fear of wetting.

1 Man. No, no, Sir, I only gave my fellow a hint of an excellent Ballard that begins—*Ill-wedded Joys, how quickly do you fade!* [Sings.

Sir Cred. Ay, ay, that, we'll have that, —*Ill-wedded Joys, how quickly do you fade,* — [Sings] That's excellent! Oh now the Windows open, now, now shew your capering Tricks. [Vaulting.

[They all play again.

Enter a Company of Fellows as out of Sir Patient's House, led on by a precise Clerk, all armed with odd Weapons.

Abel. Verily, verily, here be these Babes of Perdition, these Children of Iniquity.

Rog. A pox of your Babes and Children, they are Men, and Sons of Whores, whom we must bang confoundedly, for not letting honest godly People rest quietly in their Beds at Midnight.

Sir Cred. Who's there?

Rog. There, with a Pox to you; cannot a Right-worshipful Knight, that has been sick these Twenty Years with taking Physick, sleep quietly in his own House for you; and must we be rais'd out of our Beds to quiet your Hell-pipes, in the Devil's name?

Abel. Down with Gog and Magog, there; there's the rotten Bell-weather that leads the rest astray, and defiles the whole Flock.

Rog. Hang your preaching, and let's come to him, we'll maul him. [Beat Sir Cred.

Sir Cred. Oh Quarter, Quarter, Murder, Help, Murder, Murder!

Enter Lodwick.

Lod. Damn these Rascals, who e'er they were, that so unluckily redeem'd a Rival from my Fury.—Hah, they are here,—Egad I'll have one touch more with 'em,—the Dogs are spoiling my design'd Serenade too—have amongst ye.—[Fights and beats 'em off.] Sir Credulous how is't?

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 53

Sir Cred. Who's there, *Lodwick*? Oh dear Lad, is't thou that hast redeem'd me from the enchanted Cudgels that demolish'd my triumphant Pageant, and con'ounded my Serenade? Zoz I'm half kill'd, Man,— I have never a whole Bone about me sure.

Lod. Come in with me——a plague upon the Rascal that escap'd me. [Exeunt.]

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Lady Knowell's House.

Enter Lucreia, follow'd by Sir Credulous.

Lucr. **M**arry'd to morrow! and leave my Mother the possession of *Leander*! I'll die a thousand Deaths first,—How the Fool haunts me! [Aside.]

Sir Cred. Nay, delicious Lady, you may say your Pleasure; but I will justify the Serenade to be as high a piece of Gallantry as was ever practis'd in our Age, tho' not comparable to your Charms and celestial Graces, which shou'd I praise as I ought, 'twou'd require more time than the Sun employs in his natural Motion between the Tropicks; that is to say, a whole Year, (for by the way, I am no *Copernican*) for, Dear Madam, you must know, my Rhetorick Master,—— I say, my Rhetorick Master, who was——

Lucr. As great a Coxcomb as your self;—pray leave me, I am serious—I must go seek out *Lodwick*.

Sir Cred. Leave ye! I thank you for that i'faith, before I have spoke out my Speech; therefore I say, Divine Lady——because my Rhetorick Master commanded the frequent use of *Hypallages*, *Allegories*, and the richest Figures of that beauteous Art,—because my Rhetorick——

Lucr. I must leave the Fool, follow if you dare, for I have no leisure to attend your Nonsense. [Goes out.]

Enter Lady Knowell.

L. Kno. What, alone, *Sir Credulous*? I left you with *Lucretia*.

Sir Cred. *Lucretia!* I'm sure she makes a very *Tarquinius Sextus* of me, and all about this Serenade,—I protest and vow, incomparable Lady, I had begun the sweetest Speech to her—tho I say't, such Flowers of Rhetorick—'twou'd have been the very Nofegay of Eloquence, so it wou'd; and like an ungrateful illiterate Woman as she is, she left me in the very middle on't, so snuffy I'll warrant.

L. Kno. Be not discourag'd, Sir, I'll adapt her to a reconciliation: Lovers must sometimes expect these little *Belli fugaces*; the *Grecians* therefore truly named Love *Glucupicros Eros*.

Sir Cred. Nay, bright Lady, I am as little discourag'd as another, but I'm sorry I gave so extraordinary a Serenade to so little purpose.

L. Kno. Name it no more, 'twas only a Gallantry mistaken; but I'll accelerate your Felicity, and to morrow shall conclude the great dispute, since there is such Volubility and Vicissitude in mundane Affairs.— [*Goes out.*

Enter Lodwick, stays Sir Credulous as he is going out the other way.

Lod. *Sir Credulous*, whither away so fast?

Sir Cred. Zoz, what a Question's there? dost not know I am to unty the Virgin Zone to morrow, that is, barter Maiden-heads with thy Sister, that is, to be married to her, Man, and I must to *Lincolns-Inn* to my Counsel about it?

Lod. My Sister just now told me of it; but, Sir, you must not stir.

Sir Cred. Why, what's the matter?

Lod. Have you made your Will?

Sir Cred. My Will! no, why my Will, Man?

Lod. Then, for the good of your Friends and Posterity, stir not from this place.

Sir Cred. Good Lord, *Lodwick*, thou art the strangest Man,—what do you mean to fright a body thus?

Lod. You remember the Serenade last night?

Sir

Sir Cred. Remember it! Zoz, I think I do, here be the marks on't sure.— [Pulls off his Peruke, and shews his Head broke.

Lod. Ads me, your Head's broke.

Sir Cred. My Head broke! why 'twas a hundred to one but my Neck had been broke.

Lod. Faith, not unlikely,—— you know the next House is Sir Patient Fancy's; *Isabella* too, you know, is his Daughter.

Sir Cred. Yes, yes, she was by when I made my dumb Oration.

Lod. The same,—— this Lady has a Lover, a mad, furious, fighting, killing Hector, (as you know there are enough about this Town) this Monsieur supposing you to be a Rival, and that your Serenade was address'd to her——

Sir Cred. Enough, I understand you, set those Rogues on to murder me.

Lod. Wou'd 'twere no worse.

Sir Cred. Worse! Zoz Man, what the Devil can be worse?

Lod. Why he has vow'd to kill you himself wherever he meets you, and now waits below to that purpose.

Sir Cred. Sha, sha, if that be all, I'll to him immediately, and make Affidavit I never had any such design, Madam *Isabella*! ha, ha, alas, poor man, I have some body else to think on.

Lod. Affidavit! why he'll not believe you, should you swear your Heart out: some body has possess'd him that you are a damn'd Fool, and a most egregious Coward, a Fellow that to save your Life will swear any thing.

Sir Cred. What cursed Luck's this!—— why, how came he to know I liv'd here?

Lod. I believe he might have it from *Leander*, who is his Friend.

Sir Cred. *Leander*! I must confess I never lik'd that *Leander* since yesterday.

Lod. He has deceiv'd us all, that's the truth on't; for I have lately found out too, that he's your Rival, and has a kind of a——

56 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

Sir Cred. Smattering to my Mistress, hah, and therefore wou'd not be wanting to give me a lift out of this World; but I shall give her such a go-by——my Lady Knowell understands the difference between three Thousand a Year, and——prithee what's his Estate?

Lod. Shaw——not sufficient to pay Surgeons Bills.

Sir Cred. Alas poor Rat, how does he live then?

Lod. Hang him, the Ladies keep him; 'tis a good handsome Fellow, and has a pretty Town-Wit.

Sir Cred. He a Wit! what, I'll warrant he writes Lampoons, rails at Plays, curses all Poetry but his own, and mimicks the Players——ha.

Lod. Some such common Notion he has that deceives the ignorant Rabble, amongst whom he passes for a very smart Fellow,——'life he's here.

Enter Leander.

Sir Cred. Why——what shall I do, he will not affront me before Company? hah!

Lod. Not in our House, Sir,—bear up and take no notice on't. [Lod. whispers Lean.

Sir Cred. No notice, quoth he? why my very Fears will betray me.

Lean. Let me alone——Lodwick, I met just now with an Italian Merchant, who has made me such a Present?

Lod. What is't prithee?

Lean. A Sort of specifick Poison for all the Senses, especially for that of smelling; so that had I a Rival, and I shou'd see him at any reasonable distance, I could direct a little of this Scent up to his Brain so subtly, that it shall not fail of Execution in a day or two.

Sir Cred. How——Poison! [Shewing great Signs of Fear, and holding his Nose.

Lean. Nay, shou'd I see him in the midst of a thousand People, I can so direct it, that it shall assault my Enemy's Nostrils only, without any effects on the rest of the Company.

Sir Cred. Oh,—I'm a dead Man!

Lod. Is't possible?

Lean. Perhaps some little sneezing or so, no harm; but my Enemy's a dead Man, Sir, kill'd.

Sir

Sir Cred. Why, this is the most damn'd *Italian Trick* I ever heard of; why this out-does the famous *Poisoner Madam Brenvilliers*; well, here's no jesting, I perceive that, *Lodwick*.

Lod. Fear nothing, I'll secure you. [*Aside to him.*]

Enter Wittmore.

—*Wittmore!* how is't Friend! thou lookest cloudy.

Wit. You'll hardly blame me, Gentlemen, when you shall know what a damn'd unfortunate Rascal I am.

Lod. Prithce what's the matter?

Wit. Why I am to be marry'd, Gentlemen, marry'd to day.

Lod. How, marry'd! nay, Gad, then thou'st reason; but to whom prithce?

Wit. There's the Devil on't again, to a fine young, fair, brisk Woman, that has all the Temptations Heaven can give her.

Lod. What pity 'tis they shou'd be bestow'd to so wicked an end! Is this your Intrigue, that has been so long conceal'd from your Friends?

Lean. We thought it had been some kind Amour, something of Love and Honour.

Lod. Is she rich? if she be wondrous rich, we'll excuse thee.

Wit. Her Fortune will be suitable to the Jointure I shall make her.

Lod. Nay then 'tis like to prove a hopeful Match: what a Pox can provoke thee to this, dost love her?

Wit. No, there's another Plague, I am cursedly in love elsewhere; and this was but a false Address, to hide that real one.

Lod. How, love another? in what quality and manner?

Wit. As a Man ought to love, with a good substantial Passion, without any design but that of right-down honest Injoyment.

Lod. Ay, now we understand thee, this is something. Ah Friend, I had such an Adventure last Night.— You may talk of your Intrigues and substantial Pleasures, but

if any of you can match mine,——Egad I'll forswear Womankind.

Lean. An Adventure! prithee where?

Sir Cred. What, last Night, when you rescued me from the Bilbo-Blades! indeed ye look'd a little furiously.

Lod. I had reason, I was just then come out of a Garden from fighting with a Man whom I found with my Mistress; and I had at least known who 't had been, but for the coming of those Rascals that set on you, who parted us, whilst he made his escape in the Croud.

Wit. Death! that was I, who for fear of being known got away: was't he then that I fought with, and whom I learnt lov'd *Isabella*? [Aside.

Lod. You must know, Gentlemen, I have a sort of a matrimonial Kindness for a very pretty Woman, she whom I tell you I disturb'd in the Garden, and last night she made me an Assignment in her Chamber: when I came to the Garden-door by which I was to have admittance, I found a kind of Necessary call'd a baudy Waiting-Woman, whom I follow'd, and thought she wou'd have conducted me to the right Woman; but I was luckily and in the dark led into a Lady's Chamber, who took me for a Lover she expected: I found my happy mistake, and wou'd not undeceive her.

Wit. This cou'd be none but *Lucia*. [Aside.

——Well, Sir, and what did you do there?

Lod. Do! why what dost think? all that a Man inspir'd by Love cou'd do, I followed all the dictates of Nature, Youth and Vigor.

Wit. Oh hold my Heart——or I should kill the Traitor. [Aside.

Sir Cred. Follow'd all the Dictates of Nature, Youth and Vigor! prithee what's that?

Lod. I kiss'd a thousand times her balmy Lips, and greedily took in the nimble Sighs she breath'd into my Soul.

Wit. Oh I can scarce contain my self. [Aside.

Sir Cred. Pshaw, is that all Man?

Lod. I clasp'd her lovely Body in my Arms,
And laid my Bosom to her panting Breast.

Trembling

Trembling she seem'd all Love and soft Desire,
And I all Burnings in a youthful Fire.

Sir *Cred.* Bless us, the Man's in a Rapture!

Wit. Damnation on them both.

Sir *Cred.* Well, to the point, Man: what didst do all this while?

Lean. Faith I fancy he did not sleep, Sir *Credulous.*

Lod. No, Friend, she had too many Charms to keep me waking.

Sir *Cred.* Had she so? I shou'd have beg'd her Charms pardon, I tell her that tho.

Wit. Curse on my Sloth, Oh how shall I dissemble?

[*Aside.*

Lean. Thy Adventure was pretty lucky—— but *Wittmore*, thou dost not relish it.

Wit. My Mind's upon my Marriage, Sir: if I thought he lov'd *Isabella*, I wou'd marry her to be reveng'd on him, at least I'll vex his Soul, as he has tortur'd mine.— Well Gentlemen, you'll dine with me,—— and give me your opinion of my Wife.

Lod. Where dost thou keep the Ceremony?

Wit. At Sir *Patient Fancy's*, my Father-in-law.

Lod. How! Sir *Patient Fancy* to be your Father-in-law?

Lean. My Uncle?

Wit. He's fir'd,—— 'tis his Daughter, Sir, I am to marry.—

Lod. *Isabella!* *Leander*, can it be? can she consent to this? and can she love you?

Wit. Why, Sir, what do you see in me, shou'd render me unfit to be belov'd?

[*Angry.*

Lod. Marry'd to day! by Heaven it must not be, Sir.

[*Draws him aside.*

Wit. Why, Sir, I hope this is not the kind Lady who was so soft, so sweet and charming last night.

Lod. Hold, Sir,——we yet are Friends.—

Wit. And might have still been so, hadst thou not basely rob'd me of my Interest.

Lod. Death, do you speak my Language? [Ready to draw.

Wit.

60 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Wit. No, take a secret from my angry Heart, which all its Friendship to thee cou'd not make me utter;— it was my Mistress you surpriz'd last night.

Lod. Hah, my Lady *Fancy* his Mistress? Curse on my prating Tongue.— [Aside]

Sir Cred. What a Devil's all this, hard Words, Heart-burnings, Resentments, and all that?

Lean. You are not quarrelling, I hope, my Friends.

Lod. All this, Sir, we suspected, and smok'd your borrowing Money last night; and what I said was to gain the mighty secret that had been so long kept from your Friends:—but thou hast done a Baseness.—

[Lays his Hand on his Sword.]

Lean. Hold, what's the matter?

Wit. Did you not rob me of the Victory then I've been so long a toiling for?

Lod. If I had, 'twould not have made her guilty, nor me a Criminal; she taking me for one she lov'd, and I her for one that had no Interest in my Friend: and who the Devil wou'd have refus'd so fine a Woman? Nor had I but that I was prevented by her Husband.— But *Isabella*, Sir, you must resign.

Wit. I will, provided that our Friendship's safe; I am this day to marry her, and if you can find a means to do't in my room, I shall resign my Interest to my Friend; for 'tis the lovely Mother I adore.

Lod. And was it you I fought with in the Garden?

Wit. Yes, and thereby hangs a tale of a Mistake almost equal to thine, which I'll at leisure tell you.

[Talks to *Lod.* and *Lean.*]

Sir Cred. I'm glad they were Friends; Zoz, here was like to have been a pretty Business; what damnable work this same Womankind makes in a Nation of Fools that are Lovers?

Wit. Look ye, I am a damn'd dull Fellow at Invention, I'll therefore leave you to contrive matters by yourselves, whilst I'll go try how kind Fortune will be to me this Morning, and see in what readiness my Bride is. What you do must be thought on suddenly; I'll wait on you anon, and let you know how matters go.—

I'm

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 61

I'm as impatient to know the truth of this, as for an opportunity to enjoy *Lucia*. [Goes out.]

Lod. *Leander*, what shall I do?

Lean. You were best consult your Mother and Sister; Women are best at Intrigues of this kind: But what becomes of me?

Lod. Let me alone to dispatch this Fool, I long to have him out of the way, he begins to grow troublesome:—but now my Mother expects you.

Lean. Prithce be careful of me.—— [Exit *Lean*.]

Sir Cred. What was this long Whisper, something about me?

Lod. Why, yes faith, I was persuading him to speak to his Friend about this Business; but he swears there's no hopes of a Reconciliation: you are a dead Man, unless some cleanly conveyance of you be soon thought on.

Sir Cred. Why, I'll keep within doors, and defy Malice and foul Weather.

Lod. Oh, he means to get a Warrant, and search for stolen Goods, prohibited Commodities or Conventicles; there's a thousand civil Pretences in this Town to commit Outrages—let me see.— [They both pause a while.]

Sir Cred. Well, I have thought,——and of such a Business, that the Devil's in't if you don't say I am a man of Intrigue.

Lod. What is't?

Sir Cred. Ha, ha, ha, I must have leave to laugh to think how neatly I shall defeat this Son of a Whore of a thunder thumping Hector.

Lod. Be serious, Sir, this is no laughing matter; if I might advise, you should steal into the Country, for two or three days, till the Business be blown over.

Sir Cred. Lord, thou art so hasty and conceited of thy own Invention, thou wilt not give a Man leave to think in thy company: why these were my very thoughts; nay more, I have found a way to get off clever, tho he watch me as narrowly as an enraged Serjeant upon an Escape.

Lod. That indeed wou'd be a Master-piece.

Sir Cred. Why, look ye, do ye see that great Basket there?

Lod. I do,—this you mean.— [Pulls in a Basket.

Sir Cred. Very well, put me into this Basket, and cord me down, send for a couple of Porters, hoist me away with a Direction, to an old Uncle of mine, one Sir Anthony Bubleton at Bubleton-Hall in Essex; and then whip flap-dash, as Nokes says in the Play, I'm gone, and who's the wiser?

Lod. I like it well.

Sir Cred. Nay, lose no time in applauding, I'll in, the Carrier goes this Morning; farewell, Lodwick.—

[Goes into the Basket.

I'll be here again on Thursday. [Lod. writes a Direction.

Enter Boy.

Lod. By all means, Sir,— Who's there,— call a couple of Porters. [Exit Boy.

Sir Cred. One word more, the Carrier lies at the Bell in Friday-street, pray take care they set me not on my Head.— [Pops in again.

Enter Boy and two Porters.

Lod. Come hither, cord up this Basket, and carry it where he shall direct.—Leander will never think he's free from a Rival, till he have him in his possession.— To Mr. Leander Fancy's at the next door; say 'tis things for him out of the Country.— Write a Direction to him on the Basket-lid. [Aside to the Boy.

[Porters going to carry off the Basket on a long Pole between 'em.

Enter Lady Knowel.

L. Kno. What's this? whither goes this Basket?

Sir Cred. Ah Lord! they are come with the Warrant.

[Peeps out of the Basket.

Lod. Only Books, Madam, offer'd me to buy, but they do not please me.

L. Kno. Books! nay then set down the Basket, Fellows, and let me peruse 'em; who are their Authors, and what their Language?

Sir Cred. A pox of all Learning, I say,— 'tis my Mother-in-law. [Porters going to set down the Basket.

Lod.

Lod. Hold, hold, Madam, they are only *English* and some *Law-French*.

L. Kno. Oh laugh, how I hate that vile sort of Reading! up with 'em again Fellows, and away. [*The Porters take up and go out.*]

Lod. God-a-mercy *Law-French*. [*Aside.*]

L. Kno. *Law-French!* out upon't, I cou'd find in my heart to have the Porters bring it back, and have it burnt for a Heresy in Learning.

Lod. Or thrown into the *Thames*, that it may flow back to *Normandy*, to have the Language new modell'd.

L. Kno. You say well; but what's all this *ad Iphicli bonis*, where's Sir *Credulous* all this while? his Affairs expect him.

Lod. So does *Leander* your Ladyship within.

L. Kno. *Leander!* *Hymen, Hymenæe*, I'll wait on him, *Lodwick*; I am resolv'd you shall marry *Isabella* too; I have a design in my head that cannot fail to give you the possession of her within this two or three hours.

Lod. Such an Indulgence will make me the happiest of Men, and I have something to say to your Ladyship that will oblige you to hasten the Design.

L. Kno. Come in, and let me know it. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A Table and Chairs.*

Enter Lady Fancy in a Morning-dress, Maundy with Pen, Ink and Paper.

L. Fan. *Wittmore* in the Garden, sayst thou, with *Isabella!* Oh perjurd Man! it was by his contrivance then I was betray'd last night.

Maun. I thought so too at first, Madam, till going to conduct Mr. *Knowel* thro the Garden, he finding Mr. *Wittmore* there with *Isabella* drew on him, and they both fought out of the Garden: what mischief's done I know not.——But, Madam, I hope Mr. *Knowell* was not uncivil to your Ladyship. I had no time to ask what pass'd between you.

L. Fan. Oh name it not: I gave him all I had reserv'd for *Wittmore*. I was so possess'd with the thoughts of

64 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

of that dear false one, I had no sense free to perceive the cheat :——but I will be reveng'd.——Come let me end my Letter, we are safe from interruption.

Mann. Yes, Madam, Sir *Patient* is not yet up, the Doctors have been with him, and tell him he is not so bad as we persuaded him.

L. Fan. And was he soft and kind ?——By all that's good she loves him, and they contriv'd this meeting.——My Pen and Ink——I am impatient to unload my Soul of this great weight of Jealousy.—— [*Sits down, and writes.*]

Enter Sir Patient, looking over her Shoulder a tip-toe.

Mann. Heaven! here's Sir *Patient*, Madam.

L. Fan. Hah,——and 'tis too late to hide the Paper : I was just going to subscribe my Name.

Sir Pat. Good morrow, my Lady *Fancy*, your Ladyship is well employ'd, I see.

L. Fan. Indeed I was, and pleasantly too ; I am writing a Love-letter, Sir.——But my Dear, what makes you so soon up ?

Sir Pat. A Love-letter!—let me see't. [*Goes to take it.*]

L. Fan. I'll read it to you, Sir.

Mann. What mean you, Madam ? [*Aside.*]

Lady Fancy reads.

It was but yesterday you swore you lov'd me, and I poor easy Fool believ'd ; but your last Night's Infidelity has undeceived my Heart, and render'd you the falsest Man that ever Woman sigh'd for. Tell me, how durst you, when I had prepared all things for our Enjoyment, be so great a Devil to deceive my languishing Expectations ? and in your room send one that has undone

Your——

Mann. Sure she's mad to read this to him.

Sir Pat. Hum,——I profess ingenuously——I think it is indeed a Love-letter.——My Lady *Fancy*, what means all this ? as I take it, here are Riddles and Mysteries in this Business.

L. Fan.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 65

L. Fan. Which thus, Sir, I'll unfold.—

[Takes the Pen, and writes Isabella.

Sir Pat. How! undone——Your——Isabella,
meaning my Daughter?

L. Fan. Yes, my Dear, going this morning into her Chamber, she not being there, I took up a Letter that lay open on her Table, and out of curiosity read it; as near as I can remember 'twas to this purpose: I writ it out now, because I had a mind thou shou'dst see't; for I can hide nothing from thee.

Sir Pat. A very good Lady I profess! to whom is it directed?

L. Fan. Why,——Sir——What shall I say, I cannot lay it now to *Lodwick*—— [Aside.
I believe she meant it to Mr. *Fainlove*, for whom else cou'd it be design'd? she being so soon to marry him.

Sir Pat. Hah,——Mr. *Fain-love*! so soon so fond and amorous!

L. Fan. Alas, 'tis the excusable fault of all young Women, thou knowst I was just such another Fool to thee, so fond——and so in love.——

Sir Pat. Ha,——thou wert indeed, my Lady *Fancy*, indeed thou wert.——But I will keep the Letter however, that this idle Baggage may know I understand her Tricks and Intrigues. [Puts up the Letter.

L. Fan. Nay then 'twill out: No I beseech you, Sir, give me the Letter, I wou'd not for the World *Isabella* shou'd know of my theft, 'twou'd appear malicious in me:——Besides, Sir, it does not besit your Gravity to be concern'd in the little Quarrels of Lovers.

Sir Pat. Lovers! Tell me not of Lovers, my Lady *Fancy*; with Reverence to your good Ladyship, I value not whether there be Love between 'em or not. Pious Wedlock is my Business,——nay, I will let him know his own too, that I will, with your Ladyship's permission.

L. Fan. How unlucky I am!——Sir, as to his Chastisement, use your own discretion, in which you do abound most plentifully. But pray let not *Isabella* hear of it; for as I wou'd preserve my Duty to thee, by communicating
all

66 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

all things to thee, so I wou'd conserve my good Opinion with her.

Sir Pat. Ah, what a Blessing I possess in so excellent a Wife! and in regard I am every day descending to my Grave,——ah—— I will no longer hide from thee the Provision I have made for thee, in case I die.——

L. Fan. This is the Musick that I long'd to hear.—— Die!—— Oh that fatal Word will kill me—— [Weeps.] Name it no more, if you'd preserve my Life.

Sir Pat. Hah—now cannot I refrain joining with her in affectionate Tears.—No, but do not weep for me, my excellent Lady, for I have made a pretty competent Estate for thee. Eight thousand Pounds, which I have conceal'd in my Study behind the Wainscot on the left hand as you come in.

L. Fan. Oh tell me not of a transitory Wealth, for I'm resolv'd not to survive thee. Eight thousand Pound say you?——Oh I cannot endure the thoughts on'r. [Weeps.]

Sir Pat. Eight thousand Pounds just, my dearest Lady.

L. Fan. Oh you'll make me desperate in naming it,—— is it in Gold or Silver?

Sir Pat. In Gold, my dearest, the most part, the rest in Silver?

L. Fan. Good Heavens! why should you take such pleasure in afflicting me? [Weeps.]——Behind the Wainscot say you?

Sir Pat. Behind the Wainscot, prithee be pacified,—— thou makest me lose my greatest Virtue, Moderation, to see thee thus: alas, we're all born to die.——

L. Fan. Again of dying! Uncharitable Man, why do you delight in tormenting me?—— On the left hand, say you, as you go in?

Sir Pat. On the left hand, my Love: had ever Man such a Wife?

L. Fan. Oh my Spirits fail me—— lead me, or I shall faint,——lead me to the Study, and shew me where 'tis,——for I am able to hear no more of it.

Sir Pat. I will, if you will promise indeed and indeed, not to grieve too much. [Going to lead her out.]

Enter

Enter Wittmore.

Wit. Heaven grant me some kind opportunity to speak with *Lucia*! hah, she's here, — and with her the fond Cuckold her Husband, — Death, he has spy'd me, there's no avoiding him. —

Sir Pat. Oh, are you there, Sir? — *Maundy* look to my Lady, — I take it, Sir, you have not dealt well with a Person of my Authority and Gravity.

[Gropes for the Letter in his Pocket.]

Wit. So this can be nothing less than my being found out to be no *Yorkshire* Esq; a Pox of my *Geneva* Breeding; it must be so, what the Devil shall I say now?

Sir Pat. And this disingenuous dealing does ill become the Person you have represented, I take it.

Wit. Represented! ay, there 'tis, wou'd I were handsomely off o' this Business; neither *Lucia* nor *Maundy* have any intelligence in their demure Looks that can instruct a Man. — Why, faith, Sir, — I must confess, — I am to blame — and that I have — a —

L. Fan. Oh, *Maundy*, he'll discover all, what shall we do?

Sir Pat. Have what, Sir?

Wit. From my violent Passion for your Daughter. —

L. Fan. Oh, I'm all Confusion. —

Wit. Egad I am i'th wrong, I see by *Lucia's* Looks.

Sir Pat. That you have, Sir, you wou'd say, made a Sport and May-game of the Ingagement of your Word; I take it, Mr. *Fain-love*, 'tis not like the Stock you came from.

Wit. Yes, I was like to have spoil'd all, 'sheart what fine work I had made. — but most certainly he has discover'd my Passion for his Wife. — Well, Impudence assist me — I made Sir, a trifle of my word, Sir! from whom have you this Intelligence?

Sir Pat. From whom shou'd I, Sir, but from my Daughter *Isabella*?

Wit. *Isabella*! The malicious Baggage understood to whom my first Courtship was address'd last Night, and has betray'd me.

Sir Pat. And Sir, to let you see I utter nothing without Precaution, pray read that Letter.

Wit. Hah—a Letter! what can this mean,—'tis *Lucia's* Hand, with *Isabella's* Name to't.—Oh the dear cunning Creature, to make her Husband the Messenger too.——How, I send one in my room? [*He reads.*]

L. Fan. Yes, Sir, you think we do not know of the Appointment you made last Night; but having other Affairs in hand than to keep your Promise, you sent *Mr. Knowel* in your room,——false Man.

Wit. I send him, Madam! I wou'd have sooner died.

Sir Pat. Sir, as I take it, he cou'd not have known of your Designs and Rendezvous without your Informations.——Were not you to have met my Daughter here to night, Sir?

Wit. Yes, Sir, and I hope 'tis no such great Crime, to desire a little Conversation with the fair Person one loves, and is so soon to marry, which I was hinder'd from doing by the greatest and most unluckly Misfortune that ever arriv'd: but for my sending him, Madam, credit me, there's nothing so much amazes me and afflicts me, as to know he was here.

Sir Pat. He speaks well, ingenuously he does.—Well, Sir, for your Father's sake, whose Memory I reverence, I will for once forgive you. But let's have no more Night-works, no more Gambols, I beseech you, good *Mr. Fain-love*.

Wit. I humbly think ye, Sir, and do beseech you to tell the dear Creature that writ this, that I love her more than Life or Fortune, and that I wou'd sooner have kill'd the Man that usurp'd my place last Night, than have assisted him.

L. Fan. Were you not false then?——Now hang me if I do not credit him. [*Aside.*]

Sir Pat. Alas, good Lady! how she's concern'd for my Interest, she's even jealous for my Daughter. [*Aside.*]

Wit. False! charge me not with unprofitable Sins; wou'd I refuse a Blessing, or blaspheme a Power that might undo me? wou'd I die in my full vigorous Health,
or

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 69

or live in constant Pain? All this I cou'd, sooner than be untrue.

Sir Pat. Ingenuously, my Lady *Fancy*, he speaks discreetly, and to purpose.

L. Fan. Indeed, my Dear, he does, and like an honest Gentleman; and I shou'd think my self very unreasonable not to believe him.—And Sir, I'll undertake your Peace shall be made with your Mistress.

Sir Pat. Well, I am the most fortunate Man in a Wife, that ever had the Blessing of a good one.

Wit. Madam, let me fall at your Feet, and thank you for this Bounty.—Make it your own case, and then consider what returns ought to be made to the most passionate and faithful of Lovers. [Kneels.

Sir Pat. I profess a wonderful good-natur'd Youth, this; rise, Sir, my Lady *Fancy* shall do you all the kind Offices she can, o' my word she shall.

L. Fan. I'm all Obedience, Sir, and doubtless shall obey you.

Sir Pat. You must, indeed you must; and Sir, I'll defer your Happiness no longer, this Day you shall be marry'd.

Wit. This Day, Sir! —why, the Writings are not made.

Sir Pat. No matter, Mr. *Fain-love*; her Portion shall be equivalent to the Jointure you shall make her, I take it, that's sufficient.

Wit. A Jointure quoth he! it must be in new *Eutopian* Land then.—And must I depart thus, without a kind Word, a Look, or a Billet, to signify what I am to expect? [Looking on her slyly.

Sir Pat. Come, my Lady *Fancy*, shall I wait on you down to Prayer? Sir, you will get your self in order for your Marriage, the great Affair of human Life; I must to my Morning's Devotion: Come, Madam.

[She endeavours to make Signs to Wittmore.

L. Fan. Alas, Sir, the said Discourse you lately made me, has so disorder'd me, and given me such a Pain in my Head, I am not able to endure the Psalm-singing.

Sir Pat. This comes of your Weeping; but we'll omit that part of th' Exercise, and have no Psalm sung.

L. Fan. Oh by no means, Sir, 'twill scandalize the Brethren; for you know a Psalm is not sung so much out of Devotion, as 'tis to give notice of our Zeal and pious Intentions; 'tis a kind of Proclamation to the Neighbourhood, and cannot be omitted.—Oh how my Head aches!

Wit. He were a damn'd dull Lover, that cou'd not guess what she meant by this. [Aside.]

Sir Pat. Well, my Lady *Fancy*, your Ladyship shall be obey'd,——come, Sir, we'll leave her to her Women.

[Exit *Sir Pat.*

[As *Wittmore* goes out, he bows and looks on her; she gives him a Sign.]

Wit. That kind Look is a sufficient Invitation.

L. Fan. Maundy, follow 'em down, and bring *Wittmore* back again.—[Exit *Maun.*] There's now a necessity of our contriving to avoid this Marriage handfomly,——and we shall at least make two Hours our own; I never wish'd well to long Prayers till this Minute.

Enter *Wittmore*.

Wit. Oh my dear *Lucia*!

L. Fan. Oh *Wittmore*! I long to tell thee what a fatal Mistake had like to have happened last Night.

Wit. My Friend has told me all, and how he was prevented by the coming of your Husband from robbing me of those sacred Delights I languish for. Oh let us not lose inestimable Time in dull talking; but haste to give each other the only Confirmation we can give, how little we are our own.

L. Fan. I see *Lodwick's* a Man of Honour, and deserves a Heart if I had one to give him. [Exeunt.]

S C E N E III. A Hall.

Enter *Sir Patient* and *Roger*.

Sir Pat. *Roger*, is Prayer ready, *Roger*?

Rog. Truly nay, Sir, for Mr. *Gogle* hath taken too much

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 71

much of the Creature this Morning, and is not in case, Sir.

Sir Pat. How mean you, Sirrah, that Mr. Gogle is overtaken with Drink?

Rog. Nay, Sir, he hath over-eaten himself at Breakfast only.

Sir Pat. Alas, and that's soon done, for he hath a sickly Stomach as well as I, poor Man. Where is Bartholomew the Clerk? he must hold forth then to day.

Rog. Verily he is also disabled; for going forth last Night by your Commandment to smite the Wicked, he received a blow over the *Pericranium*.——

Sir Pat. Why how now, Sirrah, Latin! the Language of the Beast! hah—and what then, Sir?

Rog. Which Blow, I doubt, Sir, hath spoiled both his Praying and his Eating.

Sir Pat. Hah! What a Family's here? no Prayer to day!

Enter Nurse and Fanny.

Nurf. Nay verily it shall all out, I will be no more the dark Lanthorn to the deeds of Darkness.

Sir Pat. What's the matter here?

Nurf. Sir, this young Sinner has long been privy to all the daily and nightly meetings between Mr. Lodwick and Isabella; and just now I took her tying a Letter to a String in the Garden, which he drew up to his Window: and I have born it till my Conscience will bear it no longer.

Sir Pat. Hah, so young a Baud!—Tell me, Minion—private meeting! tell me truth, I charge ye, when? where? how? and how often? Oh she's debauch'd!—her Reputation ruin'd, and she'll need a double Portion. Come, tell me truth, for this little Finger here has told me all.

Fan. Oh Geminy, Sir, then that little Finger's the honestest great Lyer as ever was.

Sir Pat. Huzzy, huzzy—I will have thee whip'd most unmercifully: Nurse, fetch me the Rod.

Fan. Oh pardon me, Sir, this one time, and I'll tell all.

[Kneels.
Sir

—Sir— I have seen him in the Garden, but not very often.

Sir Pat. Often! Oh, my Family's dishonoured. Tell me truly what he us'd to do there, or I will have thee whipt without cessation. Oh I'm in a cold Sweat; there's my fine Maid, was he with her long?

Fan. Long enough.

Sir Pat. Long enough!— oh, 'tis so, long enough,— for what, hah? my dainty Miss, tell me, and didst thou leave 'em?

Fan. They us'd to send me to gather Flowers to make Nofegays, Sir.

Sir Pat. Ah, Demonstration; 'tis evident if they were left alone that they were naught, I know't.—And where were they the while? in the close Arbour?—Ay, ay—I will have it cut down, it is the Pent-house of Iniquity, the very Coverlid of Sin.

Fan. No, Sir, they sat on the Primrose Bank.

Sir Pat. What, did they sit all the while, or stand— or—lie— or—oh how was't?

Fan. They only sat indeed, Sir Father.

Sir Pat. And thou didst not hear a Word they said all the while?

Fan. Yes, I did, Sir, and the Man talk'd a great deal of this, and of that, and of t'other, and all the while threw Jessamine in her Bosom.

Sir Pat. Well said, and did he nothing else?

Fan. No, indeed, Sir Father, nothing.

Sir Pat. But what did she say to the Man again?

Fan. She said, let me see.—Ay, she said, Lord you'll forget your self, and stay till somebody catch us.

Sir Pat. Ah, very fine,—then what said he?

Fan. Then he said, Well if I must be gone, let me leave thee with this hearty Curse, A Pox take thee all over for making me love thee so confoundedly.

Sir Pat. Oh horrible!

Fan. —Oh I cou'd live here for ever,—that was when he kist her—her Hand only. Are you not a damn'd Woman for making so fond a Puppy of me?

Sir Pat. Oh unheard-of Wickedness!

Fan.

Fan. Wou'd the Devil had thee, and all thy Family,
e'er I had seen thy cursed Face.

Sir Pat. Oh, I'll hear no more, I'll hear no more!—
why what a blasphemous Wretch is this?

Fan. Pray, Sir Father, do not tell my Sister of this,
she'll be horribly angry with me.

Sir Pat. No, no, get you gone.—Oh I am Heart-sick
—I'll up and consult with my Lady what's fit to be done
in this Affair. Oh never was the like heard of.——

[Goes out, Fanny goes the other way.]

SCENE, *the Lady Fancy's Bed-chamber;*
she's discover'd with Wittmore in disorder.
A Table, Sword, and Hat.

Maun. O Madam, Sir Patient's coming up.

L. Fan. Coming up, say you!

Maun. He's almost on the top of the Stairs, Madam.

Wit. What shall I do?

L. Fan. Oh, damn him, I know not; if he see thee
here after my pretended Illness, he must needs discover
why I feign'd.—I have no excuse ready, —this Chamber's
unlucky, there's no avoiding him; here——step behind
the Bed; perhaps he has only forgot his Psalm-Book,
and will not stay long. [Wittmore runs behind the Bed.]

Enter Sir Patient.

Sir Pat. Oh, oh, pardon this Interruption, my Lady
Fancy,——Oh, I am half killed, my Daughter, my
Honour——my Daughter, my Reputation.

L. Fan. Good Heavens, Sir, is she dead?

Sir Pat. I wou'd she were, her Portion and her Ho-
nour would then be sav'd. But oh, I'm sick at Heart,
Maundy fetch me the Bottle of *Mirabilis* in the Closet, —
she's wanton, unchaste.

Enter Maundy with the Bottle.

Oh I cannot speak it; oh the Bottle — (*Drinks*) she has
lost her Fame, her Shame, her Name.——Oh (*Drinks*)
that is not the right Bottle, that with the red Cork (*Drinks*)

[Exit Maundy.]

74 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

and is grown a very t'other-end-of-the-Town Creature, a very Apple of Sodom, fair without, and filthy within, what shall we do with her? she's lost, undone; hah!

Enter Maundy.

let me see, (*Drinks*)—this is not as I take it—(*Drinks*)—no, 'tis not the right, —she's naught, she's leud, (*Drinks*)—oh how you vex me—(*Drinks*) This is not the right Bottle yet,—(*Drinks*) No, no, here.

[*Gives her the Bottle.*]

Maun. You said that with the red Cork, Sir. [*Goes out.*]

Sir Pat. I meant the blue; —I know not what I say, —In fine, my Lady, let's marry her out of hand, for she is fall'n, fall'n to Perdition; she understands more Wickedness than had she been bred in a profane Nun-

Enter Maundy.

nery, a Court, or a Play-house, (*Drinks*)— therefore let's marry her instantly, out of hand (*Drinks*) Misfortune on Misfortune.—But Patience is a wonderful Virtue, (*Drinks*) —Ha—this is very comfortable,—very consoling—I profess if it were not for these Creatures, ravishing Comforts, Sometimes, a Man were a very odd sort of an Animal (*Drinks*) But ah—see how all things were ordain'd for the use and comfort of Man (*Drinks.*)

L. Fan. I like this well: Ah, Sir, 'tis very true, therefore receive it plentifully and thankfully.

Sir Pat. (*Drinks*) Ingenuously—it hath made me marvellous lightsome; I profess it hath a very notable Faculty, —very knavish—and as it were, waggish, —but hah, what have we there on the Table? a Sword and Hat?

[*Sees Wittmore's Sword and Hat on the Table, which he had forgot.*]

L. Fan. Curse on my Dulness.—Oh these Sir, they are Mr. *Fain-love's*—he being so soon to be marry'd, and being straitned for time, sent these to *Maundy* to be new trim'd with Ribbon, Sir—that's all. Take 'em away you naughty Baggage, must I have Mens things seen in my Chamber?

Sir Pat. Nay, nay, be not angry, my little Rogue; I like the young Man's Frugality well.—Go, go your ways,

ways, get you gone, and finesy your Knacks, and Tranghams, and do your Business—go.

[Smiling on Maundy, gently beating her with his Hand: she goes out, he bolts the Door after her, and sits down on the Bed's feet.]

L. Fan. Heavens, what means he!

Sir Pat. Come hither to me my little Ape's Face,—— Come, come I say——what must I come fetch you?— Catch her, catch her—catch her, catch her, catch her.

[Running after her.]

L. Fan. Oh Sir, I am so ill I can hardly stir.

Sir Pat. I'll make ye well, come hither ye Monky-face, did it, did it, did it? alas for it, a poor silly Fool's Face, dive it a blow, and I'll beat it.

L. Fan. You neglect your Devotion, Sir.

Sir Pat. No, no, no Prayer to day, my little Rascal, —no Prayer to day—poor Gogle's sick.—— Come hither, why you refractory Baggage you, come or I shall touze you, ingenuously I shall; tom, tom, or I'll whip it.

L. Fan. Have you forgot your Daughter, Sir, and your Disgrace?

Sir Pat. A fiddle on my Daughter, she's a Chick of the old Cock I profess; I was just such another Wag when young.—But she shall be marry'd to morrow, a good Cloke for her Knavery; therefore come your ways, ye Wag, we'll take a nap together: good faith, my little Harlot, I mean thee no harm.

L. Fan. No o' my Conscience.

Sir Pat. Why then, why then you little Mungrel?

L. Fan. His precise Worship is as it were disguis'd, the outward Man is over-taken——pray, Sir, lie down, and I'll come to you presently.

Sir Pat. Away you Wag, will you? will you?— Catch her there, catch her.

L. Fan. I will indeed,—Death there's no getting from him,—pray lie down—and I'll cover thee close enough I'll warrant thee. —— *[Aside.]*

[He lies down, she covers him.]

Had ever Lovers such spiteful luck? hah——surely he

sleeps, bless the mistaken Bottle. — Ay, he sleeps, —
whilst, Wittmore —

[He coming out falls; pulls
the Chair down, Sir Patient
flings open the Curtain.

Wit. Plague of my over-care, what shall I do?

Sir Pat. What's that, what Noise is that? let me see,
we are not safe; lock up the Doors, what's the matter?
What Thunder-Clap was that?

[Wittmore runs under the Bed; she
runs to Sir Patient, and holds
him in his Bed.

L. Fan. Pray Sir, lie still, 'twas I was only going to
sit down, and a sudden Giddinels took me in my Head,
which made me fall, and with me the Chair; there is no
danger near ye, Sir — I was just coming to sleep by
you.

Sir Pat. Go, you're a flattering Huswife; go, catch
her, catch her, catch her. [Lies down, she covers him.

L. Fan. Oh how I tremble at the dismal apprehension
of being discover'd! Had I secur'd my self of the eight
thousand Pound, I wou'd not value Wittmore's being
seen. But now to be found out, wou'd call my Wit in
question, for 'tis the Fortunate alone are wise. —

[Wittmore peeps from under the Bed;
she goes softly to the Door to open it.

Wit. Was ever Man so plagu'd? — hah — what's this?
— confound my tell-tale Watch, the Larum goes, and
there's no getting to't to silence it. — Damn'd Mis-
fortune! [Sir Patient rises, and flings open the Curtains.

Sir Pat. Hah, what's that?

L. Fan. Heavens! what's the matter? we are destin'd
to discovery. [She runs to Sir Patient, and leaves
the Door still fast.

Sir Pat. What's that I say, what's that? let me see, let
me see, what ringing's that, Oh let me see what 'tis.

[Strives to get up, she holds him down.

L. Fan. Oh, now I see my Fate's inevitable! Alas,
that ever I was born to see't. [Weeps.

Wit. Death she'll tell him I am here: Nay, he must
know't,

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 77

know't, a Pox of all Invention and Mechanicks, and he were damn'd that first contriv'd a Watch.

Sir Pat. Hah, dost weep? ——— why dost weep? I say, what Noise is that? what ringing? hah. ———

L. Fan. 'Tis that, 'tis that, my Dear, that makes me weep. Alas, I never hear this fatal Noise, but some dear Friend dies.

Sir Pat. Hah, dies! Oh that must be I, ay, ay, Oh.

L. Fan. I've heard it, Sir, this two Days, but wou'd not tell you of it.

Sir Pat. Hah! heard it these two Days! Oh, what is't a Death-watch? ——— hah. ———

L. Fan. Ay, Sir, a Death-watch, a certain Larum Death watch, a thing that has warn'd our Family this hundred Years, oh, ——— I'm the most undone Woman!

Wit. A Blessing on her for a dear dissembling Jilt—Death and the Devil, will it never cease?

Sir Pat. A Death-watch! ah, 'tis so, I've often heard of these things—methinks it sounds as if 'twere under the Bed. ——— [Offers to look, she holds him.]

L. Fan. You think so, Sir, but that 'tis about the Bed is my Grief; it therefore threatens you: Oh wretched Woman!

Sir Pat. Ay, ay, I'm too happy in a Wife to live long: Well, I will settle my House at *Hogsdon*, with the Land about it, which is 500*l.* a Year upon thee, live or die, — do not grieve. ——— [Lays himself down.]

L. Fan. Oh I never had more Cause; come try to sleep, your Fate may be diverted—whilst I'll to Prayers for your dear Health. — [Covers him, draws the Curtains.] I have almost run out all my stock of Hypocrisy, and that hated Art now fails me. — Oh all ye Powers that favour distrest Lovers, assist us now, and I'll provide against your future Malice.

[She makes Signs to Wittmore, he peeps.]

Wit. I'm impatient of Freedom, yet so much Happiness as I but now enjoy'd without this part of Suffering

had made me too blest. ——— Death and Damnation! what curst luck have I?

[Makes Signs to her to open the Door: whilst he creeps softly from under the Bed to the Table, by which going to raise himself, he pulls down all the Dressing-things: at the same instant Sir Patient leaps from the Bed, and she returns from the Door, and sits on Wittmore's Back as he lies on his Hands and Knees, and makes as if she swooned.]

Sir Pat. What's the matter? what's the matter? has Satan broke his everlasting Chain, and got loose abroad to plague poor Mortals? hah—what's the matter?

[Runs to his Lady.]

L. Fan. Oh help, I die—I faint—run down, and call for help.

Sir Pat. My Lady dying? oh she's gone, she faints,—what ho, who waits? *[Cries and bawls.]*

L. Fan. Oh, go down and bring me help, the Door is lock'd, ——— they cannot hear ye, ——— oh ——— I go ——— I die. ——— *[He opens the Door, and calls help, help.]*

Wit. Damn him! there's no escaping without I kill the Dog. *[From under her, peeping.]*

L. Fan. Lie still, or we are undone. ———

Sir Patient returns with Maundy.

Maun. Hah, discover'd!

Sir Pat. Help, help, my Lady dies.

Maun. Oh, I perceive how 'tis. ——— Alas she's dead, quite gone; oh rub her Temples, Sir.

Sir Pat. Oh I'm undone then, ——— *[Weeps]* Oh my Dear, my virtuous Lady!

L. Fan. Oh, where's my Husband, my dearest Husband—Oh bring him near me.

Sir Pat. I'm here, my excellent Lady. ———

[She takes him about the Neck, and raises her self up, gives Wittmore a little kick behind.]

Wit. Oh the dear lovely Hypocrite, was ever Man so near discovery? ——— *[Goes out.]*

Sir Pat. Oh how hard she presses my Head to her Bosom!

Maun.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 79

Maun. Ah, that grasping hard, Sir, is a very bad Sign.

Sir Pat. How does my good, my dearest Lady Fancy?

L. Fan. Something better now, give me more Air,—
that dismal Larum Death-watch had almost kill'd me.

Sir Pat. Ah precious Creature, how she afflicts her self
for me.—Come, let's walk into the Dining-room, 'tis
more airy, from thence into my Study, and make thy self
Mistress of that Fortune I have design'd thee, thou best of
Women. [*Exeunt.*

ACT V. SCENE I.

A Table, and six Chairs.

Enter Isabella reading a Letter, Betty tricking her.

Isab. HOW came you by this Letter?

Bet. Miss Fanny receiv'd it by a String from
his Window, by which he took up that you writ to him
this Morning.

Isab. What means this nicety? forbear I say.—

[*puts Betty from her.*

Bet. You cannot be too fine upon your Wedding-day.

Isab. Thou art mistaken, leave me,—whatever he
says here to satisfy my Jealousy, I am confirm'd that he
was false: yet this assurance to free me from this in-
tended Marriage, makes me resolve to pardon him, how-
ever guilty.—

Enter Wittmore.

How now! what means this Insolence? How dare you,
having so lately made your guilty approaches, venture a-
gain into my presence?

Wit. Why? Is there any danger, but what's so visible,
in those fair Eyes?

Isab. And there may lie enough, Sir, when they're
angry. By what Authority do you make this saucy Visit?

80 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Wit. That of a Husband, Madam; I come to congratulate the mighty Joy this Day will bring you.

Ifab. Thou dar'st not marry me, there will be danger in't.

Wit. Why sure you do not carry Death in your Embraces, I find no Terror in that lovely Shape, no Daggers in that pretty scornful Look; that Breath that utters so much Anger now, last night was sweet as new-blown Roses are,——and spoke such Words, so tender and so kind.

Ifab. And canst thou think they were address'd to thee?

Wit. No, nor cou'd the Shade of Night hide the Confusion which disorder'd you, at the discovery that I was not he, the blessed he you look'd for.

Ifab. Leave me, thou hated Object of my Soul.

Wit. This will not serve your turn, For I must marry you.

Ifab. Then thou art a Fool, and drawest thy Ruin on; why I will hate thee,——hate thee most extremely.

Wit. That will not anger me.

Ifab. Why, I will never let thee touch me, nor kiss my Hand, nor come into my sight.

Wit. Are there no other Women kind, fair, and to be purchas'd? he cannot starve for Beauty in this Age, that has a stock to buy.

Ifab. Why I will cuckold thee, look to't, I will most damnably.

Wit. So wou'd you, had you lov'd me, in a year or two; therefore like a kind civil Husband, I've made provision for you, a Friend, and one I dare trust my Honour with,——'tis Mr. Knowell, Madam.

Ifab. *Lodwick!* What Devil brought that Name to his knowledge?——Canst thou know him, and yet dare hope to marry me?

Wit. We have agreed it, and on these conditions.

Ifab. Thou basely injurest him, he cannot do a Deed he ought to blush for; *Lodwick* do this! Oh do not credit it,——prithee be just and kind for thy own Honour's sake; be quickly so, the hasty minutes fly, and will anon make up the fatal Hour that will unde me.

Wit.

Wit. 'Tis true, within an hour you must submit to Hymen, there's no avoiding it.

Isab. Nay then be gone, my poor submissive Prayers, and all that dull Obedience Custom has made us Staves to.— Do sacrifice me, lead me to the Altar, and see if all the holy mystick Words can conjure from me the consenting Syllable : No, I will not add one word to make the Charm complete, but stand as silent in the enchanting Circle, as if the Priests were raising Devils there.

Enter Lodwick.

Lod. Enough, enough, my charming *Isabella*, I am confirm'd.

Isab. *Lodwick* ! what good Angel conducted thee hither ?

Lod. E'en honest *Charles Wittmore* here, thy Friend and mine, no Bug-bear Lover he.

Isab. *Wittmore* ! that Friend I've often heard thee name ? Now some kind mischief on him, he has so frightened me, I scarce can bring my Sense to so much order, to thank him that he loves me not.

Lod. Thou shalt defer that payment to more leisure ; we're Men of business now. My Mother, knowing of a Consultation of Physicians which your Father has this day appointed to meet at his House, has brib'd Monsieur *Turboone* his French Doctor in Pension, to admit of a Doctor or two of her recommending, who shall amuse him with discourse till we get ourselves married ; and to make it the more ridiculous, I will release *Sir Credulous* from the Basket, I saw it in the Hall as I came thro, we shall have need of the Fool. *[Exit Wittmore.*

Enter Wittmore, pulling in the Basket.

Wit. 'Twi'll do well.

Lod. *Sir Credulous*, how is't Man ? *[Opens the Basket.*

Sir Cred. What, am I not at the Carrier's yet ?—— Oh *Lodwick*, thy Hand, I'm almost poison'd.— This Basket wants airing extremely, it smells like an old Lady's Wedding Gown of my acquaintance.— But what's the danger past, Man ?

Lod. No, but there's a necessity of your being for some time disguis'd to act a Physician.

Sir Cred. How! a Physician! that I can easily do, for I understand Simples.

Lod. That's not material, so you can but banter well, be very grave, and put on a starch'd Countenance.

Sir Cred. Banter! what's that, Man?

Lod. Why, Sir, talking very much, and meaning just nothing; be full of Words without any connection, sense or conclusion. Come in with me, and I'll instruct you farther.

Sir Cred. Pshaw, is that all? say no more on't, I'll do't, let me alone for Bantering.—But this same damn'd Rival——

Lod. He's now watching for you without, and means to souse upon you; but trust to me for your security; come away, I have your Habit ready. (*Goes out.*)——
This day shall make thee mine, dear *Isabella*.——

[*Exit Lodwick and Wittmore.*

Enter Sir Patient, Leander, and Roger.

Sir Pat. Marry *Lucretia!* is there no Woman in the City fit for you, but the Daughter of the most notorious fantastical Lady within the Wall?

Lean. Yet that fantastical Lady you thought fit for a Wife for me, Sir.

Sir Pat. Yes, Sir, Foppery with Money had been something; but a poor Fop, hang't 'tis abominable.

Lean. Pray hear me, Sir.

Sir Pat. Sirrah, Sirrah, you're a Jackanapes, ingeniously you are Sir: marry *Lucretia*, quoth he!

Lean. If it were so, Sir, where's her fault?

Sir Pat. Why, Mr. Coxcomb, all over. Did I with so much care endeavour to marry thee to the Mother, only to give thee opportunity with *Lucretia*?

Enter Lady Knowell.

Lean. This Anger shews your great Concern for me.

Sir Pat. For my Name I am, but 'twere no matter if thou wert hang'd, and thou deservest it for thy leud cavaliering Opinion.—They say thou art a Papist too, or at least a Church-of-England Man, I profess there's not a Pia to chuse.—Marry *Lucretia!*

L. Kno. Were I querimonious, I shou'd resent the Af-
front this *Balatroon* has offer'd me.

Isab. Dear Madam, for my sake do not anger him
now. [Aside to her.]

L. Kno. Upon my Honour you are very free with my
Daughter, Sir.

Sir Pat. How ! she here ! now for a Peal from her eter-
nal Clapper ; I had rather be confin'd to an Iron-mill.

L. Kno. Sure *Lucretia* merits a Husband of as much
worth as your Nephew, Sir.

Sir Pat. A better, Madam, for he's the leudest Hector
in the Town ; he has all the Vices of Youth, Whoring,
Swearing, Drinking, Damning, Fighting,—and a thousand
more, numberless and nameless.

L. Kno. Time, Sir, may make him more abstemious.

Sir Pat. Oh never, Madam ! 'tis in's Nature, he was
born with it, he's given over to Reprobation, 'tis bred
i'th' bone,—he's lost.

Lean. This is the first good Office that ever he did me.

L. Kno. What think you, Sir, if in defiance of your
Inurbanity, I take him with all these Faults my self ?

Sir Pat. How, Madam !

L. Kno. Without more Ambages, Sir, I have consider'd
your former Desires, and have consented to marry him,
notwithstanding your Exprobrations.

Sir Pat. May I believe this, Madam ? and has your La-
dyship that Goodness ?—and hast thou, my Boy, so much
Wit ? Why this is something now.—Well, he was ever
the best and sweetest-natur'd Youth.—Why, what a no-
table Wag's this ? and is it true, my Boy, hah ?

Lean. Yes, Sir, I had told you so before, had you
permitted me to speak.

Sir Pat. Well, Madam, he is only fit for your excel-
lent Ladyship, he is the prettiest civillest Lad.—Well,
go thy ways ; I shall never see the like of thee ; no—
Ingenuously the Boy's made for ever ; two thousand
Pounds a Year, besides Money, Plate and Jewels ; made
for ever.—Well, Madam, the satisfaction I take in this
Alliance, has made me resolve to give him imme-
diately my Writings of all my Land in *Berkshire*, five
hun-

84 SIR PATIENT FANCY.

hundred Pounds a year, Madam: and I won'd have you married this Morning with my Daughter, so one Dinner and one Rejoicing will serve both.

L. Kno. That, Sir, we have already agreed upon.

Sir Pat. Well, I'll fetch the Writings. Come, *Isabella*, I'll not trust you out of my sight to day.

Ex. Sir Pat. and Isab.

Lean. Well then, Madam, you are resolv'd upon this business of Matrimony.

L. Kno. Was it not concluded between us, Sir, this Morning? and at the near approach do you begin to fear?

Lean. Nothing Madam, since I'm convinc'd of your Goodness.

L. Kno. You flatter, Sir, this is mere Adulation.

Lean. No, I am that wild Extravagant my Uncle render'd me, and cannot live confin'd.

L. Kno. To one Woman you mean? I shall not stand with you for a Mistress or two; I hate a dull morose unfashionable Blockhead to my Husband; nor shall I be the first example of a suffering Wife, Sir. Women were created poor obedient things.

Lean. And can you be content to spare me five or six nights in a week?

L. Kno. Oh you're too reasonable.

Lean. And for the rest, if I get drunk, perhaps I'll give to you: yet in my drink I'm damn'd ill-natur'd too, and may neglect my Duty; perhaps shall be so wicked, so call you cunning, deceitful, jilting, base, and swear you have undone me, swear you have ravish'd from my faithful Heart all that cou'd make it bless'd or happy.

Enter Lucretia weeping.

L. Kno. How now, *Lucretia*?

Lucr. Oh Madam, give me leave to kneel before, and tell you, if you pursue the Cruelty I hear you're going to commit, I am the most lost, most wretched Maid that breathes; we two have plighted Faiths, and shou'd you marry him, 'twere so to sin as Heaven would never pardon.

L. Kno. Rise, Fool.

Lucr.

Lucr. Never till you have given me back *Leander*, or leave to live no more.—Pray kill me, Madam; and the same Flowers that deck your nuptial Bed, Shall serve to strow my Herse, when I shall lie A dead cold Witness of your Tyranny.

L. Kno. Rise; I still design'd him yours.—I saw with pleasure, Sir, your reclamation from my Addresses.—I have prov'd both your Passions, and 'twere unkind not to crown 'em with the due Premium of each others Merits.

[Gives her to *Lean.*

Lean. Can Heaven and you agree to be so bountiful?

L. Kno. Be not amaz'd at this turn, *Rotat omne facum.*—But no more,——keep still that mask of Love we first put on, till you have gain'd the Writings: for I have no Joy beyond cheating that filthy Uncle of thine.

Lucretia, wipe your Eyes, and prepare for *Hymen*, the Hour draws near. *Thalesio, Thalesio*, as the Romans cry'd.

Lucr. May you still be admir'd as you deserve!

Enter Sir Patient with Writings, and Isabella,

Sir Pat. How Madam *Lucretia*, and in Tears?

L. Kno. A little disgusted, Sir, with her Father-in-law, Sir.

Sir Pat. Oh is that all? hold up thy Head, Sweet-heart, thy turn's next.—Here, Madam, I surrender my Title, with these Writings, and with 'em my Joy, my Life, my Darling, my *Leander*.——Now let's away, where's Mr. *Fainlove*?

Isab. He's but stept into *Cheapside*, to fit the Ring, Sir, and I will be here immediately.

Sir Pat. I have Business anon about eleven of the Clock, a Consultation of Physicians, to confer about this Carcase of mine.

Lean. Physicians, Sir, what to do?

Sir Pat. To do! why to take their advice, Sir, and to follow it.

Lean. For what, I beseech you, Sir?

Sir Pat. Why, Sir, for my Health.

Lean. I believe you are not sick, Sir, unless they make you so.

Sir Pat. They make me so!—Do you hear him, Madam.—Am not I sick, Sir? not I, *Sir Patient Fancy*, sick?

L. Kno. He'll destroy my Design.—How, *Mr. Fancy*, not *Sir Patient* sick? or must he be incinerated before you'll credit it?

Sir Pat. Ay, Madam, I want but dying to undeceive him, and yet I am not sick!

Lean. Sir I love your Life, and wou'd not have you die with *Fancy* and *Conceit*.—

Sir Pat. *Fancy* and *Conceit*! do but observe him, Madam,—what do you mean, Sir, by *Fancy* and *Conceit*?

L. Kno. He'll ruin all;—why, Sir,—he means—

Sir Pat. Nay, let him alone, let him alone, (with your Ladyship's pardon)—Come, Sir,—*Fancy* and *Conceit*, I take it, was the Question in debate.——

Lean. I cannot prove this to you, Sir, by force of Argument, but by Demonstration I will, if you will banish all your cozening Quacks, and take my wholesome Advice.

Sir Pat. Do but hear him, Madam: not prove it!

L. Kno. Sir, he means nothing.—Not sick! alas, Sir, you're very sick.

Sir Pat. Ay, ay, your Ladyship is a Lady of profound Knowledge.—Why, have I not had the advice of all the Doctors in *England*, and have I not been in continual Physick this twenty Years:—and yet I am not sick! Ask my dear Lady, Sir, how sick I am, she can inform you. [*L. Kno. goes and talks to Isab.*]

Lean. She does her endeavour, Sir, to keep up the Humour.

Sir Pat. How, Sir?

Lean. She wishes you dead, Sir.

Sir Pat. What said the Rascal? wishes me dead!

Lean. Sir, she hates you.

Sir Pat. How! hate me! what my Lady hate me?

Lean. She abuses your Love, plays tricks with ye, and cheats ye, Sir.

Sir Pat. Was ever so profane a Wretch! What, you will not prove this neither?

Lean.

Lean. Yes, by demonstration too.

Sir Pat. Why thou saucy Varlet, Sirrah, Sirrah, thank my Lady here I do not cudgel thee.—Well, I will settle the rest of my Estate upon her to morrow, I will, Sir; and thank God you have what you have, Sir, make much on't.

Lean. Pardon me, Sir, 'tis not my single Opinion, but the whole City takes notice on't: that I tell it you, Sir, is the effect of my Duty, not Interest. Pray give me leave to prove this to you, Sir.

Sir Pat. What, you are at your Demonstration again?—come—let's hear.

Lean. Why, Sir, give her frequent opportunities,——and then surprize her;—or, by pretending to settle all upon her,—give her your Power, and see if she do not turn you out of Doors;——or——by feigning you are sick to death——or indeed by dying.

Sir Pat. I thank you, Sir,—this indeed is Demonstration, I take it. [Pulls off his Hat,

Lean. I mean but feigning, Sir; and be a witness your self of her Sorrow, or Contempt.

Sir Pat. *pauses*] Hah—hum,—why ingenuously this may be a very pretty Project.—Well, Sir, suppose I follow your advice?—nay, I profess I will do so, not to try her Faith, but to have the pleasure to hear her conjugal Lamentations, feel her Tears bedew my Face, and her sweet Mouth kissing my Cheeks a thousand times; verily a wonderful Comfort.—And then, Sir, what becomes of your Demonstration.——

Enter Wittmore with the Ring.

Oh——Mr. Fainlove, come, come, you're tardy, let's away to Church.

Enter Roger.

Rog. Sir, here is Doctor *Turboon*, and those other Doctors your Worship expected.

Enter Lady Fancy.

Sir Pat. The Doctors already!——well bring 'em up; come, Madam, we have waited for your Ladyship,——bring up the Doctors, *Roger*.

L. Fan. Wittmore, I have now brought that design to happy Conclusions, for which I married this formal Ass; I'll tell thee more anon, — we are observ'd.

L. Kno. Oh Lodwick's come!

Enter Lodwick, Monsieur Turboon, Fat Doctor, Amsterdam, Leyden, Sir Credulous.

Sir Pat. Doctor Turboon, your Servant, I expected you not this two hours.

Turb. Nor had ee com Sir, but for dese wordy Gentlemen, whos Affairs wode not permit dem to come at your hour.

Sir Pat. Are they English pray?

Turb. Dis is, Sir, — (pointing to Lod.) an admirable Physician, and a rare Astrologer. — Dis speaks good English, bot a Colender born. [Points to Sir Cred.

Sir Cred. What a pox, does the Fellow call me a Culender?

Lod. He means a High-Dutch-man of the Town of Colen, Sir.

Sir Pat. Sir, I have heard of your Fame. — Doctor, pray entertain these Gentlemen till my return, I'll be with you presently.

Lod. Sir, I hope you go not forth to day.

[Gazing on his Face.

Sir Pat. Not far, Sir.

Lod. There is a certain Star has rul'd this two days, Sir, of a very malignant Influence to Persons of your Complexion and Constitution. — Let me see — within this two hours and six minutes, its Malice will be spent, till then it will be fatal.

Sir Pat. Hum, reign'd this two Days? — I profess and things have gone very cross with me this two Days, — a notable Man this.

L. Kno. Oh, a very profound Astrologer, Sir, upon my Honour I know him.

Sir Pat. But this is an Affair of that Importance, Sir, —

Lod. If it be more than Health or Life, I beg your pardon, Sir.

Sir Pat. Nay, no Offence, Sir, I beseech you, I'll stay, Sir.

L. Kno.

L. Kno. How! Sir *Patient* not see us married?

Sir Pat. You shall excuse me, Madam.

L. Fan. This was lucky; Oh Madam, wou'd you have my Dear venture out, when a malignant Star reigns! not for the World.

Sir Pat. No, I'll not stir; had it been any Star but a malignant Star, I had waited on your Ladyship: but these malignant Stars are very pernicious Stars. Nephew, take my Lady *Knowell*, Mr. *Fainlove* my Daughter; and *Bartholomew* do you conduct my Lady, the Parson stays for you, and the Coaches are at the Door.

[*Exeunt L. Kno. Lean. Wit. and Isab.*]

L. Fancy and Bartholomew.

Enter Boy.

Boy. Sir, my Lady has sent for you.

Lord. Sir, I'll be with you presently; Sir *Credulous*, be sure you lug him by the Ears with any sort of Stuff till my return. I'll send you a Friend to keep you in countenance.

Sir Pat. Please you to sit, Gentlemen?

Amst. Please you, Sir. [To Sir *Cred.* who bows and runs back.]

Sir Cred. Oh Lord, sweet Sir, I hope you do not take me—Nay, I beseech you, Noble Sir—Reverend Sir. [Turning from one to t'other.]

Leyd. By no means, Sir, a Stranger.

Sir Cred. I beseech you—*Scavantissimi Doctores*,—incomparable Sir,—and you—or you.

Fat D. In troth, Sir, these Compliments are needless, I am something corpulent, and love my ease. [Sits.]

Sir Cred. Generous Sir, you say well; therefore *Convincencia*, as the *Grecians* have it. [Sits.]

Amst. — Brother.—

Leyd. Nay, good Brother,—Sir *Patient*—

Sir Pat. Ingenuously, not before you, Mr. Doctor.

Leyd. Excuse me, Sir, an Alderman, and a Knight.—

Sir Pat. Both below the least of the learned Society.

Leyd. Since you will have it so. [All sit and cry *humm*,—and look gravely.]

Sir Cred. Hum— hum, most Worthy, and most Re-
 nowned—*Medicina Professore, qui hic assemblati estis, &*
vos altra Mesioris; I am now going to make a Motion
 for the publick Good of us all, but will do nothing with-
 out your Doctorships Approbation.

Sir Pat. Judiciously concluded.

Sir Cred. The question then is, *Reverentissimi Doctores*,
 whether—for mark me, I come to the matter in hand,
 hating long Circumstances of Words; there being no ne-
 cessity, as our learned Brother *Rabelais* observes in that
 most notorious Treatise of his call'd *Garagantua*; there
 is, says he, no necessity of going over the Hedge when
 the Path lies fair before ye: therefore, as I said before,
 I now say again, coming to my Question; for as that
 admirable *Welch* Divine says, in that so famous Sermon
 of his, upon her Creat Grandfather *Hadam* and her Creat
 Granmother *Heeve* concerning the *Happell*,—and her will
 warrant her, her will keep her to her Text still,—so I
 stick close to my question, which is, *Illustrissimi Doctores*,
 whether it be not necessary to the Affair in hand—to
 take—a Bottle; and if your Doctorships are of my opi-
 nion—hold up your Thumbs. [*All hold up their Thumbs.*
 —Look Sir, you observe the Votes of the learned *Caba-*
lists.

Sir Pat. Which shall be put in Act forthwith—I
 like this Man well, he does nothing without mature De-
 liberation.

Enter Brunswick.

Brun. By your leaves Gentlemen,—Sir Credulous—

[*Whispers.*

Sir Cred. Oh—'tis *Lodwick's* Friend, the Rascal's dress'd
 like *Vanderbergen* in the *Strand*:—Sir Patient, pray
 know this glorious Doctor, Sir.

Sir Pat. A Doctor, Sir?

Sir Cred. A Doctor, Sir! yes, and as eloquent a Doctor,
 Sir, as ever set Bill to Post: why 'tis—the incompa-
 rable—*Brunswick, High-Dutch* Doctor.

Sir Pat. You're welcome, Sir,—Pray sit, ah.—Well,
 Sir, you are come to visit a very crazy sickly Person, Sir.

Brun.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 91

Brun. Pray let me feel your Pulse, Sir;—what think you Gentlemen, is he not very far gone?—

[Feels his Pulse, they all feel.]

Sir Cred. Ah, far, far.— Pray, Sir, have you not a certain wambling Pain in your Stomach, Sir, as it were, Sir, a—a pain, Sir.

Sir Pat. Oh very great, Sir, especially in a Morning fasting.

Sir Cred. I knew it by your stinking Breath, Sir—and are you not troubled with a Pain in your Head, Sir?

Sir Pat. In my Head, Sir?

Sir Cred. I mean a—kind of a—Pain,—a kind of a *Vertigo*, as the *Latins* call it; and a *Whirligigoustican*, as the *Greeks* have it, which signifies in *English*, Sir, a Dizzie-swimming kind—of a do ye see—a thing—that—a—you understand me.

Sir Pat. Oh intolerable, intolerable!—why this is a rare Man!

Fat D. Your Reason, Sir, for that? [To *Sir Cred.*]

Sir Cred. My Reason, Sir? why, my Reason, Sir, is this, *Haly the Moore*, and *Rabbi Isaac*, and some thousands more of learned *Dutchmen*, observe your dull Wall Eye and your Whir—Whirligigoustiphon, to be inseparable.

Brun. A most learned Reason!

Fat D. Oh, Sir, inseparable.

Sir Cred. And have you not a kind of a—something—do ye mark me, when you make Water, a kind of a stopping—and—a—do ye conceive me, I have forgot the *English* Term, Sir, but in *Latin* 'tis a *Stronggullionibus*.

Sir Pat. Oh, Sir, most extremely, 'tis that which makes me desperate, Sir.

Sir Cred. Your ugly Face is an infallible sign; your *Dysurie*, as the *Arabicks* call it, and your ill-favour'd Countenance, are constant Relatives.

All. Constant, constant.

Sir Cred. Pray how do you eat, Sir?

Sir Pat. Ah, Sir, there's my distraction. Alas, Sir, I have the weakest Stomach—I do not make above four Meals

Meals a-day, and then indeed I eat heartily—but alas, what's that to eating to live?—nothing, Sir, nothing.

Sir Cred. Poor Heart, I pity him.

Sir Pat. And between Meals, good Wine, Sweet-meats, Caudles,——— Cordials and Mirabilises, to keep up my fainting Spirits.

Sir Cred. A Pox of his Aldermanship: an the whole Bench were such notable Swingers, 'twould furnish the City sooner than a Siege.

Amst. Brothers, what do you think of this Man?

Leyd. Think, Sir? I think his Case is desperate.

Sir Cred. Shaw, Sir, we shall soon rectify the quiblets and quillities of his Blood, if he observes our Directions and Diet, which is to eat but once in four or five days.

Sir Pat. How, Sir, eat but once in four or five days? such a Diet, Sir, would kill me; alas, Sir, kill me.

Sir Cred. Oh no, Sir, no; for look ye Sir, the Case is thus, do you mind me—so that the Business lying so obvious, do ye see, there is a certain Method, do ye mark me—in a—Now, Sir, when a Man goes about to alter the course of Nature,—the case is very plain, you may as well arrest the Chariot of the Sun, or alter the Eclipses of the Moon; for, Sir, this being of another Nature, the Nature of it is to be unnatural, you conceive me, Sir?—therefore we must crave your absence, Sir, for a few Minutes, till we have debated this great Affair.

Sir Pat. With all my heart, Sir, since my Case is so desperate, a few hours were not too much. [*Ex. Sir Pat.*]

Sir Cred. Now, Sir, my service to you. [*Drinks.*]

Enter Fanny.

Fan. Oh living heart! what do all these Men do in our House? sure they are a sort of new-fashion'd Conventiclers;——I'll hear 'em preach.

[*They drink round the while.*]

Amst. Sir, my service to you, and to your good Lady, Sir.

Leyd. Again to you, Sir, not forgetting your Daughters: they are fine Women, Sir, let Scandal do its worst.

[*Drinks.*]

Turb. To our better trading, Sir.

Brun.

SIR PATIENT FANCY.

93

Brun. Faith it goes but baldly on, I had the weekly Bill, and 'twas a very thin Mortality; some of the better sort die indeed, that have good round Fees to give.

Turb. Verily, I have not kill'd above my five or six this Week.

Brun. How, Sir, kill'd?

Turb. Kill'd, Sir! ever whilst you live, especially those who have the grand *Varole*; for 'tis not for a Man's Credit to let the Patient want an Eye or a Nose, or some other thing. I have kill'd ye my five or six dozen a Week——but times are hard.

Brun. I grant ye, Sir, your Poor for Experiments and Improvement of Knowledge: and to say truth, there ought to be such Scavengers as we to sweep away the Rubbish of the Nation.

[*Sir Cred. and Fat seeming in Discourse.*]

Sir Cred. Nay, and you talk of a Beast, my service to you, Sir——(*Drinks.*) Ay, I lost the finest Beast of a Mare in all *Devonshire*.

Fat D. And I the finest Spaniel, Sir.

[*Here they all talk together till you come to——purpose, Sir,*]

Turb. Pray what News is there stirring?

Bran. Faith, Sir, I am one of those Fools that never regard whether *Lewis* or *Philip* have the better or the worst.

Turb. Peace is a great Blessing, Sir, a very great Blessing.

Brun. You are i'th' right, Sir, and so my service to you, Sir.

Leyd. Well, Sir, *Stetin* held out nobly, tho the Gazettes are various.

Amst. There's a world of Men kill'd they say; why, what a shame 'tis so many thousands should die without the help of a Physician.

Leyd. Hang 'em, they were poor Rogues, and not worth our killing; my service to you, Sir, they'll serve to fill up Trenches.

Sir Cred. Spaniel, Sir! no Man breathing understands Dogs and Horses better than my self.

Fat

94 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Fat D. Your pardon for that, Sir.

Sir Cred. For look ye, Sir, I'll tell you the Nature of Dogs and Horses.

Fat D. So can my Groom and Dog-keeper; but what's this to th' purpose, Sir? *[Here they leave off.]*

Sir Cred. To th' purpose, Sir! good Mr. *Hedleburgh*, do you understand what's to th' purpose? you're a Dutch Butter-ferkin, a Kilderkin, a Double Jug.

Fat D. You're an ignorant Blockhead, Sir.

Sir Cred. You lye, Sir, and there I was with you again.

Amst. What, quarrelling, Men of your Gravity and Profession!

Sir Cred. That is to say, Fools and Knaves: pray, how long is't since you left Topping and Napping, for Quacking, good Brother Cater-tray.—but let that pass, for I'll have my Humour, and therefore will quarrel with no Man, and so I drink.—— *[Goes to fill again.]*

Brun. —But, what's all this to the Patient, Gentlemen?

Sir Cred. Ay,—the Wine's all out,—and Quarrels apart, Gentlemen, as you say, what do you think of our Patient? for something I conceive necessary to be said for our Fees.

Fat D. I think that unless he follows our Prescriptions he's a dead Man.

Sir Cred. Ay, Sir, a dead Man.

Fat D. Please you to write, Sir, you seem the youngest Doctor. *[To Amst.]*

Amst. Your Pardon, Sir, I conceive there may be younger Doctors than I at the Board.

Sir Cred. A fine Punctilio this, when a Man lies a dying *[Aside.]* —Sir you shall excuse me, I have been a Doctor this 7 Years.

[They shove the Pen and Paper from one to the other.]

Amst. I commenc'd at *Paris* twenty Years ago.

Leyd. And I at *Leyden*, almost as long since.

Fat D. And I at *Barcelona* thirty.

Sir Cred. And I at *Padua*, Sir.

Fat D. You at *Padua*?

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 95

Sir Cred. Yes, Sir, I at *Padua*; why what a pox do ye think I never was beyond Sea?

Brun. However, Sir, you are the youngest Doctor, and must write.

Sir Cred. I will not lose an Inch of my Dignity.

Fat D. Nor I.

Amst. Nor I.

Leyd. Nor I. [Put the Paper from each other's

Brun. Death, what Rascals are these?

Sir Cred. Give me the Pen——here's ado about your *Paduas* and *Punctilioes*. [Sets himself to write.

Amst. Every morning a Dose of my Pills *Merda que-ruusticon*, or the *Amicable Pill*.

Sir Cred. Fasting?

Leyd. Every Hour sixscore drops of *Adminicula Vitæ*.

Sir Cred. Fasting too? [Sir Cred. writes still.

Fat D. At Night twelve Cordial Pills, *Gallimofriticus*.

Turb. Let Blood once a Week, a Glister once a day.

Brun. Cry Mercy, Sir, you're a *French Man*.——
After his first Sleep, threescore restorative Pills call'd *Cheatus Redivivus*.

Sir Cred. ——And lastly, fifteen Spoonfuls of my *Aqua Tetrachymagogon*, as often as 'tis necessary; little or no Breakfast, less Dinner, and go supperless to Bed.

Fat D. Hum, your *Aqua Tetrachymagogon*?

Sir Cred. Yes, Sir, my *Tetrachymagogon*; for look ye do ye see Sir, I cur'd the Arch-Duke of *Strumbulo* of a *Gondileero*, of which he dy'd, with this very *Aqua Tetrachymagogon*.

Enter Sir Patient.

Sir Pat. Well, Gentlemen, am I not an intruder?

Fat D. Sir, we have duly consider'd the state of your Body; and are now about the Order and Method you are to observe.

Brun. Ay, this Distemper will be the occasion of his Death.

Sir Cred. Hold, Brothers, I do not say the occasion of his Death; but the occasional Cause of his Death.

[Sir Pat. reads the Bill.

Sir Pat. Why, here's no time allow'd for eating, Gentlemen.

Amst. Sir, we'll justify this Prescription to the whole College.

Loyd. If he will not follow it, let him die.

All. Ay, let him die.

Enter Lodwick and Leander.

Lod. What have you consulted without me, Gentlemen?

[*Lod. reads the Bill.*]

Sir Pat. Yes, Sir, and find it absolutely necessary for my Health, Sir, I shou'd be starv'd: and yet you say I am not sick, Sir.

[*To Lean.*]

Lod. Very well, very well.

Sir Pat. No Breakfast, no Dinner, no Supper?

Sir Cred. Little or none, but none's best.

Sir Pat. But Gentlemen consider, no small thing?

All. Nothing, nothing.

Sir Cred. Sir, you must write for your Fee.

[*To Lod,*]

Lod. Now I think on't, Sir, you may eat a roasted Pippin cold upon a Vine-leaf, at night.

[*Writes.*]

Lean. Do you see, Sir, what damn'd canting Rascals these Doctors are?

Sir Pat. Ay, ay, if all Doctors were such, ingenuously I shou'd soon be weary of Physick.

Lean. Give 'em their Fees, Sir, and send 'em to the Devil for a company of Cheats.

Sir Pat. Truth is, there is no faith in 'em, ——— well, I thank you for your Care and Pains.

[*Gives 'em Fees.*]

Sir Cred. Sir, if you have any occasion for me, I live at the red-colour'd Lanthorn, with eleven Candles in't, in the Strand; where you may come in privately, and need not be ashamed, I having no Creature in my House but my self, and my whole Family. ———

[*Exeunt.*]

*Ik quam Van Nedor Landt te spreken
End helpen Van Pocken end ander gebreken.*

That's a top of my Bill, sweet, Sir.

Fan. Lord, Sir Father, why do you give 'em Money?

Lean.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 97

Lean. For talking Nonsense this Hour or two upon his Distemper.

Fan. Oh lemini, Sir, they did not talk one word of you, but of Dogs and Horses, and of killing Folks, and of their Wives and Daughters; and when the Wine was all out, they said they wou'd say something for their Fees.

Sir Pat. Say you so? ——— Knaves, Rogues, Cheats, Murderers! I'll be reveng'd on 'em all,—I'll ne'er be sick again,—or if I be, I'll die honestly of my self without the assistance of such Rascals—go, get you gone.—

[To *Fan.* who goes out.]

Lean. A happy resolution! wou'd you wou'd be so kind to your self as to make a trial of your Lady too; and if she prove true, 'twill make some kind of amends for your so long being cozen'd this way.

Sir Pat. I'll about it, this very minute about it,—give me a Chair. ———

[He sits.]

Lean. So, settle your self well, disorder your Hair, — throw away your Cane, Hat and Gloves, —stare, and rowl your Eyes, squeeze your Face into Convulsions, —clutch your Hands, make your Stomach heave, so, very well,—now let me alone for the rest—Oh, help, help my Lady, my Aunt, for Heavens sake help,—come all and see him die.

[Weeps.]

Enter Wittmore, Lady Fancy, Isabella, Lucretia, Lady Knowell and Roger.

Wit. Leander, what's the matter?

Lean. See, Madam, see my Uncle in the Agonies of Death.

L. Fan. My dearest Husband dying, Oh!

[Weeps.]

Lean. How hard he struggles with departing Life!

Isab. Father, dear Father, must I in one day receive a Blessing with so great a Curse? Oh,—he's just going, Madam. ———

[Weeps.]

L. Fan. Let me o'ertake him in the Shades below, why do you hold me, can I live without him?—do I dissemble well? ———

[Aside to *Wit.*

Sir Pat. Not live without me! ———do you hear that Sirrah?

[Aside to *Lean.*

Lean. Pray mark the end on't, Sir,—feign,—feign.—

L. Kno. We left him well, how came he thus o'th' sudden?

Lean. I fear 'tis an Apoplexy, Madam.

L. Fan. Run, run for his Physician; but do not stir a foot. *[Aside to Roger.*

Look up, and speak but one kind word to me.

Sir Pat. What crys are these that stop me on my way?

L. Fan. They're mine,——your Lady's —— oh surely he'll recover. *[Aside.*

Your most obedient Wife's.

Sir Pat. My Wife's, my Heir, my sole Executrix.

L. Fan. Hah, is he in's Senses? *[Aside to Wit.*

Oh my dear Love, my Life, my Joy, my All, *[Crys.*

Oh, let me go; I will not live without him.

[Seems to faint in Wittmore's Arms. All run about her.

Sir Pat. Do ye hear that, Sirrah?

Lean. Have yet a little Patience, die away,—very well—Oh he's gone,—quite gone. *[L. Fan. swoons.*

L. Kno. Look to my Lady there, *[Swoons again.*

——Sure she can but counterfeit. *[Aside.*

[They all go about her.

Sir Pat. Hah, my Lady dying!

Lean. Sir, I beseech you wait the event. Death! the cunning Devil will dissemble too long and spoil all,—— here——carry the dead Corps of my dearest Uncle to his Chamber. Nurse, to your Care I commit him now.

[Exeunt with Sir Pat. in a Chair.

[All follow but Wittmore; who going the other way, meets Sir Credulous and Lodwick, as before.

Wit. Lodwick! the strangest unexpected News, Sir Patient's dead!

Sir Cred. How, dead! we have play'd the Physicians to good purpose i' faith, and kill'd the Man before we administer'd our Physick.

Wit. Egad I fear so indeed.

Lod. Dead!

Wit.

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 99

Wit. As a Herring, and 'twill be dangerous to keep these habits longer.

Sir Cred. Dangerous! Zoz Man we shall all be hang'd, why our very Bill dispatch'd him, and our Hands are to't, — Oh, I'll confess all. — [Offers to go.

Lod. Death, Sir, I'll cut your Throat if you stir.

Sir Cred. Wou'd you have me hang'd for Company, Gentlemen? Oh where shall I hide my self, or how come at my Clothes?

Lod. We have no time for that; go get you into your Basket again, and lie snug, till I have convey'd you safe away, — or I'll abandon you. — [Aside to him. Tis not necessary he shou'd be seen yet, he may spoil Leander's Plot. [Aside.

Sir Cred. Oh thank ye, dear *Lodwick*, — let me escape this bout, and if ever the Fool turn Physician again, may he be choak'd with his own *Tetrachymagogon*.

Wit. Go, haste and undress you, whilst I'll to *Lucia*.

[Exit *Lod*.

As *Wittmore* is going out at one Door, enter *Sir Patient* and *Leander* at the other Door.

Lean. Hah, *Wittmore* there! he must not see my Uncle yet. [Puts *Sir Pat.* back. Exit *Wit*.

Sir Pat. Nay, Sir, never detain me, I'll to my Lady, is this your Demonstration? — Was ever so virtuous a Lady — Well, I'll to her, and console her poor Heart; ah the Joy 'twill bring her to see my Resurrection! — I long to surprize her. [Going off cross the Stage.

Lean. Hold, Sir, I think she's coming, — blest sight, and with her *Wittmore*!

[Puts *Sir Pat.* back to the Door.

Enter *Lady Fancy* and *Wittmore*.

Sir Pat. Hah, what's this?

L. Fan. Now, my dear *Wittmore*, claim thy Rites of Love without controul, without the contradiction of wretched Poverty or Jealousy: Now undisguis'd thou mayst approach my Bed, and reign o'er all my Pleasures and my Fortunes, of which this Minute I create thee Lord,

And thus begin my Homage. —

[Kisses him.

100 Sir PATIENT FANCY.

Sir Pat. Sure 'tis some Fiend! this cannot be my Lady.

Lean. 'Tis something uncivil before your face, Sir, to do this.

Wit. Thou wondrous kind, and wondrous beautiful; that Power that made thee with so many Charms, gave me a Soul fit only to adore 'em; nor wert thou destin'd to another's Arms, but to be render'd still more fit for mine.

Sir Pat. Ha! is not that *Fain-love*, *Isabella's* Husband? Oh Villain! Villain! I will renounce my Sense and my Religion. [Aside.]

L. Fan. Another's Arms! Oh call not those hated Thoughts to my remembrance, Lest it destroy that kindly Heat within me, Which thou canst only raise and still maintain.

Sir Pat. Oh Woman! Woman! damn'd dissembling Woman. [Aside.]

L. Fan. Come, let me lead thee to that Mass of Gold he gave me to be despis'd; And which I render thee, my lovely Conqueror, As the first Tribute of my glorious Servitude. Draw in the Basket which I told you of, and is amongst the Rubbish in the Hall, [Exit Wittmore.] That which the Slave so many Years was toiling for, I in one moment barter for a Kiss, as Earnest of our future Joys.

Sir Pat. Was ever so prodigal a Harlot? was this the Saint? was this the most tender Comfort that ever Man had?

Lean. No, in good faith, Sir.

Enter Wittmore, pulling in the Basket.

L. Fan. This is it, with a direction on't to thee, whither I design'd to send it.

Wit. Good morrow to the Day, and next the Gold; open the Shrine, that I may see my Saint——Hail the World's Soul.— [Opens the Basket, Sir Cred. starts up.]

L. Fan. Oh Heavens! what thing art thou?

Sir Cred. O Pardon, Pardon, sweet Lady, I confess I had a hand in't.

L. Fan. In what, thou Slave?——

Sir

SIR PATIENT FANCY. 101

Sir Cred. Killing the good believing Alderman;—
but 'twas against my Will.

L. Fan. Then I'm not so much oblig'd to thee,——
but where's the Money, the 8000 *l.* the Plate and Jewels,
Sirrah ?

Witt. Death, the Dog has eat it.

Sir Cred. Eat it! Oh Lord, eat 8000 *l.* Wou'd I might
never come out of the Basket alive, if ever I made such
a Meal in my Life.

Wit. Ye Dog, you have eat it; and I'll make ye swal-
low all the Doses you writ in your Bill, but I'll have it
upward or downward. [*Aside.*]

Sir Pat. Hah, one of the Rogues my Doctors.

Sir Cred. Oh, dear Sir, hang me out of the way ra-
ther.

Enter Maundy.

Maun. Madam, I have sent away the Basket to Mr.
Wittmore's Lodgings.

L. Fan. You might have sav'd your self that Labour, I
now having no more to do, but to bury the stinking
Corps of my quandom Cuckold, dismiss his Daughters,
and give thee quiet possession of all. [*To Witt.*]

Sir Pat. Fair Lady, you'll take me along with you ?

[*Snaps, pulls-off his Hat, and comes up to her.*]

L. Fan. My Husband!——I'm betray'd——

Sir Pat. Husband! I defy thee, Satan, thou greater
Whore than she of *Babylon*; thou Shame, thou Abomi-
nation to thy Sex.

L. Fan. Rail on, whilst I dispose my self to laugh at
thee.

Sir Pat. *Leander*, call all the House in to be a Witness
of our Divorce. [*Exit Lean.*]

L. Fan. Do, and all the World, and let 'em know the
Reason.

Sir Pat. Methinks I find an Inclination to swear,——
to curse my self and thee, that I cou'd no better discern
thee; nay, I'm so chang'd from what I was, that I think
I cou'd even approve of Monarchy and Church-Discipline,
I'm so truly convinc'd I have been a Beast and an Ass all
my Life.

102 **SIR PATIENT FANCY.**

Enter Lady Knowell, Isabella, Lucretia, Leander, Lodwick, Fanny, &c.

L. Kno. Hah, *Sir Patient* not dead?

Sir Pat. Ladies and Gentlemen, take notice that I am a Cuckold, a crop-ear'd snivelling Cuckold.

Sir Cred. A Cuckold! sweet Sir, shaw, that's a small matter in a Man of your Quality.

Sir Pat. And I beg your pardon, Madam, for being angry that you call'd me so. [*To L. Kno.*] And yours, dear *Isabella*, for desiring you to marry my good Friend there [*points to Witt.*] whose name I perceive I was mistaken in:—and yours, *Leander*, that I wou'd not take your Advice long since: and yours, fair Lady, for believing you honest,——'twas done like a credulous Coxcomb;—and yours, Sir, for taking any of your Tribe for wife, learned or honest. [*To Sir Credulous.*]

Wit. Faith, Sir, I deceiv'd ye only to serve my Friend; and Sir, your Daughter is married to Mr. *Knowell*: your Wife had all my stock of Love before, Sir.

[*Lod. and Isab. kneel.*]

Sir Pat. Why God-a-mercy——some comfort that,——God blefs ye.——I shall love Disobedience while I live for't.

Lod. I am glad on't, Sir, for then I hope you will forgive *Leander*, who has married my Sister, and not my Mother.

Sir Pat. How! has he serv'd me so?——I'll make him my Heir for't, thou hast made a Man of me, my Boy, and faith we will be merry.——Fair Lady, you may depart in peace, fair Lady, restoring my Money, my Plate, my Jewels and my Writings, fair Lady.——

L. Fan. You gave me no Money, Sir, prove it if you can; and for your Land, 'twas not settled with this Proviso, if she be honest?

Sir Pat. 'Tis well thou dost confests I am a Cuckold, for I wou'd have it known, fair Lady.

L. Fan. 'Twas to that end I married you, good Alderman.

Sir Pat. I'faith I think thou didst, Sweet-heart, i'faith I think thou didst.

Wit.

Wit. Right, Sir, we have long been Lovers, but want of Fortune made us contrive how to marry her to your good Worship. Many a wealthy Citizen, Sir, has contributed to the maintenance of a younger Brother's Mistress; and you are not the first Man in Office that has been a Cuckold, Sir.

Sir Pat. Some comfort that too, the Brethren of the Chain cannot laugh at me.

Sir Cred. A very pleasant old Fellow this: faith I cou'd be very merry with him now, but that I am damnable sad.—Madam, I shall desire to lay the Saddle on the right Horse. [To L. Kno

L. Kno. What mean you, Sir?

Sir Cred. Only Madam, if I were as some Men are, I should not be as I am.

L. Kno. It may be so, Sir.

Sir Cred. I say no more, but matters are not carried so swimmingly, but I can dive into the meaning on't.

[*Sir Patient talks this while to Lodwick.*

L. Kno. I hate this hypothetical way of arguing, answer me categorically.

Sir Cred. Hypothetical and Categorical! what does she mean now? [*Aside.*]—Madam, in plain English, I am made a *John A-Nokes* of, *Jack-hold-my-staff*, a *Merry Andrew Doctor*, to give *Leander* time to marry your Daughter; and 'twas therefore I was hoisted up in the Basket;—but as the Play says, 'tis well 'tis no worse: I'd rather lose my Mistress than my Life.

Sir Pat. But how came this Rascal *Turboon* to admit you?

Lod. For the Lucre of our Fees, Sir, which was his recompence.

Sir Pat. I forgive it you, and will turn Spark, they live the merriest Lives—keep some City Mistress, go to Court, and hate all Conventicles.

*You see what a fine City-Wife can do
Of the true-breed; instruct her Husband too:
I wish all civil Cuckolds in the Nation
Would take example by my Reformation.*

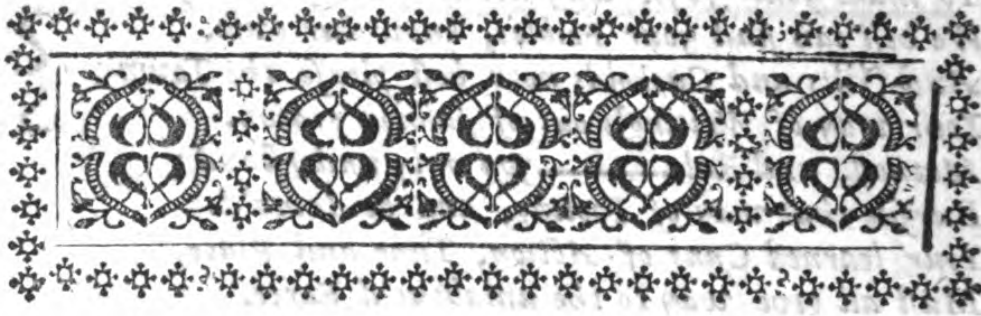
EPILOGUE,

Spoken by Mrs. Gwin.

I Here and there o'erheard a Coxcomb cry, [Looking-
 Ah, Rot it——'tis a Woman's Comedy, about.
 One, who because she lately chanc'd to please us,
 With her damn'd Stuff, will never cease to teeze us.
 What has poor Woman done, that she must be
 Debar'd from Sense and sacred Poetry?
 Why, in this Age has Heaven allow'd you more,
 And Women less of Wit than heretofore?
 We once were fam'd in story, and could write
 Equal to Men; cou'd govern, nay cou'd fight.
 We still have passive Valour, and can show,
 Wou'd Custom give us leave, the active too,
 Since we no Provocations want from you.
 For who but we cou'd your dull Fopperies bear,
 Your saucy Love, and your brisk Nonsense hear;
 Indure your worse than womanish Affectation,
 Which renders you the Nuisance of the Nation;
 Storn'd even by all the Misses of the Town,
 A Jest to Vizard-Mask, the Pit-Buffoon;
 A Glass by which the admiring Country Fool
 May learn to dress himself en Ridicule:
 Both striving who shall most ingenious grow
 In Leudness, Foppery, Nonsense, Noise and Show.
 And yet to these fine things we must submit
 Our Reason, Arms, our Laurels, and our Wit.
 Because we do not laugh at you, when leud,
 And scorn and cudgel ye when ye are rude.
 That we have nobler Souls than you, we prove,
 By how much more we're sensible of Love;

Quickest


*Quickest in finding all the subtlest ways
To make your Joys, why not to make you Plays ?
We best can find your Foibles, know our own,
And Filts and Cuckolds now best please the Town;
Your way of Writing's out of fashion grown.
Method, and Rule——you only understand;
Pursue that way of Fooling, and be damn'd.
Your learned Cant of Action, Time and Place,
Must all give way to the unlabour'd Farce.
To all the Men of Wit we will subscribe :
But for your half Wits, ye unthinking Tribe,
We'll let you see, whate'er besides we do,
How artfully we copy some of you :
And if you're drawn to th' Life, pray tell me then,
Why Women should not write as well as Men.*



THE
WIDOW RANTER:
OR, THE
HISTORY
OF
BACON in *VIRGINIA*.

PROLOGUE,

By Mr. Dryden.

 *Heaven save ye Gallants; and this hopeful Age,
F' are welcome to the downfall of the Stage:
The Fools have labour'd long in their Vocation;
And Vice (the Manufacture of the Nation)
O'er-stocks the Town so much, and thrives so well,
That Fops and Knaves grow Druggs, and will not sell.*

PROLOGUE. 107

*In vain our Wares on Theaters are shown,
When each has a Plantation of his own.
His Cause ne'er fails; for whatso'er he spends,
There's still God's plenty for himself and Friends.
Shou'd Men be rated by Poetick Rules,
Lord, what a Pool would there be rais'd from Fools!
Mean time poor Wit, prohibited must lie,
As if 'twere made some French Commodity.
Fools you will have, and rais'd at vast expence;
And yet as soon as seen, they give offence.
Time was, when none would cry that Oaf was me,
But now you strive about your Pedigree:
Bauble and Cap no sooner are thrown down,
But there's a Muss of more than half the Town.
Each one will challenge a Child's part at least,
A sign the Family is well increas'd.
Of Foreign Cattle there's no longer need,
When we're supply'd so fast with English Breed.
Well! Flourish, Countrymen; drink, swear and roar,
Let every free-born Subject keep his Whore;
And wandring in the Wilderness about,
At end of forty Tears not wear her out.
But when you see these Pictures, let none dare
To own beyond a Limb or single share:
For where the Punk is common, he's a Sot,
Who needs will father what the Parish got.*

Dra-

Dramatis Personæ.

M E N.

<i>Indian King</i> called <i>Cavernio</i> ,		Mr. <i>Bowman</i> .
<i>Bacon</i> , General of the <i>English</i> ,		Mr. <i>Williams</i> .
Colonel <i>Wellman</i> , Deputy Governor,		Mr. <i>Freeman</i> .
Col. <i>Downright</i> , a loyal honest Colonel,		Mr. <i>Harris</i> .
<i>Hazard</i> ,	} Two Friends known to one another many Years in <i>England</i> ,	} Mr. <i>Alexander</i> , Mr. <i>Powell</i> .
<i>Friendly</i> ,		
<i>Daring</i> ,	} Lieutenant Generals to <i>Bacon</i> ,	} Mr. <i>Sandford</i> , Mr. <i>Cudworth</i> .
<i>Fearless</i> ,		
<i>Dullman</i> , a Captain,		Mr. <i>Bright</i> .
<i>Timorous Corner</i> ,	} Justices of the Peace, and very great Cowards,	} Mr. <i>Underhill</i> , Mr. <i>Trefuse</i> , Mr. <i>Bowen</i> , Mr. <i>Barns</i> .
<i>Whimsy</i> ,		
<i>Whiff</i> ,		
<i>Boozer</i> ,		
<i>Brag</i> , a Captain.		
<i>Grubb</i> ,	} One complain'd of by Capt. <i>Whiff</i> , for calling his Wife Whore,	
A Petitioner against <i>Brag</i> ,		
Parson <i>Dunce</i> , formerly a Farrier, fled from <i>England</i> , and Chaplain to the Governour,		} Mr. <i>Baker</i> .
Clerk.		
Boy.		

W O M E N.

<i>Indian Queen</i> , call'd <i>Semernia</i> , belov'd by <i>Bacon</i> ,	} Mrs. <i>Bracegirdle</i> .
<i>Madam Surelove</i> , belov'd by <i>Hazard</i> ,	
<i>Mrs. Crisante</i> , Daughter to Colonel <i>Downright</i> ,	} Mrs. <i>Knight</i> . Mrs. <i>Jordon</i> .
<i>Widow Ranter</i> , in love with <i>Daring</i> ,	
<i>Mrs. Flirt</i> ,	Mrs. <i>Currer</i> .
<i>Mrs. Whimsy</i> , <i>Mrs. Whiff</i> , two Maids.	Mrs. <i>Cory</i> .
Priests, Indians, Coachman, Soldiers, with other Attendants.	

SCENE, *Virginia* in *Bacon's* Camp.

ACT

ACT I. SCENE I.

A Room with several Tables.

Enter Hazard in a travelling Habit, and a Sea-Boy, carrying his Portmantle.

Haz.



H A T Town's this, Boy ?

Boy. *James-Town*, Master.

Haz. Take care my Trunk be brought ashore to night, and there's for your Pains.

Boy. God bless you, Master.

Haz. What do you call this House ?

Boy. *Mrs. Flirt's*, Master, the best House for Commendation in all *Virginia*.

Haz. That's well, has she any handsome Ladies, Sirrah ?

Boy. Oh ! she's woundy handsome her self, Master, and the kindest Gentlewoman——look here she comes, Master.—— God bless you, Mistress, I have brought you a young Gentleman here.

Flirt. That's well, honest *Jack*.—— Sir you are most heartily welcome.

Haz. Madam, your Servant.

[*Salutes her.*

Flirt. Please you to walk into a Chamber, Sir ?

Haz. By and by, Madam ; but I'll repose here awhile for the coolness of the Air.

Flirt. This is a publick Room, Sir, but 'tis at your service.

Haz. Madam, you oblige me.

Flirt. A fine spoken Person, a Gentleman I'll warrant him : come *Jack*, I'll give thee a Cogue of Brandy for old acquaintance.

[*Exeunt Landlady and Boy.*

Hazard pulls out Pen, Ink and Paper, and goes to write.

Enter

110 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Enter Friendly.

Friend. Here, *Nell*, a Tankard of cool Drink, quickly.

Nell. You shall have it, Sir.

Friend. Hah! who's that Stranger? he seems to be a Gentleman.

Haz. If I should give credit to my Eyes, that should be *Friendly*.

Friend. Sir, you seem a Stranger; may I take the liberty to present my Service to you?

Haz. If I am not mistaken, Sir, you are the only Man in the World whom I would soonest pledge; you'll credit me, if three Years absence has not made you forget *Hazard*.

Friend. *Hazard*, my Friend! come to my Arms and Heart.

Haz. This unexpected Happiness o'erjoys me. Who could have imagin'd to have found thee in *Virginia*? I thought thou hadst been in *Spain* with thy Brother.

Friend. I was so till ten Months since, when my Uncle Colonel *Friendly* dying here, left me a considerable Plantation; and faith I find Diversions not altogether to be despis'd; the God of Love reigns here with as much power, as in Courts or popular Cities. But prithee what Chance (fortunate to me) drove thee to this part of the new World?

Haz. Why faith, ill Company, and that common Vice of the Town, Gaming, soon run out my younger Brother's Fortune: for imagining, like some of the luckier Gamesters, to improve my Stock at the Groom Porter's, I ventur'd on, and lost all. My elder Brother, an errant Jew, had neither Friendship nor Honour enough to support me; but at last being mollified by Persuasions, and the hopes of being for ever rid of me, sent me hither with a small Cargo to seek my Fortune.—

Friend. And begin the World withal.

Haz. I thought this a better Venture than to turn sharpening Bully, Cully to Prentices and Country Squires; with my Pocket full of false Dice, your high and low Flats and Bars; or turn Broker to young Heirs; take up Goods to pay tenfold at the Death of their Fathers, and take

Fees

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. III

Fees on both sides ; or sit up all night at the Groom-Porter's, begging his Honour to go a Guinea the better of the lay. No, *Friendly*, I had rather starve abroad, than live pity'd and despis'd at home.

Friend. Thou art in the right, and art come just in the nick of time to make thy Fortune.——Wilt thou follow my Advice ?

Haz. Thou art too honest to command any thing that I shall refuse.

Friend. You must know then, there is about a Mile from *James-Town* a young Gentlewoman——no matter for her Birth, her Breeding's the best this World affords, she is married to one of the richest Merchants here ; he is old and sick, and now gone into *England* for the recovery of his Health, where he'll e'en give up the Ghost : he has writ her word he finds no Amendment, and resolves to stay another Year. The Letter I accidentally took up, and have about me ; 'tis easily counterfeited, and will be of great use to us.

Haz. Now do I fancy I conceive thee.

Friend. Well, hear me first, you shall get another Letter writ like this Character, which shall say, you are his Kinsman, that is come to traffick in this Country, and 'tis his will you should be received into his House as such,

Haz. Well, and what will come of this ?

Friend. Why, thou art young and handsome, she young and desiring ; 'twere easy to make her love thee ; and if the old Gentleman chance to die, you guess the rest, you are no Fool,

Haz. Ay, but if he shou'd return——

Friend. If——Why if she love you, that other will be but a slender Bar to thy Happiness ; for if thou canst not marry her, thou mayst lie with her : and Gad, a younger Brother may pick out a pretty Livelihood here that way, as well as in *England*. Or if this fail, thou wilt find a perpetual Visiter, the *Widow Ranter*, a Woman bought from the Ship by old Colonel *Ranter* ; she serv'd him half a Year, and then he marry'd her, and dying in a Year more, left her worth fifty thousand Pounds Sterling, besides

112 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

sides Plate and Jewels: She's a great Gallant, but assuming the humour of the Country-Gentry, her Extravagancy is very pleasant, she retains something of her primitive Quality still, but is good-natur'd and generous.

Haz. I like all this well.

Friend. But I have a further End in this matter; you must know there is in the same House a young Heiress, one Colonel *Downright's* Daughter, whom I love, I think not in vain: her Father indeed has an implacable Hatred to me, for which reason I can but seldom visit her, and in this Affair I have need of a Friend in that House.

Haz. Me you're sure of.

Friend. And thus you'll have an opportunity to manage both our Amours: Here you will find occasion to shew your Courage, as well as express your Love; for at this time the *Indians*, by our ill Management of Trade, whom we have armed against our selves, very frequently make War upon us with our own Weapons; tho' often coming by the worst, they are forced to make Peace with us again, but so, as upon every turn they fall to massacring us wherever we lie exposed to them.

Haz. I heard the News of this in *England*, which hastens the new Governour's Arrival here, who brings you fresh Supplies.

Friend. Would he were landed, we hear he is a noble Gentleman.

Haz. He has all the Qualities of a Gallant Man: besides, he is nobly born.

Friend. This Country wants nothing but to be peopled with a well-born Race, to make it one of the best Colonies in the World; but for want of a Governour we are ruled by a Council, some of whom have been perhaps transported Criminals, who having acquired great Estates, are now become your Honour and Right Worshipful, and possess all Places of Authority; there are amongst them some honest Gentlemen, who now begin to take upon 'em, and manage Affairs as they ought to be.

Haz. Bacon I think was one of the Council.

Friend.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 113

Friend. Now you have named a Man indeed above the common Rank, by Nature generous, brave, resolv'd and daring; who studying the Lives of the *Romans* and great Men, that have rais'd themselves to the most elevated Fortunes, fancies it easy for ambitious Men to aim at any pitch of Glory. I've heard him often say, Why cannot I conquer the Universe as well as *Alexander*? or like another *Romulus*, form a new *Rome*, and make my self ador'd?

Haz. Why might he not? Great Souls are born in common Men sometimes, as well as Princes.

Friend. This Thirst of Glory cherish'd by sullen Melancholy, I believe, was the first motive that made him in love with the young *Indian* Queen, fancying no Hero ought to be without his Princess. And this was the reason why he so earnestly press'd for a Commission, to be made General against the *Indians*, which long was promis'd him; but they fearing his Ambition, still put him off, till the Grievances grew so high, that the whole Country flock'd to him, and beg'd he would redress them.—He took the opportunity, and led them forth to fight, and vanquishing brought the Enemy to fair Terms; but now instead of receiving him as a Conqueror, we treat him as a Traitor.

Haz. Then it seems all the Crime this brave Fellow has committed, is serving his Country without Authority.

Friend. 'Tis so, and however I admire the Man, I am resolv'd to be of the contrary Party, that I may make an Interest in our new Governor. Thus stand Affairs, so that after you have seen Madam *Surelove*, I'll present you to the Council for a Commission.

Haz. But my Kinsman's Character——

Friend. He was a *Leicestershire* younger Brother, came over with a small Fortune, which his Industry has increas'd to a thousand Pounds a year; and he is now Colonel *John Surelove*, and one of the Council.

Haz. Enough.

Friend. About it then, Madam *Flirt* to direct you.

Haz. You are full of your Madams here.

Friend.

114 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Friend. Oh! 'tis the greatest Affront imaginable to call a Woman Mistress, tho' but a retail Brandy-monger. Adieu.—One thing more, to morrow is our Country-Court, pray do not fail to be there, for the rarity of the Entertainment: but I shall see you anon at *Surelove's*, where I'll salute thee as my first meeting, and as an old Acquaintance in *England*—here's Company, farewell.

[*Exit Friend.*

Enter Dullman, Timorous and Boozer.

Hazard sits at a Table and writes.

Dull. Here, *Nell*—Well, Lieutenant *Boozer*, what are you for?

Enter Nell.

Booz. I am for cooling *Nants*, Major.

Dull. Here, *Nell*, a Quart of *Nants*, and some Pipes and Tobacco.

Tim. And do ye hear, *Nell*, bid your Mistress come in to joke a little with us; for adzoors I was damnable drunk last Night, and I am better at the Petticoat than the Bottle to day.

Dull. Drunk last Night, and sick to Day! how comes that about, Mr. Justice? you use to bear your Brandy well enough.

Tim. Ay, your shier Brandy I'll grant you; but I was drunk at Col. *Downright's* with your high Burgundy Claret.

Dull. A Pox of that paulty Liquor, your *English French* Wine, I wonder how the Gentlemen do to drink it.

Tim. Ay, so do I, 'tis for want of a little *Virginia* Breeding: how much more like a Gentleman 'tis, to drink as we do, brave edifying Punch and Brandy.—But they say, the young Noblemen now, and Sparks in *England*, begin to reform, and take it for their Mornings draught, get drunk by Noon, and despise the lousy Juice of the Grape.

Enter Mrs. Flirt.

Dull. Come, Landlady, come, you are so taken up with Parson *Dance*, that your old Friends can't drink a Dram with you.—What, no smutty Catch now, no Gibe

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 115

Gibe or Joke to make the Punch go down merrily, and advance Trading? Nay, they say, Gad forgive ye, you never miss going to Church when Mr. *Dunce* preaches.— but here's to you. [Drinks.]

Flirt. Lords, your Honours are pleas'd to be merry— but my service to your Honour. [Drinks.]

Haz. Honours! who the Devil have we here? some of the wise Council at least, I'd sooner take 'em for Hoggerds. [Aside.]

Flirt. Say what you please of the Doctor, but I'll swear he's a fine Gentleman, he makes the prettiest Sonnets, nay, and sings 'em himself to the rarest Tunes.

Tim. Nay, the Man will serve for both Soul and Body; for they say he was a Farrier in *England*, but breaking turn'd Life-guard-man, and his Horse dying, he counterfeited a Deputation from the Bishop, and came over here a substantial Orthodox. But come, where stands the Cup? Here, my service to you, Major.

Flirt. Your Honours are pleas'd,——but methinks Doctor *Dunce* is a very edifying Person, and a Gentleman, and I pretend to know a Gentleman; for I myself am a Gentlewoman: my Father was a Baronet, but undone in the late Rebellion, and I am fain to keep an Ordinary now, Heaven help me.

Tim. Good lack, why see how Virtue may be bely'd. We heard your Father was a Taylor, but trusting for old *Oliver's* Funeral broke, and so came hither to hide his Head.——But my service to you; what, you are never the worse?

Flirt. Your Honour knows this is a scandalous place, for they say your Honour was but a broken Excise-Man, who spent the King's Money to buy your Wife fine Petticoats; and at last not worth a Groat, you came over a poor Servant, tho now a Justice of the Peace, and of the Honourable Council.

Tim. Adz zoors, if I knew who 'twas said so, I'd sue him for *Scandalum Magnatum*.

Dull. Hang 'em Scoundrels, hang 'em, they live upon Scandal, and we are Scandal-proof.—— They say too, that I was a Tinker, and running the Country, robb'd a Gentle-

116 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

man's House there, was put into *Newgate*, got a Reprieve after Condemnation, and was transported hither; —and that you, *Boozer*, was a common Pick-pocker, and being often flogg'd at the Carts-tale, afterwards turn'd Evidence, and when the Times grew honest was fain to flee.

Booz. Ay, ay, Major, if Scandal would have broke our Hearts, we had not arriv'd to the Honour of being Privy-Counsellors.—But come, Mrs. *Flirt*, what never a Song to entertain us?

Flirt. Yes, and a Singer too newly come ashore.

Tim. Adz zoors, let's have it then.

Enter a Girl who sings, they bear a Bob.

Haz. Here, Maid, a Tankard of your Drink.

Flirt. Quickly, *Nell*, wait upon the Gentleman.

Dull. Please you, Sir, to taste of our Liquor.—My service to you: I see you are a Stranger, and alone; please you to come to our Table?

[He rises and comes.]

Flirt. Come, Sir, pray sit down here; these are very honourable Persons I assure you: This is Major *Dullman*, Major of his Excellency's own Regiment, when he arrives; this Mr. *Timorous*, Justice a Peace in *Corum*; this Captain *Boozer*, all of the honourable Council.

Haz. With your leave, Gentlemen.

[Sits.]

Tim. My service to you, Sir,

[Drinks.]

What have you brought over any Cargo, Sir? I'll be your Customer.

Booz. Ay, and cheat him too, I'll warrant him. *[Aside.]*

Haz. I was not bred to Merchandizing, Sir, nor do intend to follow the drudgery of Trading.

Dull. Men of Fortune seldom travel hither, Sir, to see Fashions.

Tim. Why, Brother, it may be the Gentleman has a mind to be a Planter; will you hire your self to make a Crop of Tobacco this Year?

Haz. I was not born to work, Sir.

Tim. Not work, Sir! Zoors, your Betters have workt, Sir. I have workt my self, Sir, both set and stript Tobacco, for all I am of the honourable Council. Not work

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 117

work quoth a!—I suppose, Sir, you wear your Fortune upon your Back, Sir?

Haz. Is it your Custom here, Sir, to affront Strangers? I shall expect Satisfaction. [Rises.]

Tim. Why, does any body here owe you any thing?

Dull. No, unless he means to be paid for drinking with us,—ha, ha, ha.

Haz. No, Sir, I have Money to pay for what I drink: here's my Club, my Guinea, [Flings down a Guinea.]
I scorn to be oblig'd to such Scoundrels.

Booz. Hum——call Men of Honour Scoundrels.

[Rise in huff.]

Tim. Let him alone, let him alone, Brother; how should he learn Manners? he never was in *Virginia* before.

Dull. He's some Covent-Garden Bully.

Tim. Or some broken Citizen turn'd Factor.

Haz. Sir, you lye, and you are a Rascal.

[Flings the Brandy in his Face.]

Tim. Adz zoors he has spil'd all the Brandy.

[Tim. runs behind the Door, Dull. and Booz. strike Hazard.]

Haz. I understand no Cudgel-play, but wear a Sword to right myself. [Draws, they run off.]

Flirt. Good Heavens! what, quarelling in my House?

Haz. Do the Persons of Quality in this Country treat Strangers thus?

Flirt. Alas, Sir, 'tis a familiar way they have, Sir.

Haz. I'm glad I know it.—Pray, Madam, can you inform one how I may be furnish'd with a Horse and a Guide to Madam *Surelove's*?

Flirt. A most accomplish'd Lady, and my very good Friend, you shall be immediately—— [Exeunt.]

SCENE

SCENE II.

Enter Wellman, Downright, Dunce, Whimsy, Whiff, and others.

Well. Come, Mr. *Dunce*, tho' you are no Counsellor, yet your Counsel may be good in time of Necessity, as now.

Dun. If I may be worthy Advice, I do not look upon our Danger to be so great from the *Indians*, as from young *Bacon*, whom the People have nick-nam'd *Fright-all*.

Whim. Ay, ay, that same *Bacon*, I would he were well hang'd: I am afraid that under the pretence of killing all the *Indians* he means to murder us, lie with our Wives, and hang up our little Children, and make himself Lord and King.

Whiff. Brother *Whimsy*, not so hot; with leave of the honourable Board, my Wife is of opinion, that *Bacon* came seasonably to our Aid, and what he has done was for our Defence, the *Indians* came down upon us, and ravish'd us all, Men, Women, and Children.

Well. If these Grievances were not redrest, we had our Reasons for it; it was not that we were insensible, Captain *Whiff*, of what we suffer'd from the Insolence of the *Indians*; but all knew what we must expect from *Bacon*, if that by lawful Authority he had arrived to so great a Command as General; nor would we be huff'd out of our Commissions.

Down. 'Tis most certain that *Bacon* did not demand a Commission out of a design of serving us, but to satisfy his Ambition and his Love; it being no secret that he passionately admires the *Indian* Queen, and under the pretext of a War, intends to kill the King her Husband, establish himself in her Heart, and on all occasions make himself a more formidable Enemy than the *Indians* are.

Whim. Nay, nay, I ever foresaw he would prove a Villain.

Whiff.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 119

Whiff. Nay, and he be thereabout, my *Nancy* shall have no more to do with him.

Well. But Gentlemen, the People daily flock to him, so that his Army is too considerable for us to oppose by any thing but Policy.

Down. We are sensible, Gentlemen, that our Fortunes, our Honours, and our Lives are at stake; and therefore you are call'd together to consult what's to be done in this Grand Affair, till our Governour and Forces arrive from *England*: the Truce he made with the *Indians* will be out to morrow.

Whiff. Ay, and then he intends to have another bout with the *Indians*. Let's have patience, I say, till he has thrumb'd their Jackets, and then to work with your Politics as soon as you please.

Down. Colonel *Wellman* has answer'd that point, good Captain *Whiff*; 'tis the Event of this Battel we ought to dread; and if won or lost, will be equally fatal for us, either from the *Indians* or from *Bacon*.

Dunce. With the Permission of the honourable Board, I think I have hit upon an Expedient that may prevent this Battel: your Honours shall write a Letter to *Bacon*, where you shall acknowledge his Services, invite him kindly home, and offer him a Commission for General—

Whiff. Just my *Nancy's* Counsel — Dr. *Dunce* has spoken like a Cherubin, he shall have my Voice for General; what say you, Brother *Whimsy*?

Down. I say he is a noble Fellow, and fit for a General.

Dunce. But conceive me right, Gentlemen; as soon as he shall have render'd himself, seize him, and strike off his Head at the Fort.

Whiff. Hum! his Head — Brother.

Whim. Ay, ay, Dr. *Dunce* speaks like a Cherubin.

Well. Mr. *Dunce*, your Council in extremity, I confess, is not amiss; but I should be loth to deal dishonourably with any Man.

Down. His Crimes deserve Death, his Life is forfeited by Law, but shall never be taken by my consent by Treachery: If by any Stratagem we could take him alive,
and

and either send him for *England* to receive there his Punishment, or keep him Prisoner here till the Governour arrive, I should agree to it; but I question his coming in upon our Invitation.

Dun. Leave that to me.

Whim. Come, I'll warrant him, the Rogue's as stout as *Hector*, he fears neither Heaven nor Hell.

Down. He's too brave and bold to refuse our Summons, and I am for sending him for *England*, and leaving him to the King's Mercy.

Dun. In that you'll find more difficulty, Sir; to take him off here will be more quick and sudden: for the People worship him.

Well. I'll never yield to so ungenerous an Expedient. The seizing him I am content in the Extremity wherein we are to follow. What say you, Colonel *Downright*? shall we send him a Letter now, while this two days Truce lasts, between him and the *Indians*?

Down. I approve it.

All. And I, and I, and I.

Dun. If your Honours please to make me the Messenger, I'll use some Arguments of my own to prevail with him.

Well. You say well, Mr. *Dunce*, and we'll dispatch you presently.

[*Ex. Well. Down. and all but Whim. Whiff and Dunce.*]

Whiff. Ah, Doctor, if you could but have persuaded Colonel *Wellman* and Colonel *Downright* to have hanged him——

Whim. Why, Brother *Whiff*, you were for making him a General but now.

Whiff. The Counsels of wise States-men, Brother *Whimsey*, must change as Causes do, d'ye see.

Dan. Your Honours are in the right; and whatever those two leading Counsellors say, they would be glad if *Bacon* were dispatch'd: but the punctilio of Honour is such a thing.

Whim. Honour, a Pox on't; what is that Honour that keeps such a bustle in the World, yet never did good as I heard of?

Dun.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 121

Dun. Why, 'tis a foolish word only, taken up by great Men, but rarely practis'd. — But if you wou'd be great Men indeed——

Whiff. If he wou'd, Doctor, name, name the way.

Dun. Why, you command each of you a Company—when *Bacon* comes from the Camp, as I am sure he will, (and full of this silly thing call'd Honour, will come unguarded too) lay some of your Men in Ambush along those Ditches by the *Sevana*, about a Mile from the Town; and as he comes by, seize him, and hang him up upon the next Tree.

Whiff. Hum——hang him! a rare Plot.

Whim. Hang him!——we'll do't, we'll do't, Sir, and I doubt not but to be made General for the Action——I'll take it all upon my self. [Aside.

Dun. If you resolve upon this, you must about instantly——Thus I shall at once serve my Country, and revenge my self on the Rascal for affronting my Dignity once at the Council-Table, by calling me Farrier. [Ex. Dr.

Whiff. Do you know, Brother, what we are to do?

Whim. To do! yes, to hang a General, Brother, that's all.

Whiff. All! but is it lawful to hang any General?

Whim. Lawful, yes, that 'tis lawful to hang any General that fights against Law.

Whiff. But in what he has done, he has serv'd the King and our Country, and preserv'd our Lives and Fortunes.

Whim. That's all one, Brother; if there be but a Quirk in the Law offended in this Case, tho he fought like *Alexander*, and preserv'd the whole World from Perdition, yet if he did it against Law, 'tis lawful to hang him; why what, Brother, is it fit that every impudent Fellow that pretends to a little Honour, Loyalty and Courage, should serve his King and Country against the Law? no, no, Brother, these things are not to be suffer'd in a civil Government by Law establish'd,——wherefore let's about it. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *Surelove's House.*

Enter Ranter and her Coachman.

Ran. Here, *Jefferry*, ye drunken Dog, set your Coach and Horses up, I'll not go till the cool of the Evening, I love to ride in *Fresco*.

Enter a Boy.

Coach. Yes, after hard drinking—[*Aside.*] It shall be done, Madam.

Ran. How now, Boy, is Madam *Surelove* at home?

Boy. Yes, Madam.

Ran. Go tell her I am here, Sirrah.

Boy. Who are you pray forsooth?

Ran. Why, you Son of a Baboon don't you know me?

Boy. No, Madam, I came over but in the last Ship.

Ran. What, from *Newgate* or *Bridewel*? from shoving the Tumbler, Sirrah, lifting or filing the Cly?

Boy. I don't understand this Country Language, forsooth, yet.

Ran. You Rogue, 'tis what we transport from *England* first—go, ye Dog, go tell your Lady the *Widow Ranter* is come to dine with her—[*Exit Boy.*] I hope I shall not find that Rogue *Daring* here sniveling after Mrs. *Chrisante*: If I do, by the Lord I'll lay him thick. Pox on him why shou'd I love the Dog, unless it be a Judgment upon me.

Enter Surelove and Chrisante.

— My dear Jewel, how do'st do? — as for you Gentlewoman, you are my Rival, and I am in Rancour against you till you have renounc'd my *Daring*.

Chris. All the Interest I have in him, Madam, I resign to you.

Ran. Ay, but your House lying so near the Camp, gives me mortal Fears—but prithee how thrives thy Amour with honest *Friendly*?

Chris. As well as an Amour can that is absolutely forbid by a Father on one side, and pursued by a good Resolution on the other.

Ran.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 123

Ran. Hay Gad, I'll warrant for *Friendly's* Resolution, what tho his Fortune be not answerable to yours, we are bound to help one another,— Here, Boy, some Pipes and a Bowl of Punch; you know my Humour, Madam, I must smoak and drink in a Morning, or I am maukish all day.

Sure. But will you drink Punch in a Morning?

Ran. Punch! 'tis my Morning's Draught, my Table-drink, my Treat, my Regalio, my every thing; ah my dear *Surelove*, if thou wou'd but refresh and chear thy Heart with Punch in a Morning, thou wou'dst not look thus cloudy all the day.

Enter Pipes and a great Bowl, she falls to smoaking.

Sure. I have reason, Madam, to be melancholy, I have receiv'd a Letter from my Husband, who gives me an account that he is worse in *England* than when he was here, so that I fear I shall see him no more, the Doctors can do no good on him.

Ran. A very good hearing. I wonder what the Devil thou hast done with him so long? an old fusty weather-beaten Skeleton, as dried as Stock-fish, and much of the Hue.—Come, come, here's to the next, may he be young, Heaven, I beseech thee. [*Drinks.*]

Sure. You have reason to praise an old Man, who dy'd and left you worth fifty thousand Pounds.

Ran. Ay, Gad — and what's better, Sweat heart, dy'd in good time too, and left me young enough to spend this fifty thousand Pounds in better Company——rest his Soul for that too.

Chris. I doubt 'twill be all laid out in *Bacon's* mad Lieutenant General *Daring*.

Ran. Faith, I think I could lend it the Rogue on good Security.

Chris. What's that, to be bound Body for Body?

Ran. Rather than he should love no body's Body besides my own; but my fortune is too good to trust the Rogue, my Money makes me an Infidel.

Chris. You think they all love you for that.

124 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Ran. For that, ay, what else? if it were not for that, I might sit still and sigh, and cry out, a Miracle! a Miracle! at sight of a Man within my Doors.

Enter Maid.

Maid. Madam, here's a young Gentleman without wou'd speak with you.

Sure. With me? sure thou'rt mistaken; is it not *Friendly?*

Maid. No, Madam, 'tis a Stranger.

Ran. 'Tis not *Daring*, that Rogue, is it?

Maid. No, Madam.

Ran. Is he handsome? does he look like a Gentleman?

Maid. He's handsome, and seems a Gentleman.

Ran. Bring him in then, I hate a Conversation without a Fellow,—hah,—a good handsome Lad indeed.

Enter Hazard with a Letter.

Sure. With me, Sir, would you speak?

Haz. If you are Madam *Surelove*.

Sure. So I am call'd.

Haz. Madam, I am newly arriv'd from *England*, and from your Husband my Kinsman bring you this.—

[Gives a Letter.]

Ran. Please you to sit, Sir.

Haz. She's extremely handsome. *[Aside—sits down.]*

Ran. Come, Sir, will you smoke a Pipe?

Haz. I never do, Madam.

Ran. Oh fie upon't, you must learn then, we all smoke here, 'tis a part of good Breeding.—Well, well, what Cargo, what Goods have ye? any Points, Lace, rich Stuffs, Jewels; if you have, I'll be your Chafferer, I live hard by, any body will direct you to the *Widow Ranter's*.

Haz. I have already heard of you, Madam.

Ran. What, you are like all the young Fellows, the first thing they do when they come to a strange Place, is to enquire what Fortunes there are.

Haz. Madam, I had no such Ambition.

Ran. Gad, then you're a Fool, Sir; but come, my service to you; we rich Widows are the best Commodity
this

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 125

this Country affords, I'll tell you that. *[This while she reads the Letter.*

Sure. Sir, my Husband has recommended you here in a most particular manner, by which I do not only find the esteem he has for you; but the desire he has of gaining you mine, which on a double score I render you, first for his sake, next for those Merits that appear in your self.

Haz. Madam, the endeavours of my Life shall be to express my Gratitude for this great Bounty.

Enter Maid.

Maid. Madam, Mr. *Friendly's* here.

Sure. Bring him in.

Haz. *Friendly!*—I had a dear Friend of that name, who I hear is in these Parts.—Pray Heaven it be he.

Ran. How now, *Charles.*

Enter Friendly.

Friend. Madam, your Servant—Hah! should not I know you for my dear Friend *Hazard.* *[Embracing him.*

Haz. Or you're to blame, my *Friendly.*

Friend. Prithee what calm brought thee ashore?

Haz. Fortune *de la guerre,* but prithee ask me no Questions in so good Company, where a Minute lost from this Conversation is a Misfortune not to be retriev'd.

Friend. Dost like her, Rogue— *[Softly aside.*

Haz. Like her! have I sight, or sense?—Why, I adore her.

Friend. Mrs. *Chrisante,* I heard your Father would not be here to day, which made me snatch this opportunity of seeing you.

Ran. Come, come, a Pox of this whining Love, it spoils good Company.

Friend. You know, my dear Friend, these Opportunities come but seldom, and therefore I must make use of them.

Ran. Come, come, I'll give you a better Opportunity at my House to morrow, we are to eat a Buffalo there, and I'll secure the old Gentleman from coming.

Friend. Then I shall see *Chrisante* once more before I go.

126 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Chris. Go—Heavens—whither, my *Friendly*?

Friend. I have received a Commission to go against the *Indians*, *Bacon* being sent for home.

Ran. But will he come when sent for?

Friend. If he refuse we are to endeavour to force him.

Chris. I do not think he will be forc'd, not even by *Friendly*.

Friend. And faith it goes against my Conscience to lift my Sword against him, for he is truly brave, and what he has done, a Service to the Country, had it but been by Authority.

Chris. What pity 'tis there should be such false Maxims in the World, that noble Actions, however great, must be criminal for want of a Law to authorise 'em.

Friend. Indeed 'tis pity that when Laws are faulty they should not be mended or abolish'd.

Ran. Hark ye, *Charles*, by Heaven if you kill my *Daring* I'll pistol you.

Friend. No, *Widow*, I'll spare him for your sake.

Haz. Oh she's all divine, and all the Breath she utters serves but to blow my Flame.

Enter Maid.

Maid. Madam, Dinner's on the Table——

Sure. Please you, Sir, to walk in—come, Mr. *Friendly*.

[*She takes Hazard.*]

Ran. Prithee good Wench bring in the Punch-Bowl.

[*Exeunt.*]

A C T

ACT II. SCENE I.

A Pavilion.

Discovers the Indian King and Queen sitting in State, with Guards of Indians, Men and Women attending: To them Bacon richly dress'd, attended by Daring, Fearless and other Officers; he bows to the King and Queen, who rise to receive him.

King. I Am sorry, Sir, we meet upon these Terms, we who so often have embrac'd as Friends.

Bac. How charming is the Queen! [*Aside.*] War, Sir, is not my Business nor my Pleasure; Nor was I bred in Arms, my Country's Good has forc'd me to assume a Soldier's Life; and 'tis with much regret that I employ the first Effects of it against my Friends: yet whilst I may—whilst this Cessation lasts, I beg we may exchange those Friendships, Sir, we have so often paid in happier Peace.

King. For your part, Sir, you've been so noble, that I repent the fatal Difference that makes us meet in Arms. Yet tho' I'm young, I'm sensible of Injuries; and oft have heard my Grandfire say, That we were Monarchs once of all this spacious World, till you, an unknown People, landing here, distress'd and ruin'd by destructive Storms, abusing all our charitable Hospitality, usurp'd our Right, and made your Friends your Slaves.

Bac. I will not justify the Ingratitude of my Fore-fathers, but finding here my Inheritance, I am resolv'd still to maintain it so, and by my Sword which first cut out my Portion, defend each Inch of Land, with my last drop of Blood.

Queen. Even his Threats have those Charms that please the Heart. [*Aside.*]

King. Come, Sir, let this ungrateful Theme alone, which is better disputed in the Field.

128 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Queen. Is it impossible there might be wrought an understanding betwixt my Lord and you? 'Twas to that end I first desired this Truce, my self proposing to be Mediator, to which my Lord *Cavernio* shall agree, could you but condescend—I know you are noble: And I have heard you say our tender Sex could never plead in vain.

Bac. Alas! I dare not trust your pleading, Madam: a few soft Words from such a charming Mouth would lay me a Conqueror at your Feet, as a Sacrifice for all the Ills he has done you.

Queen. How strangely am I pleas'd to hear him talk.

[*Aside.*]

King. *Semernia* see, the Dancers do appear; Sir, will you take your Seat?

[*To Bacon.*]

[*He leads the Queen to a Seat, they sit and talk.*]

Bac. Curse on his Sports that interrupted me, my very Soul was hovering at my Lip, ready to have discover'd all its Secrets. But oh! I dread to tell her of my pain, and when I wou'd an awful trembling seizes me, and she can only from my dying Eyes read all the Sentiments of my captive Heart.

[*Sits down, the rest wait.*]

Enter Indians that dance Anticks: After the Dance the King seems in discourse with Bacon, the Queen rises and comes forth.

Queen. The more I gaze upon this *English* Stranger, the more Confusion struggles in my Soul: Oft I have heard of Love, and oft this Gallant Man (when Peace had made him pay his idle Visits) has told a thousand Tales of dying Maids; and ever when he spoke, my panting Heart, with a prophetick Fear in Sighs reply'd, I shall fall a Victim to his Eyes.

Enter an Indian.

Indian. Sir, here's a Messenger from the *English* Council desires admittance to the General.

[*To the King.*]

Bac. With your Permission he may advance.

[*To the King.*]

Re-enter Indian with Dunce. A Letter.

Dun. All Health and Happiness attend your Honour, this from the honourable Council.

[*Gives him a Letter.*]

King.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 129

King. I'll leave you till you have dispatch'd the Messenger; and then expect your Presence in the Royal Tent.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and Indians.*]

Bac. Lieutenant, read the Letter. [To *Daring.*]

Daring reads.

SIR, the necessity of what you have acted makes it pardonable, and we could wish we had done the Country and our selves so much Justice as to have given you that Commission you desired.—We now find it reasonable to raise more Forces, to oppose these Insolences, which possibly yours may be too weak to accomplish, to which end the Council is ordered to meet this Evening, and desiring you will come and take your place there, and be pleas'd to accept from us a Commission to command in Chief in this War. — Therefore send those Soldiers under your Command to their respective Houses, and haste Sir to your affectionate Friends —

Fear. Sir, I fear the Hearts and Pen did not agree when this was writ.

Dar. A plague upon their shallow Politicks! Do they think to play the old Game twice with us?

Bac. Away, you wrong the Council, who of themselves are honourable Gentlemen; but the base coward Fear of some of them, puts the rest on tricks that suit not with their Nature.

Dun. Sir, 'tis for noble ends you are sent for, and for your safety I'll engage my Life.

Dar. By Heaven and so you shall;—and pay it too with all the rest of your wise-headed Council.

Bac. Your Zeal is too officious now; I see no Treachery, and can fear no Danger.

Dun. Treachery! now Heavens forbid, are we not Christians, Sir, all Friends and Countrymen? believe me, Sir, 'tis Honour calls you to increase your Fame, and he who would dissuade you is your Enemy.

Dar. Go cant, Sir, to the Rabble—for us, we know you.

130 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Bac. You wrong me when you but suspect for me; let him that acts dishonourably fear. My Innocence and my good Sword's my Guard.

Dar. If you resolve to go, we will attend you.

Bac. What go like an Invader! No, *Daring*, the Invitation's friendly, and as a Friend attended only by my menial Servants, I'll wait upon the Council, that they may see that when I could command it, I came an humble Suppliant for their Favour.—You may return, and tell 'em I'll attend.

Dun. I kiss your Honour's Hands—— [Goes out.

Dar. 'Sdeath, will you trust the faithless Council, Sir, who have so long held you in hand with Promises, that Curse of States-men, that unlucky Vice that renders even Nobility despis'd?

Bac. Perhaps the Council thought me too aspiring, and would not add Wings to my ambitious Flight.

Dar. A pox of their considering Caps, and now they find that you can soar alone, they send for you to nip your spreading Wings.

Now by my Soul, you shall not go alone.

Bac. Forbear, lest I suspect you for a Mutineer; I am resolv'd to go.

Fear. What, and send your Army home? a pretty fetch.

Dar. By Heaven, we'll not disband, not till we see how fairly you are dealt with: If you have a Commission to be General, here we are ready to receive new Orders; If not, we'll ring them such a thundring Peal shall beat the Town about their treacherous Ears.

Bac. I do command you not to stir a Man, till you're inform'd how I am treated by 'em.—leave me all.

[Exeunt Officers.

While Bacon reads the Letter again, to him the Indian Queen with Women waiting.

Queen. Now while my Lord's asleep in his Pavilion, I'll try my Power with the General for an Accommodation of a Peace: The very dreams of War fright my soft Slumbers that us'd to be employ'd in kinder Business.

Bac.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 131

Bac. Ha!—the Queen—what Happiness is this presents it self which all my Industry could never gain?

Queen, Sir——— [*Approaching him.*

Bac. Prest with the great extremes of Joy and Fear, I trembling stand, unable to approach her.

Queen. I hope you will not think it Fear in me, tho timorous as a Dove by nature fram'd: Not that my Lord, whose Youth's unskill'd in War, can either doubt his Courage, or his Forces, that makes me Teek a Reconciliation on any honourable Terms of Peace.

Bac. Ah Madam! if you knew how absolutely you command my Fate, I fear but little Honour would be left me, since whatsoe'er you ask me I should grant.

Queen. Indeed I would not ask your Honour, Sir, that renders you too brave in my Esteem. Nor can I think that you would part with that. No not to save your Life.

Bac. I would do more to serve your least commands than part with trivial Life.

Queen. Bless me, Sir, how came I by such a Power?

Bac. The Gods and Nature gave it you in your Creation, form'd with all the Charms that ever grac'd your Sex.

Queen. Is't possible? am I so beautiful?

Bac. As Heaven, or Angels there.

Queen. Supposing this, how can my Beauty make you so obliging?

Bac. Beauty has still a Power over great Souls, and from the moment I beheld your Eyes, my stubborn Heart melted to compliance, and from a nature rough and turbulent, grew soft and gentle as the God of Love.

Queen. The God of Love! what is the God of Love?

Bac. 'Tis a resistless Fire, that's kindled thus—at every
[*Takes her by the Hand and gazes on her.*
gaze we take from such fine Eyes, from such bashful Looks, and such soft Touches——it makes us sigh,——and pant as I do now, and stops the breath when e'er we speak of Pain.

Queen. Alas, for me if this should be Love! [*Aside.*

Bac.

132 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Bac. It makes us tremble when we touch the fair one ; and all the Blood runs shivering thro the Veins, the Heart's surrounded with a feeble Languishment, the Eyes are dying, and the Cheeks are pale, the Tongue is faltring, and the Body fainting.

Queen. Then I'm undone, and all I feel is Love. [*Aside.* If Love be catching, Sir, by Looks and Touches, let us at distance parley—or rather let me fly, for within view is too near—— [*Aside.*

Bac. Ah! she retires——displeas'd I fear with my presumptuous Love,——Oh pardon, fairest Creature.

[*Kneels.*

Queen. I'll talk no more, our Words exchange our Souls, and every Look fades all my blooming Honour, like Sun-beams on unguarded Roses—Take all our Kingdoms—make our People Slaves, and let me fall beneath your conquering Sword: but never let me hear you talk again, or gaze upon your Eyes.—— [*Goes out.*

Bac. She loves! by Heaven she loves! and has not Art enough to hide her Flame, tho she have cruel Honour to suppress it. However I'll pursue her to the Banquet.

[*Exit.*

SCENE II. *The Widow Ranter's Hall.*

Enter Surelove fan'd by two Negroes, followed by Hazard.

Sure. This Madam Ranter is so prodigious a Treater—oh! I hate a Room that smells of a great Dinner, and what's worse a desert of Punch and Tobacco—what! are you taking leave so soon, Cousin?

Haz. Yes Madam, but 'tis not fit I should let you know with what regret I go,—— but Business will be obey'd.

Sure. Some Letters to dispatch to *English* Ladies you have left behind——come, Cousin, confess.

Haz. I own I much admire the *English* Beauties but never yet have put their Fetters on.

Sure. Never in love! oh then you have pleasure to come.

Haz.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 133

Haz. Rather a Pain when there's no Hope attends it.

Sure. Oh such Diseases quickly cure themselves.

Haz. I do not wish to find it so; for even in Pain I find a Pleasure too.

Sure. You are infected then, and come abroad for Cure.

Haz. Rather to receive my Wounds, Madam.

Sure. Already Sir,—whoe'er she be, she made good haste to conquer, we have few here boast that Dexterity.

Haz. What think you of *Chrisante*, Madam?

Sure. I must confess your Love and your Despair are there plac'd right, of which I am not fond of being made a Confident, since I am assur'd she can love none but
Friendly.

Haz. Let her love on, as long as Life shall last, let
Friendly take her, and the Universe, so I had my next wish——

Madam, it is your self that I adore——I should not be so vain to tell you this, but that I know you have found the Secret out already from my Sighs.

Sure. Forbear Sir, and know me for your Kinsman's Wife, and no more.

Haz. Be scornful as you please, rail at my Passion, and refuse to hear it; yet I'll love on, and hope in spite of you; my Flame shall be so constant and submissive, it shall compel your Heart to some return.

Sure. You're very confident of your Power I perceive; but if you chance to find your self mistaken, say your Opinion and your Affectation were misapply'd, and not that I was cruel.

Haz. Whate'er denials dwell upon your Tongue, your Eyes assure me that your Heart is tender. [Goes out.]

Enter the Bagpiper, playing before a great Bowl of Punch, carry'd between two Negroes, a Highlander dancing after it; the Widow Ranter led by Timorous; Chrisante by Dullman; Mrs. Flirt and Friendly, all dancing after it; they place it on the Table.

Dull. This is like the noble Widow all over i'faith.

Tim.

134 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Tim. Ay, ay, the Widow's Health in a full Ladle, Major. [Drinks.]

—But a Pox on't what made that young Fellow here, that affronted us yesterday, Major?

[While they drink about.]

Dull. Some damned Sharper that would lay his Knife aboard your Widow, Cornet.

Tim. Zoors, if I thought so, I'd arrest him for Salt and Battery, lay him in Prison for a swinging Fine, and take no Bail.

Dull. Nay, had it not been before my Mistress here, Mrs. *Chrisante*, I had swung him for Yesterday's Affront; — ah my sweet Mistress *Chrisante* — if you did but know what a power you have over me —

Chris. Oh you're a great Courtier, Major.

Dull. Would I were any thing for your sake, Madam.

Ran. Thou art any thing, but what thou shouldst be; prithee Major leave off being an old Buffoon, that is, a Lover turn'd ridiculous by Age, consider thy self a mere rousing Tun of *Nantz*, — a walking Chimney, ever smoaking with nasty Mundungus, — and then thou hast a Countenance like an old worm-eaten Cheese.

Dull. Well, Widow, you will joke, ha, ha, ha —

Tim. Gad' Zoors she's pure company, ha, ha —

Dull. No matter for my Countenance, — Col. *Down-right* likes my Estate, and is resolved to have it a match.

Friend. Dear Widow, take off your damned Major, for if he speak another word to *Chrisante*, I shall be put past all my patience, and fall foul upon him.

Ran. S'life not for the world — Major I bar Love-making within my Territories, 'tis inconsistent with the Punch-Bowl, if you'd drink do, if not be gone.

Tim. Nay, Gad's Zooks, if you enter me at the Punch-Bowl you enter me in Politicks — well, 'tis the best Drink in Christendom for a Statesman.

[They drink about, the Bagpipe playing.]

Ran. Come, now you shall see what my High-land Valles can do. [A Scotch Dance.]

Dull.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 135

Dull. So——I see let the World go which way it will, Widow, you are resolv'd for mirth,—but come—to the conversation of the Times.

Ran. The Times! why what a Devil ails the Times? I see nothing in the Times but a company of Coxcombs that fear without a Cause.

Tim. But if these Fears were laid, and Bacon were hanged, I look upon *Virginia* to be the happiest part of the World, gads zoors, — why there's *England* — 'tis nothing to't, — I was in *England* about six Years ago, and was shewed the Court of Aldermen, some were nodding, some saying nothing, and others very little to purpose; but how could it be otherwise, for they had neither Bowl of Punch, Bottles of Wine or Tobacco before 'em, to put Life and Soul into 'em as we have here: then for the young Gentlemen—their farthest Travels is to *France* or *Italy*, they never come hither.

Dull. The more's the pity by my troth. [Drinks.

Tim. Where they learn to swear Mor-blew, Mor-dee—

Frien. And tell you how much bigger the *Louvre* is than *Whitehall*; buy a suit a-la-mode, get a swinging Clap of some *French* Marquise, spend all their Money, and return just as they went.

Dull. For the old Fellows, their business is Usury, Extortion, and undermining young Heirs.

Tim. Then for young Merchants, their Exchange is the Tavern, their Ware-house the Play-house, and their Bills of Exchange Billet-Doux, where to sup with their Wenches at the other end of the Town,—now judge you what a condition poor *England* is in: for my part I look upon it as a lost Nation gads zoors.

Dull. I have considered it, and have found a way to save all yet.

Tim. As how I pray?

Dull. As thus; we have Men here of great Experience and Ability——now I would have as many sent into *England*, as would supply all Places and Offices, both Civil and Military, d'ye see; their young Gentry should all travel hither for breeding, and to learn the mysteries of State.

Friend.

136 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Frien. As for the old covetous Fellows, I would have the Tradesmen get in their Debts, break and turn Troopers.

Tim. And they'd be soon weary of Extortion gad zoors.

Dull. Then for the young Merchants, there should be a Law made, none should go beyond *Ludgate*.

Frien. You have found out the only way to preserve that great Kingdom.

Tim. Well, gad zoors 'tis a fine thing to be a good Statesman.

Frien. Ay Cornet, which had never been had you staid in Old *England*.

Dull. Why Sir, we were somebody in *England*.

Frien. So I heard, Major.

Dull. You heard Sir! what have you heard? he's a Kidnapper that says he heard any thing of me—and so my service to you.—I'll sue you, Sir, for spoiling my Marriage here by your Scandals with *Mrs. Chrisante*; but that shan't do, Sir, I'll marry her for all that, and he's a Rascal that denies it.

Frien. S'death you lye Sir—I do.

Tim. Gad zoors Sir, lye to a Privy-Counsellor, a Major of Horse! Brother this is an Affront to our Dignities: draw and I'll side with you.

[*They both draw on Friendly, the Ladies run off.*]

Frien. If I disdain to draw, 'tis not that I fear your base and cowardly Force, but for the respect I bear you as Magistrates, and so I leave you. [Goes out.]

Tim. An arrant Coward gad zoors.

Dull. A mere Pau'troon, and I scorn to drink in his Company. [Exeunt, putting up their Swords.]

SCENE III. *A Sevana, or large Heath.*

Enter Whimsy, Whiff, and Boozer, with some Soldiers arm'd.

Whim. Stand—stand—and hear the word of Command—do ye see yon Cops, and that Ditch that runs along Major *Dullman's* Plantation?

Booz.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 137.

Booz. We do.

Whim. Place your Men there, and lie flat on your Bel-
lies, and when *Bacon* comes, (if alone) seize him d'ye see.

Whiff. Observe the Command now (if alone) for we
are not for blood-shed.

Booz. Ill warrant you for our parts.

[*Exeunt all but Whim and Whiff.*

Whim. Now we have ambuht our Men, let's light our
Pipes, and sit down and take an encouraging Dram of the
Bottle.

[*Pulls a Bottle of Brandy out
of his Pocket—they sit.*

Whiff. Thou art a Knave, and hast emptied half the
Bottle in thy Leathern Pockets; but come here's young
Frightall's Health.

Whim. What, drink a Man's Health whom ye are go-
ing to hang?

Whiff. 'Tis all one for that, we'll drink his Health
first, and hang him afterwards, and thou shalt pledge me
d'ye see, and tho 'twere under the Gallows.

Whim. Thou'rt a Traitor for saying so, and I defy thee.

Whiff. Nay since we are come out like loving Brothers,
to hang the General, let's not fall out among our selves;
and so here's to you, tho I have no great Maw to this Bu-
siness.

Whim. Prithee Brother *Whiff*, do not be so villainous
a Coward, for I hate a Coward.

Whiff. Nay 'tis not that—but my *Whiff*, my *Nancy*
dreamt to night she saw me hanged.

Whim. 'Twas a cowardly Dream, think no more on't;
but as Dreams are expounded by contraries, thou shalt
hang the General.

Whiff. Ay—but he was my Friend, and I owe him at
this time a hundred Pounds of Tobacco.

Whim. Nay, then I am sure thou'dst hang him if he
were thy Brother.

Whiff. But hark—I think I hear the Neighing of
Horses, where shall we hide our selves? for if we stay
here, we shall be mawled damnably.

[*Exeunt both behind a Bush, peeping.*

Enter

138 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Enter Bacon, Fearless, and 3 or 4 Footmen.

Bac. Let the Groom lead the Horses o'er the *Sevana* ; we'll walk it on Foot, 'tis not a quarter of a Mile to the Town ; and here the Air is cool.

Fear. The Breezes about this time of the Day begin to take wing, and fan refreshment to the Trees and Flowers.

Bac. And at these Hours how fragrant are the Groves !

Fear. The Country's well, were but the People so.

Bac. But come lets on—— [*They pass to the Entrance.*

Whim. There Boys—— [*The Soldiers come forth and fall on Bacon.*

Bac. Hah ! Ambush ——

[*Draws, Fearless and Footmen draw, the Soldiers after a while fighting, take Bacon and Fearless, having laid 3 or 4 dead.*

Whiff. So, so, he's taken; now we may venture out.

Whim. But are you sure he's taken ?

Whiff. Sure ! can't you believe your Eyes, come forth ; I hate a Coward—— Oh Sir, have we caught your Migh-
tiness.

Bac. Are you the Authors of this valiant Act ? None but such villainous Cowards durst have attempted it.

Whim. Stop his railing Tongue.

Whiff. No, no, let him rail, let him rail now his Hands are ty'd, ha, ha. Why good General *Frightall*, what was no body able d'ye think to tame the roaring *Lyon*.

Bac. You'll be hang'd for this.

Whim. Come, come, away with him to the next Tree.

Bac. What mean you, Villains ?

Whiff. Only to hang your Honour a little, that's all. We'll teach you, Sir, to serve your Country against Law.

As they go off, enter Daring with Soldiers.

Dar. Hah—my General betray'd !—this I suspected. His Men come in, they fall on, releas: Bacon and Fearless, and get Swords. *Whim's* Party put *Whim* and *Whiff* before 'em striking 'em as they endeavour to run on this side or that, and forcing 'em to bear up, they are taken after some fighting.

Fear. Did not the General tell you Rogues, you'd be all hang'd ?

Whiff.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 139

Whiff. Oh Nancy, Nancy, how prophetick are thy Dreams!

Bac. Come lets on ———

Dar. S'death what mean you, Sir?

Bac. As I design'd ——— to present my self to the Council.

Dar. By Heavens we'll follow then to save you from their Treachery, 'twas this that has befallen you that I feared, which made me at a distance follow you.

Bac. Follow me still, but still at such a distance as your Aids may be assisting on all occasions.— *Fearless* go back and bring your Regiment down; and *Daring*, let your Sergeant with his Party guard these Villains to the Council.

[*Ex. Bac. Dar. and Fearless.*]

Whiff. A Pox on your Worship's Plot.

Whim. A Pox of your forwardness to come out of the Hedge. [*Ex. Officers, with Whim. and Whiff.*]

SCENE IV. *The Council-Table.*

Enter Col. Wellman, Col. Downright, Dullman, Timorous, and about seven or eight more seat themselves.

Well. You heard Mr. *Dunce's* opinion, Gentlemen, concerning *Bacon's* coming upon our Invitation. He believes he will come, but I rather think, tho' he be himself undaunted, yet the persuasions of his two Lieutenant-Generals, *Daring* and *Fearless*, may prevent him—Colonel, have you order'd our Men to be in Arms?

Enter a Soldier.

Down. I have, and they'll attend further order on the *Sevana*.

Sol. May it please your Honours, *Bacon* is on his way, he comes unattended by any but his Footmen, and Col. *Fearless*.

Down. Who is this Fellow?

Well. A Spy I sent to watch *Bacon's* Motions.

Sol. But there is a Company of Soldiers in Ambush on this side of the *Sevana* to seize him as he passes by.

Well. That's by no order of the Council.

Omnes.

140 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Omnes. No, no, no order.

Well. Nay, 'twere a good design if true.

Tim. Gad zooks wou'd I had thought on't for my Troop.

Down. I am for no unfair dealing in any extremity.

Enter a Messenger in haste.

Mes. An't please your Honours, the saddest News—— an Ambush being laid for *Bacon*, they rush'd out upon him on the *Sevana*, and after some fighting took him and *Fearless*——

Tim. Is this your sad News——zooks wou'd I had a hand in't.

Brag. When on a sudden, *Daring* and his Party fell in upon us, turn'd the tide——kill'd our Men, and took Captain *Whimsy*, and Captain *Whiff* Prisoners; the rest run away, but *Bacon* fought like a fury.

Tim. A bloody Fellow!

Down. *Whim* and *Whiff*? they deserve Death for acting without order.

Tim. I'm of the Colonel's Opinion, they deserve to hang for't.

Dull. Why, Brother, I thought you had wish'd that the Plot had been yours but now.

Tim. Ay, but the Case is alter'd since that, good Brother.

Well. Now he's exasperated past all hopes of a Reconciliation.

Dull. You must make use of the Statesman's Refuge, wise Dissimulation.

Brag. For all this, Sir, he will not believe but that you mean honourably, and no Persuasions could hinder him from coming, so he has dismiss'd all his Soldiers, and is entering the Town on foot.

Well. What pity 'tis a brave Man should be guilty of an ill Action.

Brag. But the noise of his danger has so won the Hearts of the Mobile, that they increase his Train as he goes, and follow him in the Town like a Victor.

Well. Go wait his coming. [Exit *Brag.*
He grows too popular and must be humbled.

Tim.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 141

Tim. I was ever of your mind, Colonel.

Well, Ay, right or wrong—but what's your Counsel now?

Tim. E'en as it used to be, I leave it to wiser Heads.

Enter Brag.

Brag. Bacon, Sir, is entring.

Tim. Gad zoors, wou'd I were safe in bed.

Dull. Colonel, keep in your Heat, and treat calmly with him.

Well. I rather wish you would all follow me, I'd meet him at the head of all his noisy Rabble, and seize him from the Rout.

Down. What, Men of Authority dispute with Rake-hells! 'tis below us, Sir.

Tim. To stake our Lives and Fortunes against their nothing.

Enter Bacon, after him the Rabble with Staves and Clubs, bringing in Whim. and Whiff bound.

Well. What means this Insolence?—What, Mr. Bacon, do you come in Arms?

Bac. I'd need, Sir, come in Arms, when Men that should be honourable can have so poor Designs to take away my Life.

Well. Thrust out his following Rabble.

1st Rab. We'll not stir till we have our General safe back again.

Bac. Let not your Loves be too officious—but retire—

1st Rab. At your Command we vanish.—

[*The Rabble retire.*]

Bac. I hope you'll pardon me, if in my own defence I seized on these two Murderers.

Down. You did well, Sir, 'twas by no order they acted—stand forth and hear your Sentence—in time of War we need no formal Tryals to hang Knaves that act without order.

Whiff. Oh Mercy, Mercy, Colonel!—'twas Parson Duncce's Plot.

Down. Issue out a Warrant to seize *Duncce* immediately—you shall be carry'd to the Fort to pray.

Whim.

Whim. Oh good your Honour, I never pray'd in all my Life.

Down. From thence drawn upon a Sledge to the place of Execution—where you shall hang till you are dead—and then be cut down and.—

Whim. Oh hold——hold——we shall never be able to endure half this.

Well. I think the Offence needs not so great Punishment; their Crime, Sir, is but equal to your own, acting without Commission.

Bac. 'Tis very well explained Sir,——had I been murder'd by Commission then, the Deed had been approved, and now perhaps I am beholding to the Rabble for my Life.

Well. A fine Pretence to hide a popular Fault, but for this once we pardon them and you.

Bac. Pardon! for what? by Heaven I scorn your Pardon, I've not offended Honour nor Religion.

Well. You have offended both in taking Arms.

Bac. Should I stand by and see my Country ruin'd, my King dishonour'd, and his Subjects murder'd, hear the sad Crys of Widows and of Orphans? you heard it loud, but gave no pitying ear to't, and till the War and Massacre was brought to my own door, my Flocks and Herds surprized, I bore it all with Patience. Is it unlawful to defend my self against a Thief that breaks into my Doors?

Well. And call you this defending of your self?

Bac. I call it doing of my self that right, which upon just demand the Council did refuse me; if my Ambition, as you're pleas'd to call it, made me demand too much, I left my self to you.

Well. Perhaps we thought it did.

Bac. Sir you affront my Birth——I am a Gentleman, and yet my Thoughts were humble——I would have fought under the meanest of your Parasites.

Tim. There's a Bob for us, Brother. [To Dull.

Bac. But still you put me off with Promises——and when compell'd to stir in my Defence I call'd none to my aid,

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 143

aid, and those that came, 'twas their own Wrongs that urg'd them.

Down. 'Tis fear'd Sir, under this Pretence, you aim at Government.

Bac. I scorn to answer to so base an Accusation; the height of my Ambition is to be an honest Subject.

Well. An honest Rebel, Sir——

Bac. You know you wrong me, and 'tis basely urg'd—but this is trifling——here are my Commissions.

[*Throws down Papers, Down. reads.*]

Down. To be General of the Force against the *Indians*, and blank Commissions for his Friends.

Well. Tear them in pieces——are we to be imposed upon? Do ye come in hostile manner to compel us?

Down. Be not too rough, Sir, let us argue with him.

Well. I am resolv'd I will not.

Tim. Then we are all dead Men, Godzoors! he will not give us time to say our Prayers.

Well. We every day expect fresh force from *England*, till then, we of our selves shall be sufficient to make defence against a sturdy Traitor.

Bac. Traitor! S'death Traitor——I defy ye, but that my Honour's yet above my Anger, I'll make you answer me that Traitor dearly. [Rises:

Well. Hah——am I threatned——Guards secure the Rebel. [Guards seize him.

Bac. Is this your honourable Invitation? Go——triumph in your short-liv'd Victory, the next turn shall be mine. [Exeunt Guards with Bac.

A Noise of Fighting——Enter Bacon, Wellman's Guards beat back by the Rabble, Bacon snatches a Sword from one, and keeps back the Rabble, Tim. gets under the Table.

Down. What means this Insolence?

Rab. We'll have our General, and knock that Fellow's Brains out, and hang up Colonel *Wellman*.

All. Ay, ay, hang up *Wellman*.

[*The Rabble seize Well. and Dull. and the rest.*
Dull.

144 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Dull. Hold, hold Gentlemen, I was always for the General.

Rab. Let's barbicu this fat Rogue.

Bac. Be gone, and know your distance to the Council.

[The Rabble let 'em go.]

Well. I'd rather perish by the meanest Hand, than owe my safety poorly thus to Bacon.

[In Rage.]

Bac. If you persist still in that mind I'll leave you, and conquering make you happy against your will.

[Ex. Bacon and Rabble, hollowing a Bacon, a Bacon.]

Well. Oh villanous Cowards! who will trust his Honour with Scycophans so base? Let us to Arms—by Heaven I will not give my Body rest, till I've chastised the boldness of this Rebel.

[Exeunt Well. Down. and the rest, all but Dull. Tim. peeps from under the Table.]

Tim. What is the roistering Hector gone, Brother?

Dull. Ay, ay, and the Devil go with him.

[Looking sadly, Tim. comes out.]

Tim. Was there ever such a Bull of Bashan! Why, what if he should come down upon us and kill us all for Traitors.

Dull. I rather think the Council will hang us all for Cowards—ah—oh—a Drum—a Drum—oh. *[He goes out.]*

Tim. This is the Misery of being Great,

We're sacrific'd to every turn of State. *[Exeunt.]*

ACT III. SCENE I.

A Country Court, a great Table, with Papers, a Clerk writing.

Enter a great many People of all sorts, then Friendly, after him Dullman.

Friend. **H**OW now, Major; what they say Bacon scar'd you all out of the Council yesterday: What say the People?

Dull.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 145

Dull. Say? they curse us all, and drink young *Fright-all's* Health, and swear they'll fight thro Fire and Brimstone for him.

Friend. And to morrow will hollow him to the Gallows, if it were his chance to come there.

Dull. 'Tis very likely: Why I am forced to be guarded to the Court now, the Rabble swore they would *De-Wit* me, but I shall hamper some of 'em. Wou'd the Governour were here to bear the brunt on't, for they call us the evil Counsellors.

Enter Hazard, goes to Friendly.

Here's the young Rogue that drew upon us too, we have Rods in Pifs for him i'faith.

Enter Timorous with Bailiffs, whispers to Dullman, after which to the Bailiffs.

Tim. Godzoors that's he, do your Office.

Bail. We arrest you, Sir, in the King's Name, at the suit of the honourable Justice *Timorous*.

Haz. Justice *Timorous*! who the Devil's he?

Tim. I am the Man, Sir, d'ye see, for want of a better; you shall repent, Guds zoors, your putting of tricks upon Persons of my Rank and Quality.

[*After he has spoke, he runs back as afraid of him.*

Haz. Your Rank and Quality!

Tim. Ay, Sir, my Rank and Quality; first I am one of the honourable Council, next, a Justice of Peace in *Quorum*, Cornet of a Troop of Horse, d'ye see, and Church-warden.

Friend. From whence proceeds this, Mr. Justice? you said nothing of this at *Madam Ranter's* yesterday; you saw him there, then you were good Friends.

Tim. Ay, however I have carried my Body swimmingly before my Mistress, d'ye see, I had Rancour in my Heart, Gads zoors.

Friend. Why, this Gentleman's a Stranger, and but lately come ashore.

Haz. At my first landing I was in company with this Fellow and two or three of his cruel Brethren, where I was affronted by them, some Words pass'd, and I drew—

146 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Tim. Ay, ay, Sir, you shall pay for't,——why——
what, Sir, cannot a civil Magistrate affront a Man, but
he must be drawn upon presently?

Friend. Well, Sir, the Gentleman shall answer your
Suit, and I hope you'll take my Bail for him.

Tim. 'Tis enough—I know you to be a civil Person.

*Timorous and Dullman take their Places on a long Bench
placed behind the Table, to them Whimsy and Whiff,
they seat themselves, then Boozer and two or three
more; who seat themselves: Then enter two, bearing a
Bowl of Punch and a great Ladle or two in it; the
rest of the Stage being fill'd with People.*

Whiff. Brothers, it hath been often mov'd at the Bench,
that a new Punch-Bowl shou'd be provided, and one of
a larger Circumference; when the Bench sits late about
weighty Affairs, oftentimes the Bowl is emptied before
we end.

Whim. A good Motion; Clerk, set it down.

Clerk. Mr. Justice *Boozer*, the Council has order'd you
a Writ of Ease, and dismiss your Worship from the
Bench.

Booz. Me from the Bench, for what?

Whim. The Complaint is, Brother *Boozer*, for drink-
ing too much Punch in the time of hearing Tryals.

Whiff. And that you can neither write nor read, nor
say the Lord's Prayer.

Tim. That your Warrants are like a Brewer's Tally, a
Notch on a Stick; if a special Warrant, then a couple.
Gods zoors, when his Excellency comes he will have no
such Justices.

Booz. Why, Brother, tho I can't read my self, I have
had *Dalton's* Country-Justice read oyer to me two or
three times, and understand the Law. This is your Ma-
lice, Brother *Whiff*, because my Wife does not come to
your Warehouse to buy her Commodities,——but no
matter, to show I have no Malice in my Heart, I drink
your Health.—I care not this, I can turn Lawyer, and
plead at the Board. [*Drinks, all pledge him, and hum.*

Dull.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 147

Dull. Mr. Clerk, come to the Tryals on the Docket.

[*Clerk reads.*
Clerk. The first is between his Worship Justice *Whiff* and one *Grubb*.

Dull. Ay, that *Grubb*'s a common Disturber, Brother, your Cause is a good Cause if well manag'd, here's to't.

[*Drinks.*
Whiff. I thank you, Brother *Dullman*—read my Petition. [*Drinks.*

Cler. The Petition of Captain *Thomas Whiff*, sheweth, That whereas *Gilbert Grubb* calls his Worship's Wife *Ann Whiff* Whore, and saith he will prove it; your Petitioner desires the Worshipful Bench to take it into Consideration, and your Petitioner shall ever pray, &c.—Here's two Witnesses have made Affidavit *viva voce*, an't like your Worships.

Dull. Call *Grubb*.

Cler. *Gilbert Grubb*, come into the Court.

Grub. Here.

Whim. Well, what can you say for your self, Mr. *Grubb*.

Grub. Why, an't like your Worship, my Wife invited some Neighbours Wives to drink a Cagg of Syder: now your Worship's Wife, Madam *Whiff*, being there fuddled, would have thrust me out of doors, and bid me go to my old Whore Madam *Whimsy*, meaning your Worship's Wife. [*To Whimsy.*

Whim. Hah! My Wife called Whore, she's a Jade, and I'll arrest her Husband here—in an Action of Debts.

Tim. Gad zoors, she's no better than she should be, I'll warrant her.

Whiff. Look ye, Brother *Whimsy*, be patient; you know the humour of my *Nancy*, when she's drunk; but when she's sober, she's a civil Person, and shall ask your pardon.

Whim. Let this be done, and I am satisfied. And so here's to you. [*Drinks.*

Dull. Go on to the Trial.

Grub. I being very angry, said indeed, I would prove her a greater Whore than Madam *Whimsy*.

148 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Cler. An't like your Worships, he confesses the Words in open Court.

Grub. Why, an't like your Worships, she has had two Bastards, I'll prove it.

Whiff. Sirrah, Sirrah, that was when she was a Maid, not since I marry'd her; my marrying her made her h nest.

Dull. Let there be an order of Court to sue him for *Scandalum magnatum*.

Tim. Mr. Clerk, let my Cause come next.

Cler. The Defendant's ready, Sir. [Hazard comes to the Board.]

Tim. Brothers of the Bench take notice, that this Hector here coming into Mrs. *Flirt's* Ordinary, where I was with my Brother *Dullman* and Lieutenant *Boozer*; we gave him good Counsel to fall to work: Now my Gentleman here was affronted at this forsooth, and makes no more to do but calls us Scoundrels, and drew his Sword on us; and had not I defended my self by running away, he had murdered me, and assassinated my two Brothers.

Whiff. What Witness have you, Brother?

Tim. Here's Mrs. *Flirt* and her Maid *Nell*,—besides, we may be Witness for one another, I hope, our Words may be taken.

Cler. Mrs. *Flirt* and *Nell* are sworn. [They stand forth.]

Whim. By the Oaths that you have taken, speak nothing but the truth.

Flirt. An't please your Worships, your Honours came to my House, where you found this young Gentleman: and your Honours invited him to drink with your Honours: Where after some opprobrious Words given him, Justice *Dullman*, and Justice *Boozer* struck him over the Head; and after that indeed the Gentleman drew.

Tim. Mark that, Brother, he drew.

Haz. If I did, it was *se defendendo*.

Tim. Do you hear that, Brothers, he did it in defiance.

Haz. Sir, you ought not to sit Judge and Accuser too.

Whiff. The Gentleman's i'th' right, Brother, you cannot do't according to Law.

Tim. Gads zoors, what new tricks, new querks?

Haz.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 149

Haz. Gentlemen take notice, he swears in Court.

Tim. Gads zoors, what's that to you, Sir?

Haz. This is the second time of his swearing.

Whim. What, do you think we are deaf, Sir? Come, come, proceed.

Tim. I desire he may be bound to his Good Behaviour, fin'd, and deliver up his Sword, what say you, Brother?

[*Fogs Dull. who nods.*

Whim. He's asleep, drink to him and waken him,—— you have miss'd the Cause by sleeping, Brother. [*Drinks.*

Dull. Justice may nod, but never sleeps, Brother—— you were at—— Deliver his Sword—— a good Motion, let it be done. [*Drinks.*

Haz. No, Gentlemen, I wear a Sword to right my self.

Tim. That's fine, i'faith, Gads zoors I've worn a Sword this dozen Years, and never cou'd write my self.

Whiff. Ay, 'twou'd be a fine World if Men should wear Swords to right themselves; he that's bound to the Peace shall wear no Sword.

Whim. I say, he that's bound to the Peace ought to wear no Peruke, they may change 'em for black or white, and then who can know them.

Haz. I hope, Gentlemen, I may be allowed to speak for my self.

Whiff. Ay, what can you say for your self, did you not draw your Sword, Sirrah?

Haz. I did.

Tim. 'Tis sufficient, he confesses the Fact, and we'll hear no more.

Haz. You will not hear the Provocation given.

Dull. 'Tis enough, Sir, you drew——

Whim. Ay, ay, 'tis enough, he drew—— let him be fin'd.

Friend. The Gentleman should be heard, he's Kinsman too to Colonel *John Surelove.*

Tim. Hum—— Co'onel *Surelove's* Kinsman.

Whiff. Is he so? nay then all the reason in the World he should be heard, Brothers.

150 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Whim. Come, come, Cornet, you shall be Friends with the Gentleman; this was some drunken bout, I'll warrant you.

Tim. Ha, ha, ha, so it was, Gads zoors.

Whiff. Come, drink to the Gentleman, and put it up.

Tim. Sir, my service to you, I am heartily sorry for what's pass'd, but it was in my drink. [*Drinks.*]

Whim. You hear his Acknowledgment, Sir, and when he's sober he never quarrels. Come, Sir, sit down, my Service to you.

Haz. I beg your excuse, Gentlemen— I have earnest business.

Dull. Let us adjourn the Court, and prepare to meet the Regiments on the *Sevana*. [*All go but Friend.*]

and Hazard.

Haz. Is this the best Court of Judicature your Country affords?

Friend. To give it its due it is not. But how does thy Amour thrive?

Haz. As well as I can wish in so short a time.

Friend. I see she regards thee with kind Eyes, Sighs and Blushes.

Haz. Yes, and tells me I am so like a Brother she had—to excuse her kind concern,—then blushes so prettily, that Gad I cou'd not forbear making a discovery of my Heart.

Friend. Have a care of that, come upon her by slow degrees, for I know she is virtuous;—but come, let's to the *Sevana*, where I'll present you to the two Colonels, *Wellman* and *Downright*, the Men that manage all till the arrival of the Governour. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The Sevana or Heath.*

Enter Wellman, Downright, Boozer, and Officers.

Well. Have you dispatch'd the Scouts, to watch the Motions of the Enemies? I know that *Bacon* is violent and haughty, and will resent our vain Attempts upon him; therefore we must be speedy in prevention.

Down.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 151

Down. What Forces have you raised since our last order?

Booz. Here's a List of 'em, they came but slowly in, till we promised every one a Bottle of Brandy.

Enter Officer and Duncce.

Offi. We have brought Mr. *Duncce* here, as your Honour commanded us; after strict search we found him this Morning in bed with Madam *Flirt*.

Down. No matter, he'll exclaim no less against the Vices of the Flesh the next Sunday.

Duncce. I hope, Sir, you will not credit the Malice of my Enemies.

Well. No more, you are free, and what you counsell'd about the Ambush, was both prudent and seasonable, and perhaps I now wish it had taken effect.

Enter Friend and Hazard.

Friend. I have brought an *English Gentleman* to kiss your Hands, Sir, and offer you his Service, he is young and brave, and Kinsman to Colonel *Surelove*.

Well. Sir you are welcome; and to let you see you are so, we will give you your Kinsman's Command, Captain of a Troop of Horse-Guards, and which I'm sure will be continued to you when the Governour arrives.

Haz. I shall endeavour to deserve the Honour, Sir.

Enter Dull, Tim. Whim. and Whiff, all in Buff, Scarf and Feather.

Down. So, Gentlemen, I see you're in a readiness.

Tim. Readiness! What means he, I hope we are not to be drawn out to go against the Enemy, Major.

Dull. If we are, they shall look a new Major for me.

Well. We were dabating, Gentlemen, what course were best to pursue against this powerful Rebel.

Friend. Why, Sir, we have Forces enough, let's charge him instantly, Delays are dangerous.

Tim. Why, what a damn'd fiery Fellow is this?

Down. But if we drive him to extremities, we fear his siding with the *Indians*.

Dull. Colonel *Downright* has hit it; why should we endanger our Men against a desperate *Termagant*? If he love Wounds and Scars so well, let him exercise on our

Enemies——but if he will needs fall upon us, 'tis then time enough for us to venture our Lives and Fortunes.

Tim. How, we go to *Bacon* ! under favour, I think 'tis his duty to come to us, an you go to that, Gads zoors.

Friend. If he do, 'twill cost you dear, I doubt, Cornet.——I find by our List, Sir, we are four thousand Men.

Tim. Gad zoors, not enough for a Breakfast for that insatiate *Bacon*, and his two Lieutenant Generals *Fearless* and *Daring*.
[*Whiff sits on the Ground with a*

Bottle of Brandy.

Whim. A Morfel, a Morfel.

Well. I am for an attack, what say you, Gentlemen, to an attack ?——What, silent all ? What say you, Major ?

Dull. I say, Sir, I hope my Courage was never in dispute. But, Sir, I am going to marry Colonel *Downright's* Daughter here——and should I be slain in this Battle 'twould break her Heart ;—— besides, Sir, I should lose her Fortune.
[*Speaks big.*

Well. I'm sure here's a Captain will never flinch.

[*To Whim.*

Whim. Who I, an't like your Honour ?

Well. Ay, you.

Whim. Who I ? ha, ha, ha : Why, did your Honour think that I would fight ?

Well. Fight ! yes ; why else do you take Commissions ?

Whim. Commissions ! Oh Lord, O Lord, take Commissions to fight ! ha, ha, ha ; that's a jest, if all that take Commissions should fight——

Well. Why do you bear Arms then ?

Whim. Why, for the Pay ; to be called Captain, noble Captain, to show, to cock and look big, and bluff as I do : to be bow'd to thus as we pass, to domineer and beat our Soldiers : Fight quoth a, ha, ha, ha.

Friend. But what makes you look so simply, Cornet ?

Tim. Why a thing that I have quite forgot, all my Accounts for *England* are to be made up, and I'm undone if they be neglected——else I wou'd not flinch for the stoutest he that wears a Sword——
[*Looking big.*

Down.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 153

Down. What say you, Captain *Whiff*?

[*Whiff almost drunk.*]

Whiff. I am trying, Colonel, what Mettle I'm made on; I think I am valiant, I suppose I have Courage, but I confess 'tis little of the D—— breed, but a little Inspiration from the Bottle, and the leave of my *Nancy*, may do wonders.

Enter a Seaman in haste.

Sea. An't please your Honours, *Frightall's* Officers have seiz'd all the Ships in the River, and rid now round the Shore, and had by this time secur'd the sandy Beach, and landed Men to fire the Town, but that they are high in drink aboard the Ship call'd the Good-Subject; the Master of her sent me to let your Honours know, that a few Men sent to his assistance will surprize them and retake the Ships.

Well. Now, Gentlemen, here is a brave occasion for Emulation——why writ not the Master?

Dull. Ay, had he writ, I had soon been amongst them i'faith; but this is some Plot to betray us.

Sea. Keep me here, and kill me if it be not true.

Down. He says well——there's a Brigantine and a Shallop ready, I'll embark immediately.

Friend. No, Sir, your Presence is here more necessary, let me have the Honour of this Expedition.

Haz. I'll go your Volunteer, *Charles.*

Well. Who else offers to go?

Whim. A mere Trick to kidnap us, by *Bacon*,—if the Captain had writ.

Tim. Ay, ay, if he had writ——

Well. I see you're all base Cowards, and here cashier ye from all Commands and Offices.

Whim. Look ye, Colonel, you may do what you please, but you lose one of the best dress'd Officers in your whole Camp, Sir.

Tim. And in me, such a Head-piece.

Whiff. I'll say nothing, but let the State want me.

Dull. For my part I am weary of weighty Affairs.

[*In this while Well. Down. Friend and Haz. talk.*]

154 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Well. Command what Men you please, but Expedition makes you half a Conqueror. [Ex. *Friend. and Haz.*

Enter another Seaman with a Letter, gives it to Downright, he and Wellman read it.

Dow. Look ye now, Gentlemen, the Master has writ.

Dull. Has he—he might have writ sooner, while I was n Command,—if he had—

Whim. Ay, Major—if he had—but let them miss us.

Well. Colonel, haste with your Men, and reinforce the Beach, while I follow with the Horse;—Mr. *Dunce*, pray let that Proclamation be read concerning *Bacon*, to the Soldiers. [Ex. *Dow. and Well.*

Dun. It shall be done, Sir. Gentlemen how simply you look now.

The Scene opens and discovers a Body of Soldiers.

Tim. Why, Mr. Parson, I have a scruple of Conscience upon me, I am considering whether it be lawful to kill, tho it be in War; I have a great aversion to't, and hope it proceeds from Religion.

Whiff. I remember the Fit took you just so when the *Dutch* besieged us, for you cou'd not then be persuaded to strike a stroke.

Tim. Ay, that was because they were Protestants as we are; but Gads zoors, had they been *Dutch* Papists I had mau'd them: but Conscience.—

Whim. I have been a Justice of Peace this six Years, and never had a Conscience in my Life.

Tim. Nor I neither, but in this damn'd thing of fighting.

Dun. Gentlemen, I am commanded to read the Declaration of the honourable Council to you.

[To the Soldiers.

All. Hum, hum, hum—

Booz. Silence—silence— [Dunce reads.

Dun. By an order of Council, dated *May* the 10th 1670. To all Gentlemen Soldiers, Merchants, Planters, and whom else it may concern. Whereas *Bacon*, contrary to Law and Equity, has to satisfy his own Ambition, taken up Arms with a pretence to fight the *Indians*, but indeed to molest and enslave the whole Colony, and

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 155

to take away their Liberties and Properties; this is to declare, that whoever shall bring this Traitor dead or alive to the Council, shall have three hundred pounds Reward. And so God save the King.

All. A Council, a Council! Hah—— [Hollow.
Enter a Soldier hastily.

Sold. Stand to your Arms, Gentlemen, stand to your Arms, *Bacon* is marching this way.

Dun. Hah—what Numbers has he?

Sold. About a hundred Horse, in his march he has surpriz'd Colonel *Downright*, and taken him Prisoner.

All. Let's fall on *Bacon*——let's fall on *Bacon*, hay. [Hollow.

Booz. We'll hear him speak first——and see what he can say for himself.

All. Ay, ay, we'll hear *Bacon* speak.

[*Dunce pleads with them.*
Tim. Well, Major, I have found a Stratagem shall make us Four the greatest Men in the Colony, we'll surrender our selves to *Bacon*, and say we disbanded on purpose.

Dull. Good ——

Whiff. Why, I had no other design in the World in refusing to fight.

Whim. Nor I, d'ye think I wou'd have excus'd it with the fear of disordering my Cravat-String else.

Dun. Why, Gentlemen, he designs to fire *James Town*, murder you all, and then lie with your Wives; and will you slip this opportunity of seizing him?

Booz. Here's a termagant Rogue, Neighbours—we'll hang the Dog.

All. Ay, ay, hang *Bacon*, hang *Bacon*.

Enter Bacon and Fearless, some Soldiers leading in Downright bound; Bacon stands a while and stares on the Regiments, who are silent all.

Bac. Well, Gentlemen, in order to your fine Declaration, you see I come to render my self.

Dun. How came he to know of our Declaration?

Whiff.

156 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Whiff. Rogues, Rogues among our selves, that inform.

Bac. What, are ye silent all,—not a Man lift his Hand in Obedience to the Council, to murder this Traytor that has expos'd his Life so often for you? Hah, what not for three hundred Pounds?—You see I've left my Troops behind, and come all wearied with the Toils of War, worn out by Summers heats, and Winters cold, march'd tedious Days and Nights thro Bogs and Fens as dangerous as your Clamours, and as faithless,—what tho 'twas to preserve you all in Safety, no matter, you shou'd obey the grateful Council, and kill this honest Man that has defended you.

All. Hum, hum, hum.

Whiff. The General speaks like a Gorgon.

Tim. Like a Cherubin, Man.

Bac. All silent yet—where's that mighty Courage, that cried so loud but now, A Council, a Council? where is your Resolution? cannot three hundred Pounds excite your Valour to seize that Taitor *Bacon* who has bled for you?

All. A Bacon, a Bacon, a Bacon. [Hollow.

Dow. Oh villainous Cowards!—Oh the faithless Multitude!

Bac. What say you, Parson?—you have a forward Zeal.

Dun. I wish my Coat, Sir, did not hinder me from acting as becomes my Zeal and Duty.

Whim. A plaguy rugged Dog,—that Parson——

Bac. *Fearless*, seize me that canting Knave from out the Herd, and next those honourable Officers.

[Points to Dull. *Whim.* *Whiff.* and *Tim.*

Fearless seizes them, and gives them to the Soldiers, and takes the Proclamation from Dunc, and shews Bacon; they read it.

Dull. Seize us, Sir, you shall not need, we laid down our Commissions on purpose to come over to your Honour.

Whiff. We ever lov'd and honour'd your Honour.

Tim.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 157

Tim. So intirely, Sir—that I wish I were safe in *James Town* for your sake, and your Honour were hang'd.

Bac. This fine Piece is of your penning, Parson,—tho' it be countenanc'd by the Council's Names. —Oh Ingratitude! Burn, burn the treacherous *Town*, fire it immediately. —————

Whim. We'll obey you, Sir.

Whiff. Ay, ay, we'll make a Bonfire on't, and drink your Honour's health round about it. — [They offer to go.

Bac. Yet hold, my Revenge shall be more merciful, I ordered that all the Women of Rank shall be seiz'd and brought to my Camp. I'll make their Husbands pay their Ransoms dearly; they'd rather have their Hearts bleed than their Purfes.

Fear. Dear General, let me have the seizing of Colonel *Downright's* Daughter; I would fain be plundering for a Trifle call'd a Maiden-head.

Bac. On pain of Death treat them with all respect; assure them of the Safety of their Honour. Now, all that will follow me, shall find a welcome, and those that will not, may depart in Peace.

All. Ha, a General, a General, a General.

[Some Soldiers go off: Some go to the side of Bacon. Enter *Daring* and Soldiers, with *Chrisante*, *Surelove*, *Mrs. Whim.* and *Mrs. Whiff*, and several other Women.

Bac. Successful *Daring*, welcome, what Prizes have ye?

Dar. The fairest in the World, Sir; I'm not for common Plunder.

Dow. Hah, my Daughter and my Kinswoman! —

Bac. 'Tis not with Women, Sir, nor honest Men like you, that I intend to combat; not their own Parents shall be more indulgent, nor better Safe-guard to their Honours, Sir: But 'tis to save the expence of Blood I sieze on their most valued Prizes.

Dow. But, Sir, I know your wild Lieutenant General has long lov'd my *Chrisante*, and perhaps, will take this time to force her to consent.

Dar.

158 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Dar. I own I have a Passion for *Chrisante*, yet by my General's Life, or her fair self, what now I act is on the score of War, I scorn to force the Maid I do adore.

Bac. Believe me, Ladies, you shall have honourable Treatment here.

Chris. We do not doubt it, Sir, either from you or *Daring*; if he love me, that will secure my Honour; or if he do not, he's too brave to injure me.

Dar. I thank you for your just opinion of me, Madam.

Chris. But, Sir, 'tis for my Father I must plead; to see his reverend Hands in servile Chains; and then perhaps, if stubborn to your Will, his Head must fall a Victim to your Anger.

Daw. No, my good pious Girl, I cannot fear ignoble usage from the General: and if thy Beauty can preserve thy Fame, I shall not mourn in my Captivity.

Bac. I'll ne'er deceive your kind Opinion of me—— Ladies, I hope you're all of that Opinion too.

Sure. If seizing us can advance your Honour, or be of any use considerable to you, I shall be proud of such a Slavery.

Mrs. Whim. I hope, Sir, we shan't be ravish'd in your Camp.

Dar. Fie, *Mrs. Whimsy*, do Soldiers use to ravish?

Mrs. Whiff. Ravish! marry, I fear 'em not, I'd have 'em know, I scorn to be ravish'd by any Man.

Fear. Ay, o' my Conscience, *Mrs. Whiff*, you are too good-natur'd.

Dar. Madam, I hope you'll give me leave to name Love to you, and try by all submissive ways to win your Heart.

Chris. Do your worst, Sir; I give you leave, if you assail me only with your Tongue.

Dar. That's generous and brave, and I'll requite it.

Enter Soldier in haste.

Sol. The Truce being ended, Sir, the *Indians* grow so insolent as to attack us even in our Camp, and have killed several of our Men.

Bac.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 159

Bac. 'Tis time to check their Boldness; *Daring*, haste, draw up our Men in order to give 'em Battel, I rather had expected their Submission.

*The Country now may see what they're to fear,
Since we that are in Arms are not secure.*

[*Exeunt, leading the Ladies.*]

A C T IV. S C E N E I.

A Temple, with an Indian God placed upon it, Priests and Priestesses attending: Enter Indian King on one side attended by Indian Men; the Queen on the other with Women. All bow to the Idol, and divide on each side of the Stage. Then the Musick playing louder, the Priest and Priestesses dance about the Idol with ridiculous Postures, and crying (as for Incantations) thrice repeated, Agah Yerkin, Agah Boah, Sulen Tawaraph, Sulen Tawaraph.

After this soft Musick plays again; then they sing something fine: after which the Priests lead the King to the Altar, and the Priestesses the Queen; they take off little Crowns from their Heads, and offer them at the Altar.

King. [Invoke the God of our Quiocto to declare what the Event shall be of this our last War against the English General. [Soft Musick ceases.

The Musick changes to confused Tunes, to which the Priests and Priestesses dance, antickly singing between, the same Incantation as before; and then dance again, and so invoke

160 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

invoke again alternately: Which Dance ended, a Voice behind the Altar cries, while soft Musick plays,

The *English* General shall be
A Captive to his Enemy ;
And you from all your Toils be freed,
When by your Hand the Foe shall bleed :
And e'er the Sun's swift Course be run,
This mighty Conquest shall be won.

King. I thank the Gods for taking care of us ; prepare new Sacrifice against the Evening when I return a Conqueror, I will my self perform the Office of a Priest.

Queen. Oh, Sir, I fear you'll fall a Victim first.

King. What means *Semernia* ? why are thy Looks so pale ?

Queen. Alas, the Oracles have double meanings, their Sense is doubtful, and their Words Enigmas : I fear, Sir, I cou'd make a truer Interpretation.

King. How, *Semernia* ! by all thy Love I charge thee, as you respect my Life, to let me know your Thoughts.

Queen. Last Night I dream'd a Lyon fell with hunger, spite of your Guards, slew you, and bore you hence.

King. This is thy Sex's fear, and no Interpretation of the Oracle.

Queen. I cou'd convince you farther.

King. Hast thou a Secret thou canst keep from me ? thy Soul a Thought that I must be a Stranger too ? This is not like the Justice of *Semernia* : Come unriddle me the Oracle.

Queen. The *English* General shall be a Captive to his Enemy ; he is so, Sir, already, to my Beauty, he says he languishes for Love of me.

King. Hah ! the General my Rival——but go on——

Queen. And you from all your War be freed : Oh, let me not explain that fatal Line, for fear it mean, you shall be freed by Death.

King. What, when by my Hand the Foe shall bleed ?
——away——it cannot be——

Queen. No doubt, my Lord, you'll bravely sell your Life, and deal some Wounds where you'll receive so many.

King.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 161

King. 'Tis Love, *Semernia*, makes thee dream while waking :

I'll trust the Gods, and am resolv'd for Battel.

Enter an Indian.

Ind. Haste, haste, great Sir, to Arms; *Bacon* with all his Forces is prepar'd, and both the Armies ready to engage.

King. Haste to my General, bid him charge 'em instantly; I'll bring up the Supplies of stout *Teroomians*, those so well skill'd in the envenom'd Arrow, [*Ex. Indian.*—*Semernia*—Words but poorly do express the Griets of parting Lovers—'tis with dying Eyes, and a Heart trembling — thus ——— [*Puts her Hand on his Heart.* they take a heavy leave; — one parting Kiss, and one Love pressing sigh, and then farewell: —but not a long farewell; I shall return victorious to thy Arms—commend me to the Gods, and still remember me. [*Exit.*

Queen. Alas! What pity 'tis I saw the General, before my Fate had given me to the King—But now—like those that change their Gods, my faithless Mind betwixt my two Opinions wavers: while to the Gods my Monarch I commend; my wandring Thoughts in pity of the General makes that Zeal cold, declin'd—ineffectual.— If for the General I implore the Deities, methinks my Prayers should not ascend the Skies, since Honour tells me 'tis an impious Zeal.

*Which way soever my Devotions move,
I am too wretched to be heard above.*

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE II. *Shows a Field of Tents, seen at some distance thro the Trees of a Wood, Drums, Trumpets and the noise of Battel, with hollowing. The Indians are seen with Battel-Axes to retreat fighting from the English, and all go off; when they re-enter immediately, beating back the English, the Indian King at the head of his Men, with Bows and Arrows; Daring at the head of the English: They fight off; the noise continues less loud as more at distance.*

Enter Bacon with his Sword drawn, meets Fearless with his Sword drawn.

Fear. Haste, haste, Sir, to the Entrance of the Wood, *Daring's* engaged past hope of a Retreat, venturing too far, pursuing of the Foe; the King in Ambush, with his poison'd Archers, fell on, and now we are dangerously distressed.

Bac. *Daring* is brave, but he's withal too rash, come on and follow me to his Assistance—— [Goes out.

A hollowing within, the Fight renews; enter the Indians beaten back by Bacon, Daring and Fearless; they fight off; the noise of Fighting continues a while, this still behind the Wood.

Enter Indians flying over the Stage, pursu'd by the King.

King. Turn, turn ye fugitive Slaves, and face the Enemy; Oh Villains, Cowards, deaf to all Command: by Heaven I had my Rival in my view, and aim'd at nothing but my conquering him—now like a Coward I must fly with Cowards, or like a desperate Madman fall, thus singly, midst the numbers. [Follows the Indians.

Enter Bacon enraged with his Sword drawn, Fearless and Daring following him.

Bac. — Where is the King, oh ye perfidious Slaves? how, have you hid him from my just Revenge? —search all
all

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 163

all the Brakes, and Furzes and the Trees, and let him not escape on pain of Death.

Dar. We cannot do Wonders, Sir.

Bac. But you can run away.——

Dar. Yes, when we see occasion——yet——shou'd any but my General tell me so——by Heaven he should find I were no starter.

Bac. Forgive me, I'm mad—the King's escaped, hid like a trembling Slave in some close Ditch, where he will sooner starve than fight it out.

Re-enter Indians running over the Stage, pursued by the King, who shoots them as they fly; some follow him.

King. All's lost—the Day is lost—and I'm betray'd;—
Oh Slaves, that even Wounds can't animate. [*In Rage.*

Bac. The King!

King. The General here! by all the Powers betray'd by my own Men!

Bac. Abandon'd as thou art, I scorn to take thee basely; you shall have Soldiers chance, Sir, for your Life, since Chance so luckily has brought us hither; without more Aids we will dispute the Day: This Spot of Earth bears both our Armies Fates; I'll give you back the Victory I have won, and thus begin a-new on equal Terms.

King. That's nobly said! — the Powers have heard my Wish. You, Sir, first taught me how to use a Sword, which heretofore has served me with Success: But now—'tis for *Semernia* that it draws, a Prize more valued than my Kingdom, Sir——

Bac. Hah, *Semernia*!

King. Your Blushes do betray your Passion for her.

Dar. 'Sdeath, have we fought for this, to expose the Victory to the conquer'd Foe?

Fear. What fight a single Man——our Prize already.

King. Not so, young Man, while I command a Dart.

Bac. Fight him! by Heaven no reason shall dissuade me, and he that interrupts me is a Coward; whatever be my Fate, I do command ye to let the King pass freely to his Tents.

Dar. The Devil's in the General.

Fear.

164 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Fear. S'death his Romantic Humour will undo us.

[*They fight and pause.*]

King. You fight as if you meant to outdo me this way, as you have done in Generosity.

Bac. You're not behind hand with me, Sir, in courtesy : Come, here's to set us even— [Fight again.]

King. You bleed apace.

Bac. You've only breath'd a Vein, and given me new Health and Vigour by it. [They fight again, Wounds on both sides, the King staggers ; Bacon takes him in his Arms ; the King drops his Sword.]

How do you, Sir ?

King. Like one——that's hovering between Heaven and Earth ; I'm——mounting——somewhere——upwards——but giddy with my flight,—I know not where.

Bac. Command my Surgeons,——instantly——make haste ; Honour returns, and Love all bleeding's fled.

[*Ex. Fearless.*]

King. Oh *Semernia*, how much more Truth had thy Divinity than the Predictions of the flattering Oracles ! Commend me to her—I know you'll——visit——your fair Captive, Sir, and tell her——oh——but Death prevents the rest. [Dies.]

Enter Fearless.

Bac. He's gone——and now, like *Cæsar*, I could weep over the Hero I my self destroyed.

Fear. I'm glad for your repose I see him there—'twas a mad hot-brain'd Youth, and so he died.

Bac. Come bear him on your Shoulders to my Tent, from whence with all the solemn State we can, we will convey him to his own Pavilion.

Enter a Soldier.

Sol. Some of our Troops pursuing of the Enemy even to their Temples, which they made the Sanctuary, finding the Queen at her Devotion there with all her *Indian Ladies*, I'd much ado to stop their violent Rage from setting fire to the holy Pile.

Bac. Hang 'em immediately that durst attempt it, while I my self will fly to rescue her.

[*Goes out, they bear off the King's Body ; Ex. all.*]

Enter

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 165

Enter Whimsy, pulling in Whiff, with a Halter about his Neck.

Whim. Nay I'm resolv'd to keep thee here till his Honour the General comes.—What, to call him Traitor, and run away after he had so generously given us our freedom, and list'd us Cadees for the next Command that fell in his Army—I'm resolv'd to hang thee——

Whiff. Wilt thou betray and peach thy Friend? thy Friend that kept thee Company all the while thou wert a Prisoner——drinking at my own charge——

Whim. No matter for that, I scorn Ingratitude, and therefore will hang thee — but as for thy drinking with me—I scorn to be behind-hand with thee in Civility, and therefore here's to thee.

{ Takes a Bottle of Brandy out of his Pocket, Drinks.

Whiff. I can't drink,

Whim. A certain sign thou wo't be hanged.

Whiff. You us'd to be o' my side when a Justice, let the Cause be how it wou'd. *[Weeps.*

Whim. Ay—when I was a Justice I never minded Honesty, but now I'll be true to my General, and hang thee to be a great Man.—

Whiff. If I might but have a fair Trial for my Life—

Whim. A fair Trial!—come I'll be thy Judge——and if thou can't clear thy self by Law, I'll acquit thee: Sirrah, Sirrah, what canst thou say for thy self for calling his Honour Rebel? *[Sits on a Drum-head.*

Whiff. 'Twas when I was drunk, an't like your Honour.

Whim. That's no Plea; for if you kill a Man when you are sober, you must be hanged when you are drunk. Hast thou any thing else to say for thy self, why Sentence may not pass upon thee?

Whiff. I desire the Benefit of the Clergy.

Whim. The Clergy! I never knew any body that ever did benefit by 'em; why thou canst not read a word.

Whiff. Transportation then ——

Whim. It shall be to *England* then——but hold——who's this? *[Dullman creeping from a Bush.*

Dull. So the Danger's over, I may venture out——
Pox on't I wou'd not be in this fear again, to be Lord
Chief

166 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Chief Justice of our Court. Why how now, Cornet? — what, in dreadful Equipage? Your Battle-Ax bloody, with Bow and Arrows.

Enter Timorous with Battle-Ax, Bow and Arrows, and Feathers on his Head.

Tim. I'm in the posture of the times, Major—I cou'd not be idle where so much Action was; I'm going to present my self to the General, with these Trophies of my Victory here—

Dull. Victory — what Victory—did not I see thee creeping out of yonder Bush, where thou wert hid all the Fight—stumble on a dead *Indian*, and take away his Arms?

Tim. Why, didst thou see me?

Dull. See thee, ay—and what a fright thou wert in, till thou wert sure he was dead.

Tim. Well, well, that's all one—Gad zoors if every Man that passes for valiant in a Battel, were to give an account how he gained his Reputation, the World wou'd be but thinly stock'd with Heroes; I'll say he was a great War-Captain, and that I kill'd him hand to hand, and who can disprove me?

Dull. Disprove thee—why that pale Face of thine, that has so much of the Coward in't.

Tim. Shaw, that's with loss of Blood—Hah I am overheard I doubt—who's yonder— [*Sees Whim. and Whiff.*] how, Brother *Whiff* in a Hempen Crevat-string.

Whim. He call'd the General Traitor, and was running away, and I'm resolv'd to peach.

Dull. Hum—and one Witness will stand good in Law, in case of Treason—

Tim. Gads zoors, in case of Treason, he'll be hang'd if it be proved against him, were there ne'er a Witness at all; but he must be tried by a Council of War, Man—Come, come, let's disarm him— [*They take away his*

Arms, and pull a Bottle of Brandy out of his Pocket.

Whiff. What, I hope you will not take away my Brandy, Gentlemen, my last comfort.

Tim. Gads zoors, it's come in good time—we'll drink it off, here Major— [*Drinks, Whiff takes him aside.*

Whiff.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 167

Whiff. Hark ye Cornet—you are my good Friend, get this matter made up before it comes to the General.

Tim. But this is Treason, Neighbour.

Whiff. If I hang—I'll declare on the Ladder how you kill'd your War-Captain.

Tim. Come Brother *Whimsy*—we have been all Friends and loving Magistrates together, let's drink about, and think no more of this Business.

Dull. Ay, ay, if every sober Man in the Nation should be called to account of the Treason he speaks in's Drink, the Lord have mercy upon us all.—Put it up—and let us, like loving Brothers, take an honest Resolution to run away together; for this same *Frightall* minds nothing but Fighting.

Whim. I'm content, provided we go all to the Council, and tell them (to make our Peace) we went in obedience to the Proclamation, to kill *Bacon*, but the Traitor was so strongly guarded we could not effect it: but mum—who's here?—

Enter Ranter and Jenny, as Man and Footman.

Rant. Hah our four reverend Justices—I hope the Blockheads will not know me—Gentlemen, can you direct me to Lieutenant General *Daring's* Tents?

Whiff. Hum, who the Devil's this?—that's he you see coming this way. 'Sdeath, yonder's *Daring*—let's slip away before he advances. [*Exeunt all but Ran. and Jen.*]

Jen. I am scar'd with those dead Bodies we have pass'd over; for God's sake, Madam, let me know your design in coming.

Rant. Why, now I tell thee—my damn'd mad Fellow *Daring*, who has my Heart and Soul, loves *Chrisante*, has stolen her, and carried her away to his Tents; she hates him, while I am dying for him.

Jen. Dying, Madam! I never saw you melancholy.

Rant. Pox on't no; why should I sigh and whine, and make my self an *Afs*, and him conceited? no, instead of snivelling I am resolved—

Jen. What, Madam?

Rant. Gad to beat the Rascal, and bring off *Chrisante*.

Jen.

168 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Jen. Beat him, Madam! what, a Woman beat a Lieutenant-General?

Rant. Hang 'em, they get a name in War from Command, not Courage; but how know I but I may fight? Gad I have known a Fellow kick'd from one end of the Town to t'other, believing himself a Coward; at last forced to fight, found he could; got a Reputation, and bullied all he met with; and got a Name, and a great Commission.

Jen. But if he should kill you, Madam.

Ran. I'll take care to make it as comical a Duel as the best of 'em; as much in love as I am, I do not intend to die its Martyr.

Enter Daring and Fearless.

Fear. Have you seen *Chrisante* since the Fight?

Dar. Yes, but she is still the same, as nice and coy as Fortune, when she's courted by the wretched; yet she denies me so obligingly, she keeps my Love still in its humble Calm.

Ran. Can you direct me, Sir, to one *Daring's* Tent?

[Sullenly.]

Dar. One *Daring!*—he has another Epithet to his Name.

Ran. What's that, Rascal, or Coward?

Dar. Hah, which of thy Stars, young Man, has sent thee hither, to find that certain Fate they have decreed?

Ran. I know not what my Stars have decreed, but I shall be glad if they have ordain'd me to fight with *Daring*:—by thy concern thou shou'dst be he.

Dar. I am, prithee who art thou?

Ran. Thy Rival, tho newly arrived from *England*, and came to marry fair *Chrisante*, whom thou hast ravish'd, for whom I hear another Lady dies.

Dar. Dies for me?

Ran. Therefore resign her fairly—or fight me fairly—

Dar. Come on Sir—but hold—before I kill thee, prithee inform me who this dying Lady is?

Ran. Sir I owe ye no Courtesy, and therefore will do you none by telling you—come Sir, for *Chrisante*—draw.

[They offer to fight, Fearless steps in.]

Fear.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 169

Fear. Hold——what mad Frolick's this?——Sir, you fight for one you never saw [*to Ranter.*] and you for one that loves you not. [*To Dar.*]

Dar. Perhaps she'll love him as little.

Ran. Gad put it to the Trial, if you dare—if thou be'st generous, bring me to her, and whom she does neglect shall give the other place.

Dar. That's fair, put up thy Sword—I'll bring thee to her instantly. [*Exeunt.*]

S C E N E, *A Tent.*

Enter Chrisante and Surelove.

Chris. I'm not so much afflicted for my Confinement, as I am that I cannot hear of *Friendly.*

Sure. Art not persecuted with *Daring*?

Chris. Not at all; tho he tells me daily of his Passion, I rally him, and give him neither Hope nor Despair,——he's here.

Enter Daring, Fear, Rant, and Jenny.

Dar. Madam, the Complaisance I show in bringing you my Rival, will let you see how glad I am to oblige you every way.

Ran. I hope the Danger I have expos'd my self to for the Honour of kissing your Hand, Madam, will render me something acceptable——here are my Credentials——

[*Gives her a Letter.*]

Chrisante reads.

Dear Creature, I have taken this Habit to free you from an impertinent Lover, and to secure the damn'd Rogue Daring to my self: receive me as sent by Colonel Surelove from England to marry you——favour me——no more——

Yours, Ranter.

—Hah *Ranter*? [*Aside.*] —Sir, you have too good a Character from my Cousin Colonel *Surelove*, not to receive my Welcome. [*Gives Surelove the Letter.*]

170 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Ran. Stand by General— [*Pushes away Daring, looks big, and takes Chrifante by the Hand, and kisses it.*]

Dar. 'Sdeath, Sir, there's room enough—at first fight so kind? Oh Youth, Youth and Impudence, what Temptations are you to villanous Woman?

Chris. I confess, Sir, we Women do not love these rough fighting Fellows, they're always scaring us with one Broil or other.

Dar. Much good may it do you with your tame Coxcomb.

Ran. Well, Sir, then you yield the Prize?

Dar. Ay Gad, were she an Angel, that can prefer such a callow Fop as thou before a Man—take her and domineer. [*They all laugh.*]

—'Sdeath am I grown ridiculous?

Fear. Why hast thou not found the Jest? by Heaven 'tis *Ranter*, 'tis she that loves you; carry on the humour. [*Aside.* Faith, Sir, if I were you, I wou'd divorce my self to Madam *Ranter*.

Chris. Ay, she's a fit Wife for you, she'll fit your Humour.

Dar. Ranter—Gad I'll sooner marry a She-Bear, unless for a Penance for some horrid Sin; we should be eternally challenging one another to the Field, and ten to one she beats me there; or if I should escape there, she wou'd kill me with drinking.

Ran. Here's a Rogue—does your Country abound with such Ladies?

Dar. The Lord forbid, half a dozen wou'd ruin the Land, debauch all the Men, and scandalize all the Women.

Fear. No matter, she's rich.

Dar. Ay, that will make her insolent.

Fear. Nay, she's generous too.

Dar. Yes, when she's drunk, and then she'll lavish all.

Ran. A pox on him how he vexes me.

Dar. Then such a Tongue—she'll rail and smoke till she choke again; then six Gallons of Punch hardly recovers her, and never but then is she good-natur'd.

Ran. I must lay him on—

Dar.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 171

Dar. There's not a Blockhead in the Country that has not——

Ran. What——

Dar. Been drunk with her.

Ran. I thought you had meant something else, Sir.
[*In huff.*]

Dar. Nay—as for that—I suppose there is no great difficulty.

Ran. 'Sdeath, Sir, you lye—and you are a Son of a Whore.
[*Draws and fences with him, and he runs back round the Stage.*]

Dar. Hold——hold Virago—dear Widow hold, and give me thy hand.

Ran. Widow!

Dar. 'Sdeath I° knew thee by instinct, Widow, tho I seemed not to do so, in revenge for the Trick put on me in telling me a Lady dy'd for me.

Ran. Why such a one there is, perhaps she may dwindle forty or fifty Years——or so—but will never be her own Woman again, that's certain.

Sure. This we are all ready to testify, we know her.

Chris. Upon my Life, 'tis true.

Dar. Widow, I have a shreud Suspicion, that you your self may be this dying Lady.

Ran. Why so, Coxcomb?

Dar. Because you took such Pains to put your self into my hands.

Ran. Gad if your Heart were but half so true as your Guess, we should conclude a Peace before *Bacon* and the Council will—besides, this thing whines for *Friendly*, and there's no hopes.
[*To Chrisante.*]

Dar. Give me thy Hand, Widow, I am thine—and so entirely, I will never—be drunk out of thy Company:—*Dunce* is in my Tent,——prithee let's in and bind the Bargain.

Ran. Nay, faith, let's see the Wars at an end first.

Dar. Nay, prithee take me in the humour, while thy Breeches are on—for I never lik'd thee half so well in Petticoats.

Ran. Lead on General, you give me good incouragement to wear them.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V. SCENE I.

The Sevana in sight of the Camp; the Moon rises.

Enter Friendly, Hazard and Boozer, and a Party of Men.

Friend. WE are now in sight of the Tents.
Booz. Is not this a rash Attempt, Gentlemen, with so small Force to set upon *Bacon's* whole Army?

Haz. Oh, they are drunk with Victory and Wine; there will be nought but revelling to night.

Friend. Would we could learn in what Quarter the Ladies are lodg'd, for we have no other business but to release them——But hark——who comes here?

Booz. Some Scouts, I fear, from the Enemy.

Enter Dull, Tim, Whim, and Whiff, creeping as in the dark.

Friend. Let's shelter ourselves behind yonder Trees——lest we be surpriz'd.

Tim. Wou'd I were well at home——Gad zoors, if e'er you catch me a Cadeeing again, I'll be content to be set in the fore-front of the Battle for Hawks-Meat.

Whim. Thou'rt afraid of every Bush.

Tim. Ay, and good reason too: Gad zoors, there may be Rogues hid——prithee, Major, do thou advance.

Dull. No, no, go on——no matter of Ceremony in these cases of running away. [*They advance.*]

Friend. They approach directly to us, we cannot escape them——their numbers are not great——let us advance.

[*They come up to them.*]

Tim. Oh! I am annihilated.

Whiff. Some of *Frightall's* Scouts, we are lost Men.

[*They push each other foremost.*]

Friend. Who goes there?

Whim.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 173

Whim. Oh, they'll give us no Quarter; 'twas long of you, Cornet, that we ran away from our Colours.

Tim. Me—'twas the Major's Ambition here—to make himself a great Man with the Council again.

Dull. Pox o' this Ambition, it has been the ruin of many a gallant Fellow.

Whiff. If I get home again, the height of mine shall be to top Tobacco; would I'ad some Brandy.

Tim. Gad zoors, would we had, 'tis the best Armour against Fear—hum—I hear no body now——prithee advance a little.

Whim. What, before a Horse-Officer?

Friend. Stand, on your Lives——

Tim. Oh, 'tis impossible——I'm dead already.

Friend. What are ye?—speak—or I'll shoot.

Whim. Friends to thee,——who the Devil are we Friends to?

Tim. E'en who please you, Gad zoors.

Friend. Hah—Gad zoors—who's there, *Timorous*?

Tim. Hum—I know no such Scoundrel—[*Gets behind.*

Dull. Hah——that's *Friendly's* Voice.

Friend. Right——thine's that of *Dullman*——
who's with you?

Dull. Only *Timorous*, *Whimsy* and *Whiff*, all valiantly running away from the Arch-Rebel that took us Prisoners.

Haz. Can you inform us where the Ladies are lodg'd?

Dull. In the hither Quarter, in *Daring's* Tent; you'll know them by Lanthorns on every corner——there was never better time to surprize them——for this day *Daring's* married, and there's nothing but Dancing and Drinking.

Haz. Married! to whom?

Dull. That I ne'er enquir'd.

Friend. 'Tis to *Chrisante*, Friend——and the Reward of my Attempt is lost. Oh, I am mad, I'll fight away my Life, and my Despair shall yet do greater Wonders, than even my Love could animate me to. Let's part our Men, and beset his Tents on both sides.

[*Friendly* goes out with a Party.]

Haz. Come, Gentlemen, let's on——

174 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Whiff. On, Sir,——we on, Sir?——

Haz. Ay, you on, Sir——to redeem the Ladies.

Whiff. Oh, Sir, I am going home for Money to redeem my Nancy.

Whim. So am I, Sir.

Tim. I thank my Stars I am a Batchelor.— Why, what a Plague is a Wife?

Haz. Will you march forward?

Dull. We have achiev'd Honour enough already, in having made our Campaign here—— [Looking big.

Haz. 'Sdeath, but you shall go——put them in the front, and prick them on——if they offer to turn back, run them thro.

Tim. Oh, horrid—— [The Soldiers prick them on with their Swords.

Whiff. Oh Nancy, thy Dream will yet come to pass.

Haz. Will you advance, Sir? [Pricks Whiff.

Whiff. Why so we do, Sir; the Devil's in these fighting Fellows. [Exit.

An Alarm at a distance.

Within. To Arms, to Arms, the Enemy's upon us.

A Noise of Fighting, after which enters Friendly with his Party, retreating and fighting from Daring and some Soldiers, Ranter fighting like a Fury by his side, he putting her back in vain; they fight out. Re-enter Daring and Friendly all bloody. Several Soldiers enter with Flambeaux.

Dar. Now, Sir——what Injury have I ever done you, that you should use this Treachery against me?

Friend. To take advantage any way in War, was never counted Treachery——and had I murder'd thee, I had not paid thee half the Debt I owe thee.

Dar. You bleed too much to hold too long a Parley——come to my Tent, I'll take a charitable care of thee.

Friend. I scorn thy Courtesy, who against all the Laws of Honour and of Justice, hast ravish'd innocent Ladies.

Dar. Sir, your upbraiding of my Honour shall never make me forfeit it, or esteem you less——Is there a Lady here you have a Passion for?

Friend.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 175

Friend. Yes, on a nobler score than you darest own.

Dar. To let you see how you're mistaken, Sir, who'er that Lady be whom you affect, I will resign, and give you both your Freedoms.

Friend. Why, for this Courtesy, which shows thee brave, in the next fight I'll save thy Life to quit the Obligation.

Dar. I thank you, Sir;—come to my Tent,——and when we've dress'd your Wounds, and yielded up the Ladies, I'll give you my Pass-port for your Safe-Conduct back, and tell your Friends i'th' Town, we'll visit them i'th' Morning.

Friend. They'll meet you on your way, Sir——

Dar. Come my young Soldier, now thou'lt won my Soul.

An Alarm beats : Enter at another Passage Boozer with all the Ladies ; they pass over the Stage, while Hazard and Downright beat back a Party of Soldiers. Dull, Tim, Whim, and Whiff, prick'd on by their Party to fight, lay about them like Madmen. Bacon, Fearless and Daring come in, rescue their Men, and fight out the other Party, some falling dead. Bacon, Fearless and Daring return tired, with their Swords drawn. Enter Soldier running.

Sol. Return, Sir, where your Sword will be more useful—a Party of *Indians*, taking advantage of the Night, have set fire on your Tents, and borne away the Queen.

Bac. Hah, the Queen! By Heaven this Victory shall cost them dear ; come, let us fly to rescue her. [*Goes out.*]

SCENE changes to *Wellman's Tent.*

Enter Wellman, Bragg, Grubb, and Officers.

Well. I cannot sleep, my Impatience is so great to engage this haughty Enemy, before they have reposed their weary Limbs——Is not yon ruddy Light the Morning's dawn ?

Brag. 'Tis, and please your Honour.

Well. Is there no News of *Friendly* yet, and *Hazard* ?

Brag. Not yet—'tis thought they left the Camp to night, with some design against the Enemy.

Well. What Men have they?

Bragg. Only *Boozer's* Party, Sir.

Well. I know they are brave, and mean to surprize me with some handsome Action.

Enter Friendly.

Friend. I ask a thousand Pardons, Sir, for quitting the Camp without your leave.

Well. Your Conduct and your Courage cannot err; I see thou'st been in Action by thy Blood.

Friend. Sir, I'm ashamed to own these slender Wounds, since without more my luck was to be taken, while *Hazard* did alone effect the Business, the rescuing of the Ladies.

Well. How got ye Liberty?

Friend. By *Daring's* Generosity, who sends ye word he'll visit you this Morning.

Well. We are prepared to meet him.

Enter Down. *Hazard, Ladies, Whim. Whiff, Dullman, Tim. looking big.* *Well. embraces Down.*

Well. My worthy Friend, how am I joyed to see you?

Down. We owe our Liberties to these brave Youths, who can do Wonders when they fight for Ladies.

Tim. With our assistance, Ladies.

Whim. For my part I'll not take it as I have done; Gad I find, when I am damnable angry, I can beat both Friend and Foe.

Whiff. When I fight for my *Nancy* here—adsfish I'm a Dragon.

Mrs. Whiff. Lord, you need not have been so hasty.

Friend. Do not upbraid me with your Eyes, *Chrisante*; but let these Wounds assure you I endeavour'd to serve you, tho *Hazard* had the Honour on't.

Well. But, Ladies, we'll not expose you in the Camp, —a Party of our Men shall see you safely conducted to *Madam Surelove's*; 'tis but a little Mile from our Camp.

Friend. Let me have that honour, Sir.

Chris.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 177

Chris. No, I conjure you let your Wounds be dress'd; obey me if you love me, and *Hazard* shall conduct us home.

Well. He had the Toil, 'tis fit he have the Recompence.

Whiff. He the Toil, Sir! what, did we stand for Cyphers?

Whim. The very appearance I made in the front of the Battel, aw'd the Enemy.

Tim. Ay, ay, let the Enemy say how I maul'd 'em—but Gads zoors, I scorn to brag.

Well. Since you've regain'd your Honour so gloriously, I restore you to your Commands, you lost by your seeming Cowardice.

Dull. Valour is not always in humour, Sir.

Well. Come, Gentlemen, since they've resolv'd to engage us, let's set our Men in order to receive 'em.

[*Exeunt all but the four Justices.*]

Tim. Our Commissions again—you must be bragging, and see what comes on't; I was modest ye see, and said nothing of my Prowess.

Whiff. What a Devil does the Colonel think we are made of Iron, continually to be beat on the Anvil?

Whim. Look, Gentlemen, here's two Evils——if we go we are dead Men; if we stay we are hang'd——and that will disorder my Crevat-string:——therefore the least Evil is to go——and set a good Face on the matter, as I do——

[*Goes out singing.*]

S C E N E, *A thick Wood.*

Enter Queen dress'd like an Indian Man, with a Bow in her Hand, and Quiver at her Back; Anaria her Confident disguis'd so too; and about a dozen Indians led by Cavarro.

Queen. I tremble yet, dost think we're safe, *Cavarro*?

Cav. Madam, these Woods are intricate and vast, and 'twill be difficult to find us out—or if they do, this Habit will secure you from the fear of being taken.

178 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Queen. Dost think if *Bacon* find us, he will not know me? Alas, my Fears and Blushes will betray me.

Ana. 'Tis certain, Madam, if we stay we perish; for all the Wood's surrounded by the Conqueror.

Queen. Alas, 'tis better we should perish here, than stay to expect the Violence of his Passion, to which my Heart's too sensibly inclin'd.

Ana. Why do you not obey its Dictates then? why do you fly the Conqueror?

Queen. Not fly—not fly the Murderer of my Lord?

Ana. What World, what Resolution can preserve you? and what he cannot gain by soft Admission, Force will at last o'ercome.

Queen. I wish there were in Nature one excuse, either by Force or Reason to compel me:—For Oh *Anaria*—I adore this General;—take from my Soul a Truth—till now conceal'd—at twelve Years old—at the *Pauwomungian* Court, I saw this Conqueror. I saw him young and gay as new-born Spring, glorious and charming as the Mid-day's Sun; I watch'd his Looks, and listned when he spoke, and thought him more than mortal.

Ana. He has a graceful Form.

Queen. At last a fatal Match concluded was between my Lord and me; I gave my Hand, but oh how far my Heart was from consenting, the angry Gods are Witness.

Ana. 'Twas pity.

Queen. Twelve tedious Moons I pass'd in silent Languishment; Honour endeavouring to destroy my Love, but all in vain: for still my Pain return'd whenever I beheld my Conqueror; but now when I consider him as Murderer of my Lord—[*Fiercely.*] I sigh and wish—some other fatal Hand had given him his Death.—But now there's a necessity, I must be brave and overcome my Heart: What if I do? ah, whither shall I fly? I have no *Amazonian* Fire about me, all my Artillery is Sighs and Tears, the Earth my Bed, and Heaven my Canopy. [Weeps. [Noise of Fighting.

Had, we are surpriz'd; Oh, whither shall I fly? And yet methinks a certain trembling Joy, spite of my Soul, spite

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 179

Spite of my boasted Honour, runs shivering round my Heart.

Enter an Indian.

Ind. Madam, your Out-guards are surpriz'd by *Bacon*, who hews down all before him, and demands the Queen with such a Voice, and Eyes so fierce and angry, he kills us with his Looks.

Cav. Draw up your poison'd Arrows to the head, and aim them at his Heart, sure some will hit.

Queen. Cruel *Cavaro*,——wou'd 'twere fit for me to contradict thy Justice. [*Aside.*

Bac. within. The Queen, ye Slaves, give me the Queen, and live!

He enters furiously, beating back some Indians; Cavaro's Party going to shoot, the Queen runs in.

Queen. Hold, hold, I do command ye.

[Bacon flies on 'em as they shoot and miss him, fights like a Fury, and wounds the Queen in the Disorder; beats them all out.]

—hold thy commanding Hand, and do not kill me, who wou'd not hurt thee to regain my Kingdom——

[He snatches her in his Arms, she reels.]

Bac. Hah—a Woman's Voice,—what art thou? Oh my Fears!

Queen. Thy Hand has been too cruel to a Heart—whose Crime was only tender Thoughts for thee.

Bac. The Queen! What is't my sacrilegious Hand has done?

Queen. The noblest Office of a gallant Friend, thou'st sav'd my Honour, and hast given me Death.

Bac. Is't possible! ye unregarding Gods, is't possible?

Queen. Now I may love you without Infamy, and please my dying Heart by gazing on you.

Bac. Oh I am lost—for ever lost—I find my Brain turn with the wild confusion.

Queen. I faint—oh lay me gently on the Earth.

[Lays her down.]

Bac. Who waits—— *[Turns in Rage to his Men.]*
Make of the Trophies of the War a Pile, and set it all on fire,

180 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

fire, that I may leap into consuming Flames—while all my Tents are burning round about me. *[Wildly.]*

Oh thou dear Prize, for which alone I toil'd !

[Weeps, and lies down by her.]

Enter Fearless with his Sword drawn.

Fear. Hah, on the Earth—how do you, Sir ?

Bac. What wou'dst thou ?

Fear. *Wellman* with all the Forces he can gather attacks us even in our very Camp; assist us, Sir, or all is lost.

Bac. Why, prithee let him make the World his Prize, I have no business with the Trifle now; it contains nothing that's worth my care, since my fair Queen—is dead—and by my hand.

Queen. So charming and obliging is thy Moan, that I cou'd wish for Life to recompense it; but oh, Death falls—all cold upon my Heart, like Mildews on the Blossoms.

Fear. By Heaven, Sir, this Love will ruin all—rise, rise, and save us yet.

Bac. Leave me, what e'er becomes of me—lose not thy share of Glory—prithee leave me.

Queen. Alas, I fear thy Fate is drawing on, and I shall shortly meet thee in the Clouds; till then—farewel—even Death is pleasing to me, while thus I find it in thy Arms— *[Dies.]*

Bac. There ends my Race of Glory and of Life.

[An Alarm at distance—continues a while.]

Bac. Hah—Why should I idly whine away my Life, since there are nobler ways to meet with Death? Up, up, and face him then—Hark—there's the Soldier's Knell—and all the Joys of Life—with thee I bid farewell— *[Goes out. The Indians bear off the Body of the Queen.]*

The Alarm continues: Enter Downright, Wellman, and others, Swords drawn.

Well. They fight like Men possess'd—I did not think to have found them so prepar'd.

Dow.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 181

Dow. They've good Intelligence—but where's the Rebel?

Well. Sure's he's not in the Fight; Oh that it were my happy chance to meet him, that while our Men look on, we might dispatch the business of the War—Come, let's fall in again, now we have taken breath. [*They go out.*]

Enter Daring and Fearless hastily, with their Swords drawn; meet Whim. Whiff, with their Swords drawn, running away.

Dar. How now, whither away? [*In anger.*]

Whim. Hah, *Daring* here—we are pursuing of the Enemy, Sir; stop us not in the pursuit of Glory.

Dar. Stay!—I have not seen you in my Ranks to day. [*Offers to go.*]

Whiff. Lord, does your Honour take us for Starters?

Fear. Yes, Sirrah, and believe you are now rubbing off—confess, or I'll run you thro.

Whiff. Oh mercy, Sir, mercy, we'll confess.

Whim. What will you confess? we were only going behind yon Hedge to untruss a point; that's all.

Whiff. Ay, your Honours will smell out the truth, if you keep us here long.

Dar. Here, carry them Prisoners to my Tent.

[*Ex. Soldiers with Whim, and Whiff.*]

Enter Ranter without a Hat, and Sword drawn.

Daring angrily goes the other way.

Ran. A Pox of all ill luck, how came I to lose *Daring* in the fight? Ha—who's here? *Dullman* and *Timorous* dead—the Rogues are Counterfeits.—I'll see what Moveables they have about them, all's lawful Prize in War.

[*Takes their Money, Watches and Rings; goes out.*]

Tim. What rob the dead?—why, what will this villainous World come to? [*Clashing of Swords, just as they were going to rise.*]

Enter Hazard bringing in Ranter.

Haz. Thou cou'dst expect no other Fate, young Man; thy Hands are yet too tender for a Sword.

Ran. Thou look'st like a good-natur'd Fellow, use me civilly, and *Daring* shall ransom me.

Haz.

182 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Haz. Doubt not a generous Treatment. [Goes out.]

Dull. So, the Coast is clear, I desire to move my Quarters to some place of more safety—

[They rise and go off.]

Enter Wellman and Soldiers hastily.

Well. 'Twas this way Bacon fled.

Five hundred Pound for him who finds the Rebel. [Go out.]

SCENE changes to a Wood.

Enter Bacon and Fearless, with their Swords drawn, all bloody.

Bac. 'Tis just, ye Gods ! that when ye took the Prize for which I fought, Fortune and you should all abandon me.

Fear. Oh fly, Sir, to some place of safe retreat, for there's no mercy to be hop'd if taken. What will you do ? I know we are pursu'd; by Heaven I will not die a shameful Death.

Bac. Oh, they'll have pity on thy Youth and Bravery, but I'm above their Pardon. [A noise is heard.]

Within. This way—this way—hay halloo.

Fear. Alas, Sir, we're undone—I'll see which way they take. [Exit.]

Bac. So near ! Nay, then to my last shift.

[Undoes the Point of his Sword.]

Come, my good Poison, like that of Hannibal ; long I have born a noble Remedy for all the Ills of Life.

[Takes Poison.]

I have too long surviv'd my Queen and Glory, those two bright Stars that influenc'd my Life are set to all Eternity.

[Lies down.]

Enter Fearless, runs to Bacon, and looks on his Sword.

Fear. —Hah—what have ye done ?

Bac. Secur'd my self from being a publick Spectacle upon the common Theatre of Death.

Enter Daring and Soldiers.

Dar. Victory, Victory ! they fly, they fly, where's the victorious General ?

Fear. Here, taking his last Adieu.

Dar.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 183

Dar. Dying! Then wither all the Laurels on my Brows, for I shall never triumph more in War; where are the Wounds?

Fear. From his own Hand, by what he carried here, believing we had lost the Victory.

Bac. And is the Enemy put to flight, my Hero?

[Grasps his Neck.

Dar. All routed Horse and Foot; I plac'd an Ambush, and while they were pursuing you, my Men fell on behind, and won the day.

Bac. Thou almost makest me wish to live again, if I cou'd live now fair *Semernia's* dead.—But oh—the baneful Drug is just and kind, and hastens me away—Now while you are Victors, make a Peace with the *English* Council, and never let Ambition, Love, or Interest, make you forget, as I have done, your Duty and Allegiance—Farewel—a long Farewel—

[Dies embracing their Necks.

Dar. So fell the *Roman Cassius*, by mistake—

Enter Soldiers with Dunce, Tim. and Dullman.

Sol. An't please your Honour, we took these Men running away.

Dar. Let 'em loose—the Wars are at an end, see where the General lies—that great-soul'd Man, no private Body e'er contain'd a nobler; and he that cou'd have conquered all *America*, finds only here his scanty length of Earth. Go, bear the Body to his own Pavilion —

[Soldiers go out with the Body.

tho we are Conquerors we submit to treat, and yield upon Condition: You, Mr. *Dunce*, shall bear our Articles to the Council.

Dun. With Joy I will obey you.

Tim. Good General, let us be put in the Agreement.

Dar. You shall be obliged —

[*Ex. Dar. Dunc. Dull. and Tim. as Fear. goes out a Soldier meets him.*

Sol. What does your Honour intend to do with *Whim* and *Whiff*, who are condemn'd by a Council of War?

Enter

184 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Enter Daring, Dullman, Tim. Fearless, and Officers.

Dar. You come too late, Gentlemen, to be put into the Articles; nor am I satisfy'd you're worthy of it.

Dull. Why, did not you, Sir, see us lie dead in the Field?

Dar. Yes, but I see no Wound about you.

Tim. We were stun'd with being knock'd down; Gad zoors, a Man may be kill'd with the but-end of a Musquet, as soon as with the point of a Sword.

Enter Dunce.

Dun. The Council, Sir, wishes you Health and Happiness, and sends you these sign'd by their Hands——

[*Gives Papers.*]

Dar. reads.

That you shall have a general Pardon for your self and Friends; that you shall have all new Commissions, and Daring to command as General; that you shall have free leave to inter your dead General in James Town. And to ratify this, we will meet you at Madam Surelove's House, which stands between the Armies, attended only by our Officers.

The Council's noble, and I'll wait upon them.

[*Exit Dunce.*]

SCENE, a Grove near Madam Surelove's.

Enter Surelove weeping, Well. Chrisante, Mrs. Flirt,

Ranter as before, Down. Haz. Friend. Booz. Brag.

Well. How long, Madam, have you heard the News of Col. Surelove's Death?

Sure. By a Vessel last Night arriv'd.

Well. You shou'd not grieve when Men so old pay their debt to Nature; you are too fair, not to have been reserved for some young Lover's Arms.

Haz. I dare not speak,—but give me leave to hope.

Sure. The way to oblige me to't, is never to speak to me of Love till I shall think it fit——

[*Wellman speaks to Down.*]

Well. Come, you shan't grant it—'tis a hopeful Youth.

Dow.

The WIDOW RANTER, &c. 185

Dow. You are too much my Friend to be denied—
Chrisante, do you love *Friendly*? nay, do not blush—
till you have done a fault, your loving him is none—
Here, take her young Man, and with her all my Fortune
—when I am dead, Sirrah—not a Groat before— unless
to buy ye Baby-Clouts.

Friend. He merits not this Treasure, Sir, can wish for
more.

*Enter Daring, Fearless, Dunce and Officers, they meet
Well. and Down. who embrace 'em. Dull. and
Tim. stand.*

Dar. Can you forgive us, Sir, our Disobedience?

Well. Your offering Peace while yet you might com-
mand it, has made such kind impressions on us, that now
you may command your Propositions; your Pardons are
all seal'd and new Commissions.

Dar. I'm not ambitious of that Honour, Sir, but in
obedience will accept your Goodness: but, Sir, I hear I
have a young Friend taken Prisoner by Captain *Hazard*,
whom I intreat you will render me.

Haz. Sir—here I resign him to you. [*Gives him Rant.*

Ran. Faith General, you left me but scurvily in Battle.

Dar. That was to see how well you cou'd shift for your
self; now I find you can bear the brunt of a Campaign,
you are a fit Wife for a Soldier.

All. A Woman—*Ranter*—

Haz. Faith Madam, I should have given you kinder
Quarter, if I had known my happiness.

Flirt. I have an humble Petition to you, Sir.

Sure. In which we all join.

Flirt. An't please you, Sir, Mr. *Dunce* has long made
Love to me, and on promise of Marriage has— [*Simpers.*

Dow. What has he, Mistress? What has he Mrs. *Flirt*?

Flirt. Only been a little familiar with my Person, Sir—

Well. Do you hear Parson—you must marry Mrs. *Flirt*.

Dun. How, Sir, a Man of my Coat, Sir, marry a
Brandy-monger?

[*Well.*] Of your Calling you mean, a Farrier and no
Parson—

She'll leave her Trade, and spauk it above all the Ladies at
Church:

186 *The WIDOW RANTER, &c.*

Church: No more——take her, and make her honest.

Enter Whim and Whiff stript.

Chris. Bless me, what have we here?

Whim. Why, an't like your Honours, we were taken by the Enemy——hah, *Daring* here, and *Fearless*?

Fear. How now, Gentlemen, were not you two condemn'd to be shot for running from your Colours?

Dow. From your Colours!

Fear. Yes, Sir, they were both list'd in my Regiment.

Dow. Then we must hang them for deserting us.

Whim. So, out of the Frying Pan—you know where, Brother——

Whiff. Ay, he that's born to be hang'd——you know the rest; a Pox of these Proverbs.

Well. I know ye well——you're all rank Cowards; but once more we forgive ye; your Places in the Council shall be supplied by these Gentlemen of Sense and Honour. The Governor when he comes, shall find the Country in better hands than he expects to find it.

Whim. A very fair Discharge.

Whiff. I'm glad 'tis no worse, I'll home to my *Nancy*.

Dull. Have we expos'd our Lives and Fortunes for this?

Tim. Gad zoors, I never thriv'd since I was a Statesman, left Planting, and fell to promising and lying; I'll to my old Trade again, bask under the shade of my own Tobacco, and drink my Punch in Peace.

Well. *Come, my brave Youths, let all our Forces meet,
To make this Country happy, rich and great;
Let scanted Europe see that we enjoy
Safer Repose, and larger Worlds, than they.*

E P I.

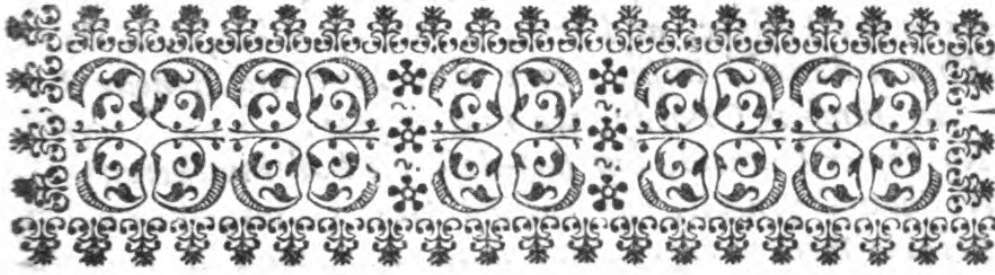
EPILOGUE.

Gallants, you have so long been absent hence,
 That you have almost cool'd your Diligence :
 For while we study or revive a Play,
 You like good Husbands in the Country stay,
 There frugally wear out your Summer-Suit,
 And in Frize Jerkin after Beagles toot,
 Or in Mountero Caps at Fel-fares shoot :
 Nay, some are so obdurate in their Sin,
 That they swear never to come up again ;
 But all their charge of Clothes and Treat retrench,
 To Gloves and Stockings for some Country-Wench.
 Even they who in the Summer had Mishaps,
 Send up to Town for Physick for their Claps.
 The Ladies too, are as resolv'd as they,
 And having Debts unknown to them they stay,
 And with the gain of Cheese and Poultry pay.
 Even in their Visits, they from Banquets fall,
 To entertain with Nuts and Bottle-Ale ;
 And in Discourse with secrecy report
 Stale News that past a Twelve-month since at Court.
 Those of them who are most refin'd and gay,
 Now learn the Songs of the last Summer's Play :
 While the young Daughter does in private mourn
 Her Love's in Town, and hopes not to return.
 These Country-Grievances too great appear ;
 But, cruel Ladies, we have greater here :
 You come not sharp, as you were wont, to Plays ;
 But only on the first and second Days :

This

*This made our Poet in his Visits look
What new strange Courses for your Time you took:
And to his great regret he found too soon,
Basset and Ombre spent the Afternoon:
So that we cannot hope to see you here
Before the little Net-work Purse be clear.
Suppose you should have luck: ———
Yet sitting up so late as I am told,
You'll lose in Beauty what you win in Gold;
And what each Lady of another says,
Will make you new Lampoons, and us new Plays.*

THE



THE
EMPEROR
OF THE
MOON.

PROLOGUE,

Spoken by Mr. Fevern.



Long, and at vast Expence, th' industrious Stage
Has strove to please a dull ungrateful Age :
With Heroes and with Gods we first began,
And thunder'd to you in heroick Strain :
Some dying Love-sick Queen each Night you injoy'd,
And with Magnificence at last were cloy'd :
Our Drums and Trumpets frighted all the Women ;
Our Fighting scar'd the Beaux and Billet-Doux Men.

190 PROLOGUE.

*So Spark in an Intrigue of Quality,
Grows weary of his splendid Drudgery ;
Hates the Fatigue, and cries, a Pox upon her,
What a damn'd Bustle's here with Love and Honour ?*

*In humbler Comedy, we next appear,
No Fop or Cuckold, but slap-dash we had him here ;
We show'd you all, but you malicious grown,
Friends Vices to expose, and hide your own ;
Cry, damn it——This is such, or such a one.
Yet nettled, Plague what does the Scribler mean ?
With his damn'd Characters, and Plot obscene.
No Woman without Vizard in the Nation
Can see it twice, and keep her Reputation——
That's certain, Forgetting——*

*That he himself, in every gross Lampoon,
Her leuder Secrets spread about the Town ;
Whilst their feign'd Niceness is but cautious Fear,
Their own Intrigues should be unravel'd here.*

*Our next Recourse was dwindling down to Farte,
Then—Zounds, what Stuff's here ? 'tis all o'er my——
Well, Gentlemen, since none of these has sped,
Gad, we have bought a Share i'th' speaking Head.
So there you'll save a Sice,
You love good Husbandry in all but Vice ;
Whoring and Drinking only bears a Price.*

The Head rises upon a twisted Post, on a Bench from
under the Stage. After Jevern speaks to its Mouth.

Oh !—Oh !—Oh !
Stentor. *Oh !—Oh !—Oh !*

After this it sings Sawny, laughs, crys God bless the
King in order.

Stentor answers.
*Speak louder Jevern, if you'd have me repeat ;
Plague of this Rogue, he will betray the Cheat.*

He speaks louder, it answers indirectly.

—Hum

—Hum—There 'tis again,
 Pox of your Echo with a Northern Strain.
 Well—This will be but a nine days Wonder too ;
 There's nothing lasting but the Puppets Show.
 What. Lady's Heart's so hard, but it would move,
 To hear Philander and Irene's Love ?
 Those Sisters too, the scandalous Wits do say,
 Two nameless keeping Beaux have made so gay ;
 But those Amours are perfect Sympathy,
 Their Gallants being as mere Machines as they.
 Oh ! how the City Wife, with her nown Ninny,
 Is charm'd with come into my Coach,——Miss Jenny,
 Miss Jenny.
 But overturning——Fribble crys——Adzigs,
 The juggling Rogue has murder'd all his Kids.
 The Men of War cry, Pox on't, this is dull,
 We are for rough Sports,—Dog Hector, and the Bull.
 Thus each in his degree, Diversion finds,
 Your Sports are suited to your mighty Minds ;
 Whilst so much Judgment in your Choice you show,
 The Puppets have more Sense than some of you.

Dra-

Dramatis Personæ.

M E N.

<i>Doctor Baliardo,</i>	<i>Mr. Underhill.</i>
<i>Scaramouch, his Man,</i>	<i>Mr. Lee.</i>
<i>Pedro, his Boy.</i>	
<i>Don Cinthio, Don Charmante, both</i>	<i>Young Mr. Powel,</i>
<i>Nephews to the Vice-Roy, and</i>	
<i>Lovers of Elaria and Bellemante,</i>	
<i>Harlequin, Cinthio's Man,</i>	<i>Mr. Fevern.</i>
<i>Officer and Clerk.</i>	

W O M E N.

<i>Elaria, Daughter to the Doctor,</i>	<i>Mrs. Cooke.</i>
<i>Bellemante, Niece to the Doctor,</i>	<i>Mrs. Mumford.</i>
<i>Mopsophil, Governant to the young</i>	<i>Mrs. Cory.</i>
<i>Ladies,</i>	

The Persons in the Moon, are Don Cinthio, Emperor;
Don Charmante, Prince of Thunderland.

Their Attendants, Persons that represent the Court Cards.
Keplair and Galileus, two Philosophers.

Twelve Persons, representing the Figures of the twelve
Signs of the Zodiack.

Negroes, and Persons that dance.

Musick, Kettle-Drums, and Trumpets.

The SCENE, NAPLES.

ACT

ACT I. SCENE I.

A Chamber.

Enter Elaria and Mopsophil.

I.



*Curse upon that faithless Maid,
Who first her Sex's Liberty betray'd;
Born free as Man to love and range,
Till nobler Nature did to Custom change,
Custom, that dull excuse for Fools,
Who think all Virtue to consist in Rules.*

II.

*From Love our Fetters never sprung;
That smiling God, all wanton, gay and young,
Shows by his Wings he cannot be
Confined to a restless Slavery;
But here and there at random roves,
Not fix'd to glittering Courts, or shady Groves.*

III.

*Then she that Constancy profess'd,
Was but a well Dissembler at the best;
And that imaginary Sway
She feign'd to give, in seeming to obey,
Was but the height of prudent Art,
To deal with greater liberty her Heart.*

[After the Song Elaria gives her Lute to Mopsophil.]

Ela. This does not divert me;
Nor nothing will, till *Scaramouch* return,
And bring me News of *Cinthio*.

Mop. Truly I was so sleepy last Night, I know nothing of the Adventure, for which you are kept so close a Prisoner to day, and more strictly guarded than usual.

194 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Ela. *Cinthio* came with Musick last Night under my Window, which my Father hearing, sallied out with his *Mirmidons* upon him; and clashing of Swords I heard, but what hurt was done, or whether *Cinthio* were discovered to him, I know not; but the Billet I sent him now by *Scaramouch*, will occasion me soon Intelligence.

Mop. And see, Madam, where your trusty *Roger* comes.

Enter Scaramouch, peeping on all sides before he enters.
You may advance, and fear none but your Friends.

Scar. Away and keep the door.

Ela. Oh dear *Scaramouch*! hast thou been at the Vice-Roy's?

Scar. Yes, yes.

[*In beat.*]

Ela. And hast thou delivered my Letter to his Nephew, *Don Cinthio*?

Scar. Yes, yes, what should I deliver else?

Ela. Well——and how does he?

[*Fanning himself with his Cap.*]

Scar. Lord, how should he do? Why, what a laborious thing it is to be a Pimp?

Ela. Why, well he shou'd do.

Scar. So he is, as well as a Night-adventuring Lover can be,——he has got but one Wound, Madam.

Ela. How! wounded say you? Oh Heavens! 'tis not mortal.

Scar. Why, I have no great skill; but they say it may be dangerous.

Ela. I die with Fear, where is he wounded?

Scar. Why, Madam, he is run——quite thro the Heart,——but the Man may live, if I please.

Ela. Thou please! torment me not with Riddles.

Scar. Why, Madam, there is a certain cordial Balsam, call'd a fair Lady; which outwardly applied to his Bosom, will prove a better cure than all your Weapon or sympathick Pouders, meaning your Ladyship.

Ela. Is *Cinthio* then not wounded?

Scar. No otherways than by your fair Eyes, Madam; he got away unseen and unknown.

Ela. Dost know how precious time is, and dost thou fool it away thus? What said he to my Letter?

Scar.

The Emperor of the Moon. 195

Scar. What should he say?

Ela. Why a hundred dear soft things of Love, kiss it as often, and bless me for my Goodness.

Scar. Why so he did.

Ela. Ask thee a thousand Questions of my Health after my last night's fright.

Scar. So he did.

Ela. Expressing all the kind concern Love cou'd inspire, for the Punishment my Father has inflicted on me, for entertaining him at my Window last night.

Scar. All this he did.

Ela. And for my being confin'd a Prisoner to my Apartment, without the hope or almost possibility of seeing him any more.

Scar. There I think you are a little mistaken; for besides the Plot that I have laid to bring you together all this Night,——there are such Stratagems a brewing, not only to bring you together, but with your Father's consent too; such a Plot, Madam——

Ela. Ay, that would be worthy of thy Brain; prithee what?——

Scar. Such a Device——

Ela. I'm impatient.

Scar. Such a Conundrum,——Well, if there be wise Men and Conjurers in the World, they are intriguing Lovers.

Ela. Out with it.

Scar. You must know, Madam, your Father (my Master, the Doctor) is a little whimsical, romantick, or Don-Quick-sottish, or so.

Ela. Or rather mad.

Scar. That were uncivil to be supposed by me; but lunatic we may call him, without breaking the Decorum of good Manners; for he is always travelling to the Moon.

Ela. And so religiously believes there is a World there, that he discourses as gravely of the People, their Government, Institutions, Laws, Manners, Religion, and Constitution, as if he had been bred a *Machiavel* there.

Scar. How came he thus infected first?

196 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Ela. With reading foolish Books, *Lucian's Dialogue of the Lofty Traveller*, who flew up to the Moon, and thence to Heaven; an heroick Business, call'd, *The Man in the Moon*, if you'll believe a *Spaniard*, who was carried thither, upon an Engine drawn by wild Geese; with another philosophic piece, *A Discourse of the World in the Moon*; with a thousand other ridiculous Volumes, too hard to name.

Scar. Ay, this reading of Books is a pernicious thing. I was like to have run mad once, reading *Sir John Mandevil*;—but to the business,—I went, as you know, to *Don Cinthio's* Lodgings, where I found him with his dear Friend *Charmante*, laying their Heads together for a Farce.

Ela. Farce!

Scar. Ay, a Farce, which shall be call'd,—*The World in the Moon*: Wherein your Father shall be so impos'd on, as shall bring matters most magnificently about.

Ela. I cannot conceive thee, but the Design must be good, since *Cinthio* and *Charmante* own it.

Scar. In order to this, *Charmante* is dressing himself like one of the Caballists of the *Rosycrusian* Order, and is coming to prepare my credulous Master for the greater Imposition. I have his Trinkets here to play upon him, which shall be ready.

Ela. But the Farce, where is it to be acted?

Scar. Here, here, in this very House; I am to order the Decorations, adorn a Stage, and place Scenes proper.

Ela. How can this be done without my Father's Knowledge?

Scar. You know the old Apartment next the great Orchard, and the Worm-eaten Gallery that opens to the River; which place for several Years no body has frequented; there all things shall be acted proper for our purpose.

Enter Mopsophil running.

Mop. Run, run *Scaramouch*, my Master's conjuring for you like mad below, he calls up all his little Devils with horrid Names, his Microscope, his Horoscope, his Telescope, and all his Scopes.

Scar.

The Emperor of the Moon, 197

Scar. Here, here,——I had almost forgot the Letters; here's one for you, and one for Mrs. *Bellemante*.

[*Runs out.*]

Enter Bellemante with a Book.

Bell. Here, take my Prayer-Book, *Oh Ma tres chere.*

[*Embraces her.*]

Ela. Thy Eyes are always laughing, *Bellemante.*

Bell. And so would yours, had they been so well employ'd as mine, this Morning. I have been at the Chappel, and seen so many Beaus, such a number of Plumeys, I cou'd not tell which I should look on most; sometimes my Heart was charm'd with the gay Blonding, then with the melancholy Noire, anon the amiable Brunet; sometimes the bashful, then again the bold; the little now, anon the lovely tall: In fine, my Dear, I was embarrass'd on all sides, I did nothing but deal my Heart *sout autour.*

Ela. Oh, there was then no danger, Cousin.

Bell. No, but abundance of pleasure.

Ela. Why, this is better than sighing for *Charmante.*

Bell. That's when he's present only, and makes his Court to me; I can sigh to a Lover, but will never sigh after him: —— but Oh the Beaus, the Beaus, Cousin, that I saw at Church.

Ela. Oh you had great Devotion to Heaven then!

Bell. And so I had; for I did nothing but admire its Handy-work, but I cou'd not have pray'd heartily, if I had been dying; but a duce on't, who shou'd come in and spoil all but my Lover *Charmante*, so dress'd, so gallant, that he drew together all the scatter'd fragments of my Heart, confin'd my wandering Thoughts, and fixt 'em all on him: Oh how he look'd, how he was dress'd.

S I N G S.

*Chevalier a Cheveux blonds,
Plus de Mouche, plus de Poudre,
Plus de Ribons et Cannous.*

198 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

—Oh what a dear ravishing thing is the beginning of an Amour!

Ela. Thou'rt still in Tune, when wilt thou be tame, *Bellemante*?

Bell. When I am weary of loving, *Elaria*.

Ela. To keep up your Humour, here's a Letter from your *Charmante*.

Bellemante reads.

Malicious Creature, when wilt thou cease to torment me, and either appear less charming, or more kind? I languish when from you, and am wounded when I see you, and yet I am eternally courting my Pain. *Cinthio* and I, are contriving how we shall see you to Night. Let us not toil in vain; we ask but your consent; the Pleasure will be all ours, 'tis therefore fit we suffer all the Fatigue. Grant this, and love me, if you will save the Life of

Your *Charmante*.

—Live then *Charmante*! Live as long as Love can last!

Ela. Well, Cousin, *Scaramouch* tells me of a rare design's a hatching, to relieve us from this Captivity; here are we mew'd up to be espous'd to two Moon-calfs for ought I know; for the Devil of any human thing is suffer'd to come near us, without our Governante and Keeper, Mr. *Scaramouch*.

Bell. Who, if he had no more Honesty and Conscience than my Uncle, wou'd let us pine for want of Lovers; but thanks be prais'd; the Generosity of our Cavaliers has open'd their obdurate Hearts with a Golden Key, that lets 'em in at all Opportunities. Come, come, let's in, and answer their Billet-Doux. [Exeunt.]

SCENE

SCENE II. *A Garden.*

Enter Doctor, with all manner of Mathematical Instruments hanging at his Girdle; Scaramouch bearing a Telescope twenty (or more) Foot long.

Doct. Set down the Telescope.—Let me see, what Hour is it?

Scar. About six a Clock, Sir.

Doct. Then 'tis about the Hour that the great Monarch of the Upper World enters into his Closet; Mount, mount the Telescope.

Scar. What to do, Sir?

Doct. I understand, at certain moments critical, one may be snatch'd of such a mighty consequence, to let the Sight into the secret Closet.

Scar. How, Sir, peep into the King's Closet! under favour Sir, that will be something uncivil.

Doct. Uncivil! it were flat Treason if it should be known; but thus unseen, and as wise Politicians shou'd, I take Survey of all: This is the Statesman's Peeping-hole, thorow which he steals the Secrets of his King, and seems to wink at distance.

Scar. The very Key-hole, Sir, thorow which, with half an Eye, he sees him even at his Devotion, Sir.

[*A knocking at the Garden-Gate.*

Doct. Take care none enter. [*Scar. goes to the Door.*

Scar. Oh, Sir, Sir, here's some strange great Man come to wait on you.

Doct. Great Man! from whence?

Scar. Nay, from the Moon-World, for ought I know, for he looks not like the People of the lower Orb.

Doct. Ha! and that may be; wait on him in.

[*Exit Scar.*

Enter Scaramouch bare, bowing before Charmante, dress'd in a strange fantastical Habit, with Harlequin; salutes the Doctor.

Char. Doctor Baliardo, most learned Sir, all Hail! Hail from the great Caballa of *Eutopia.*

200 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Most reverend *Bard*, thrice welcome.

[*Salutes him low.*

Char. The Fame of your great Learning, Sir, and Virtue is known with Joy to the renown'd Society.

Doct. Fame, Sir, has done me too much Honour, to bear my Name to the renown'd *Caballa*.

Char. You must not attribute it all to Fame, Sir, they are too learned and wise to take up things from Fame, Sir; our Intelligence is by ways more secret and sublime, the Stars, and little Dæmons of the Air inform us all things, past, present, and to come.

Doct. I must confess the Count of *Gabalus* renders it plain, from Writ divine and humane, there are such friendly and intelligent Dæmons.

Char. I hope you do not doubt that Doctrine, Sir, which holds that the Four Elements are peopled with Persons of a Form and Species more divine than vulgar Mortals—those of the fiery Regions we call the *Salamanders*, they beget Kings and Heroes, with Spirits like their Deietical Sires; the lovely Inhabitants of the Water, we call Nymphs; those of the Earth are Gnomes or Fairies; those of the Air are Sylphs. These, Sir, when in Conjunction with Mortals, beget immortal Races; such as the first-born Man, which had continu'd so, had the first Man ne'er doated on a Woman.

Doct. I am of that opinion, Sir; Man was not made for Woman.

Char. Most certain, Sir, Man was to have been immortaliz'd by the Love and Conversation of these charming Sylphs and Nymphs, and Women by the Gnomes and Salamanders, and to have stock'd the World with Demi-Gods, such as at this Day inhabit the Empire of the Moon.

Doct. Most admirable Philosophy and Reason!—But do these Sylphs and Nymphs appear in Shapes?

Char. The most beautiful of all the Sons and Daughters of the Universe: Fancy, Imagination is not half so charming; And then so soft, so kind! but none but the *Caballa* and their Families are blest with their divine
Addresses.

The Emperor of the Moon. 201

Addressess. Were you but once admitted to that Society——

Doct. Ay, Sir, what Virtues or what Merits can accomplish me for that great Honour?

Char. An absolute abstinence from carnal thought, devout and pure of Spirit; free from Sin.

Doct. I dare not boast my Virtues, Sir; Is there no way to try my Purity?

Char. Are you very secret?

Doct. 'Tis my first Principle, Sir.

Char. And one, the most material in our *Rosycrusian* order.—Please you to make a Tryal?

Doct. As how, Sir, I beseech you?

Char. If you be thorowly purg'd from Vice, the Opticles of your Sight will be so illuminated, that glancing thro this Telescope, you may behold one of these lovely Creatures, that people the vast Region of the Air.

Doct. Sir, you oblige profoundly.

Char. Kneel then, and try your strength of Virtue, Sir.—Keep your Eye fix'd and open.

[*He looks in the Telescope.*

[*While he is looking, Charmante goes to the Door to Scaramouch, who waited on purpose without, and takes a Glass with a Picture of a Nymph on it, and a Light behind it; that as he brings it, it shews to the Audience. Goes to the end of the Telescope.*

——Can you discern, Sir?

Doct. Methinks I see a kind of glorious Cloud drawn up——and now, 'tis gone again.

Char. Saw you no Fuger?

Doct. None.

Char. Then make a short Prayer to *Alikin*, the Spirit of the East; shake off all earthly Thoughts, and look again.

[*He prays. Charmante puts the Glass into the Mouth of the Telescope.*

Doct. ——Astonish'd, ravish'd with Delight, I see a Beauty young and Angel-like, leaning upon a Cloud.

Char. Seems she on a Bed? then she's reposing, and you must not gaze.

202 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Now a Cloud veils her from me.

Char. She saw you peeping then, and drew the Curtain of the Air between.

Doct. I am all Rapture, Sir, at this rare Vision—is't possible, Sir, that I may ever hope the Conversation of so divine a Beauty?

Char. Most possible, Sir; they will court you, their whole delight is to immortalize—*Alexander* was begot by a Salamander, that visited his Mother in the form of a Serpent, because he would not make King *Philip* jealous; and that famous Philosopher *Merlin* was begotten on a Vestal Nun, a certain King's Daughter, by a most beautiful young Salamander; as indeed all the Heroes, and Men of mighty Minds are.

Doct. Most excellent!

Char. The Nymph *Egeria*, inamour'd on *Numa Pompilius*, came to him invisible to all Eyes else, and gave him all his Wisdom and Philosophy. *Zoroaster*, *Trismegistus*, *Apuleius*, *Aquinus*, *Albertus Magnus*, *Socrates* and *Virgil* had their Zilphid, which the Foolish call'd their Dæmon or Devil. But you are wise, Sir.

Doct. But do you imagine Sir, they will fall in love with an old Mortal?

Char. They love not like the Vulgar, 'tis the immortal Part they doat upon.

Doct. But Sir, I have a Niece and Daughter which I love equally, were it not possible they might be immortaliz'd?

Char. No doubt on't, Sir, if they be pure and chaste.

Doct. I think they are; and I'll take care to keep 'em so; for I confess, Sir, I wou'd fain have a Hero to my Grandson.

Char. You never saw the Emperor of the Moon, Sir, the mighty *Irodonoxar*?

Doct. Never, Sir; his Court I have, but 'twas confusedly too.

Char. Refine your Thoughts Sir, by a Moment's Prayer, and try again.

[He prays. *Char.* claps the Glass with the Emperor on it, he looks in and sees it.

Doct.

The Emperor of the Moon. 203

Doct. It is too much, too much for mortal Eyes! I see a Monarch seated on a Throne—but seems most sad and pensive.

Char. Forbear then, Sir; for now his Love-Fit's on, and then he wou'd be private.

Doct. His Love-Fit, Sir!

Char. Ay, Sir, the Emperor's in love with some fair Mortal.

Doct. And can he not command her?

Char. Yes, but her Quality being too mean, he struggles, tho a King, 'twixt Love and Honour.

Doct. It were too much to know the Mortal, Sir?

Char. 'Tis yet unknown, Sir, to the Caballists, who now are using all their Arts to find her, and serve his Majesty; but now my great Affair deprives me of you: To morrow, Sir, I'll wait on you again; and now I've try'd your Virtue, tell you Wonders.

Doct. I humbly kiss your Hands, most learned Sir.

[*Charmante goes out. Doctor waits on him to the Door, and returns: to him Scaramouch. All this while Harlequin was hid in the Hedges, peeping now and then, and when his Master went out he was left behind.*

Sca. So, so, *Don Charmonte* has plaid his Part most exquisitely; I'll in and see how it works in his Pericranium.—Did you call, Sir?

Doct. *Scaramouch*, I have, for thy singular Wit and Honesty, always had a Tenderness for thee above that of a Master to a Servant.

Sca. I must confess, it, Sir.

Doct. Thou hast Virtue and Merit that deserves much.

Sca. Oh Lord, Sir!

Doct. And I may make thee great;—all I require, is, that thou wilt double thy diligent Care of my Daughter and my Niece; for there are mighty things design'd for them, if we can keep 'em from the sight of Man.

Sca. The sight of Man, Sir!

Doct. Ay, and the very Thoughts of Man.

Sca. What Antidote is there to be given to a young Wench, against the Disease of Love and Longing?

Doct.

204 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Do you your Part, and because I know thee discreet and very secret, I will hereafter discover Wonders to thee. On pain of Life, look to the Girls; that's your Charge.

Sca. Doubt me not, Sir, and I hope your Reverence will reward my faithful Service with *Mopsophil*, your Daughter's Governante, who is rich, and has long had my Affection, Sir.

Harlequin peeping, cries Oh Traitor!

Doct. Set not thy Heart on transitory Mortal, there's better things in store—besides, I have promis'd her to a Farmer for his Son.—Come in with me, and bring the Telescope. [*Ex. Doctor and Scaramouch.*

Harlequin comes out on the Stage.

Har. My Mistress *Mopsophil* to marry a Farmer's Son! What, am I then forsaken, abandon'd by the false fair One?

If I have Honour, I must die with Rage;
 Reproaching gently, and complaining madly.
 It is resolv'd, I'll hang my self—No, when did I ever hear of a Hero that hang'd himself?—No, 'tis the Death of Rogues. What if I drown my self?—No, Useless Dogs and Puppies are drown'd; a Pistol or a Caper on my own Sword wou'd look more nobly, but that I have a natural Aversion to Pain. Besides, it is as vulgar as Rats-bane, or the slicing of the Weasand. No, I'll die a Death uncommon, and leave behind me an eternal Fame. I have somewhere read an Author, either antient or modern, of a Man that laugh'd to death.—I am very ticklish, and am resolv'd to die that Death.—Oh *Mopsophil*, my cruel *Mopsophil*!

[*Pulls off his Hat, Sword and Shoes.*

And now, farewell the World, fond Love, and mortal Cares.

[*He falls to tickle himself, his Head, his Ears, his Arm-pits, Hands, Sides, and Soles of his Feet; making ridiculous Cries and Noises of Laughing several ways, with Antick Leaps and Skips, at last falls down as dead.*

Enter

The Emperor of the Moon. 205

Enter Scaramouch.

Scar. *Harlequin* was left in the Garden, I'll tell him the News of *Mopsophil.* [*Going forward, tumbles over him.*

Ha, what's here? *Harlequin* dead! —

[*Heaving him up, he flies into a Rage.*

Har. Who is't that thus wou'd rob me of my Honour?

Sca. Honour, why I thought thou'dst been dead.

Har. Why so I was, and the most agreeably dead.

Sca. I came to bemoan with thee the mutual loss of our Mistress.

Har. I know it, Sir, I know it, and that thou art as false as she: Was't not a Covenant between us, that neither shou'd take advantage of the other, but both shou'd have fair play, and yet you basely went to undermine me, and ask her of the Doctor; but since she's gone, I scorn to quarrel for her—But let's like loving Brothers, hand in hand, leap from some Precipice into the Sea.

Sca. What, and spoil all my Clothes? I thank you for that; no, I have a newer way: you know I lodge four pair of Stairs high, let's ascend thither, and after saying our Prayers —

Har. Prayers! I never heard of a dying Hero that ever pray'd.

Sca. Well, I'll not stand with you for a Trifle—Being come up, I'll open the Casement, take you by the Heels, and fling you out into the Street; after which, you have no more to do, but to come up and throw me down in my turn.

Har. The Atchievement's great and new; but now I think on't, I'm resolv'd to hear my Sentence from the Mouth of the perfidious Trollop, for yet I cannot credit it.

I'll to the Gipsy, tho I venture banging,
To be undeceiv'd, 'tis hardly worth the hanging.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE II. *The Chamber of Bellemante.**Enter Scaramouch groping.*

Sca. So, I have got rid of my Rival, and shall here get an Opportunity to speak with *Mopsophil*; for hither she must come anon, to lay the young Lady's Night-things in order; I'll hide my self in some Corner till she come.

*[Goes on to the further side of the Stage.**Enter Harlequin groping.*

Har. So, I made my Rival believe I was gone, and hid my self till I got this Opportunity to steal to *Mopsophil's* Apartment, which must be hereabouts; for from these Windows she us'd to entertain my Love.

[Advances.

Scar. Ha, I hear a soft Tread,——if it were *Mopsophil's*, she wou'd not come by dark.

[Harlequin advancing runs against a Table, and almost strikes himself backwards.

Har. What was that?—a Table, there I may obscure my self.

[Groping for the Table.

What a Devil, is it vanish'd?

Sca. Devil,—vanish'd! What can this mean? 'Tis a Man's Voice.——If it shou'd be my Master the Doctor now, I were a dead Man;—he can't see me; and I'll put my self into such a Posture, that if he feel me, he shall as soon take me for a Church Spout as a Man.

*[He puts himself into a Posture ridiculous, his Arms a-kimbo, his Knees wide open, his Backside almost touching the Ground, his Mouth stretched wide, and his Eyes staring.**Har. groping thrusts his Hand into his Mouth, he bites him, the other dares not cry out.*

Har. Ha, what's this? all Mouth, with twenty rows of Teeth.——Now dare not I cry out, lest the Doctor shou'd come, find me here, and kill me—I'll try if it be mortal.

*[Making damnable Faces and Signs of Pain, he draws a Dragger. Scar. feels the Point of it, and shrinks back, letting go his Hand.**Scar.*

The Emperor of the Moon. 207

Scar. Who the Devil can this be? I felt a Poniard, and am glad I sav'd my Skin from pinking. [Steals out.]

[Harlequin groping about, finds the Table, on which there is a Carpet, and creeps under it, listning.]

Enter Bellemante, with a Candle in one Hand, and a Book in the other.

Bel. I am in a Belle Humor for Poetry to night; I'll make some Boremes on Love.

[She writes and studies.]

Out of a great Curiosity, — A Shepherd did demand of me. —

No, no, — A Shepherd this implor'd of me.

[Scratches out, and writes a-new.]

Ay, ay, so it shall go. — Tell me, said he, can you resign? — Resign, ay, what shall rhyme to Resign? — Tell me, said he. —

[She lays down the Tablet, and walks about.]

[Harlequin peeps from under the Table, takes the Book, writes in it, and lays it up before she can turn.]

[Reads.] *Ay, ay, so it shall be, — Tell me, said he, my Bellemante; Will you be kind to your Charmante?*

[Reads those two Lines, and is amaz'd.]

Ha, Heav'ns! What's this? I am amaz'd!

— And yet I'll venture once more. [Writes and studies.]

— I blush'd and veil'd my wishing Eyes.

[Lays down the Book, and walks as before.]

— Wishing Eyes! [Har. writes as before.]

[She turns and takes the Tablet.]

Bell. — And answer'd only with my Sighs.

Ha! What is this? Witchcraft, or some Divinity of Love? Some Cupid sure invisible.

Once more I'll try the Charm. [Writes.]

— Cou'd I a better way my Love impart?

[Studies and walks.]

— Impart — [He writes as before.]

Bell. — And without speaking, tell him all my Heart.

— 'Tis here again, but where's the Hand that writ it?

[Looks about.]

— The

208 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

—The little Deity that will be seen
But only in his Miracles. It cannot be a Devil,
For here's no Sin nor Mischief in all this.

Enter Charmante. She hides the Tablet, he steps to her, and snatches it from her and reads.

Char. reads.

*Out of a great Curiosity,
A Shepherd this implor'd of me.
Tell me, said he, my Bellemante,
Will you be kind to your Charmante?
I blush'd, and veil'd my wishing Eyes,
And answer'd only with my Sighs.
Cou'd I a better way my Love impart?
And without speaking, tell him all my Heart.*

Char. Whose is this different Character? [*Looks angry.*

Bell. 'Tis yours for ought I know.

Char. Away, my Name was put here for a blind.
What Rhiming Fop have you been clubbing Wit withal?

Bell. Ah! *mon Dieu!*—*Charmante* jealous?

Char. Have I not cause?—Who writ these Boremes?

Bell. Some kind assisting Deity, for ought I know.

Char. Some kind assisting Coxcomb, that I know.

The Ink's yet wet, the Spark is near I find.——

Bell. Ah, *Malheureuse!* How was I mistaken in this Man?

Char. Mistaken! What, did you take me for an easy Fool to be impos'd upon? — One that wou'd be cuckolded by every feather'd Fool; that you'd call a *Beau un Gallant Homme.* 'Sdeath! Who wou'd doat upon a fond She-Fop?— a vain conceited amorous Coquette. [*Goes out, she pulls him back.*

Enter Scaramouch running.

Sca. Oh Madam! hide your Lover, or we are all undone.

Char. I will not hide, till I know the thing that made the Verses. [*The Doctor calling as on the Stairs.*

Doct. *Bellemante, Niece,—Bellemante.*

Scar.

The Emperor of the Moon. 209

Scar. She's coming, Sir. — Where, where shall I hide him? — Oh, the Closet's open!

[Thrusts him into the Closet by force.]

Doff. Oh Niece! Ill Luck, Ill Luck, I must leave you to night; my Brother the Advocate is sick, and has sent for me; 'tis three long Leagues, and dark as 'tis, I must go.—They say he is dying. Here, take my Keys,

[Pulls out his Keys, one falls down.]

and go into my Study, and look over all my Papers, and bring me all those mark'd with a Cross and figure of Three, they concern my Brother and I.

[She looks on Scaramouch, and makes pitiful Signs, and goes out.]

——Come *Scaramouch*, and get me ready for my Journey; and on your Life, let not a Door be open'd till my Return. *[Exit.]*

Enter Mopsophil. Har. peeps from under the Table.

Har. Ha! *Mopsophil*, and alone!

Mop. Well, 'tis a delicious thing to be rich; what a world of Lovers it invites: I have one for every Hand, and the Favorite for my Lips.

Har. Ay, him wou'd I be glad to know. *[Peeping.]*

Mop. But of all my Lovers, I am for the Farmer's Son, because he keeps a Calash——and I'll swear a Coach is the most agreeable thing about a Man.

Har. Ho, ho!

Mop. Ah, me, — What's that?

He answers in a shrill Voice.

Har. The Ghost of a poor Lover, dwindled into a Heyho.

[He rises from under the Table, and falls at her Feet.]

Scaramouch enters. She runs off squeaking.

Sca. Ha, my Rival and my Mistress! ——
Is this done like a Man of Honour, Monsieur *Harlequin*, to take advantages to injure me?

Har. Advantages are lawful in Love and War.

Scar. 'Twas contrary to our League and Covenant; therefore I defy thee as a Traytor.

Har. I scorn to fight with thee, because I once call'd thee Brother.

Scar.

210 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Scar. Then thou art a Paltroon, that's to say, a Coward.

Har. Coward! nay, then I am provok'd, come on.

Scar. Pardon me, Sir, I gave the Coward, and you ought to strike. [*They go to fight ridiculously, and ever as Scaramouch passes, Harlequin leaps aside, and skips so nimbly about, he cannot touch him for his Life; which after a while endeavouring in vain, he lays down his Sword.*]

—If you be for dancing, Sir, I have my Weapons for all occasions. [*Scar. pulls out a Flute Doux, and falls to playing. Har. throws down his, and falls a dancing; after the Dance, they shake Hands.*]

Har. *Ha mon bon ami.*—Is not this better than duelling?

Scar. But not altogether so heroick, Sir. Well, for the future, let us have fair play; no Tricks to undermine each other, but which of us is chosen to be the happy Man, the other shall be content.

Ela. within. Cousin Bellemante, Cousin.

Scar. 'Slife, let's be gone, lest we be seen in the Ladies Apartment. [*Scar. slips Harlequin behind the Door. Enter Elaria.*]

Ela. How now, how came you here?—

[*Signs to Har. to go out.*]

Scar. I came to tell you, Madam, my Master's just taking Mule to go his Journey to Night, and that *Don Cinthio* is in the Street, for a lucky moment to enter in.

Ela. But what if any one by my Father's Order, or he himself should by some chance surprize us?

Scar. If we be, I have taken order against a Discovery. I'll go see if the old Gentleman be gone, and return with your Lover. [*Goes out.*]

Ela. I tremble, but know not whether 'tis with Fear or Joy.

Enter Cinthio.

Cin. My dear *Elaria*—

[*Runs to embrace her, She starts from him.*]

—Ha,

The Emperor of the Moon. 211

—Ha,—shun my Arms, *Elaria*!

Ela. Heavens! Why did you come so soon?

Cin. Is it too soon, when'er 'tis safe, *Elaria*?

Ela. I die with Fear—Met you not *Scaramouch*?
He went to bid you wait a while; what shall I do?

Cin. Why this Concern? none of the House has seen me. I saw your Father taking Horse.

Ela. Sure you mistake, methinks I hear his Voice.

Doct. below]—My Key—The Key of my Laboratory. Why, Knave *Scaramouch*, where are you?

Ela. Do you hear that, Sir?—Oh, I'm undone!
Where shall I hide you?—He approaches.

[*She searches where to hide him.*

Ha! my Cousin's Closet's open,—step in a little.

[*He goes in, she puts out the Candle:*

Enter the Doctor. She gets round the Chamber to the Door, and as he advances in, she steals out.

Doct. Here I must have dropt it; a Light, a Light there.

Enter Cinthio from the Closet, pulls Charmante out, they not knowing each other.

Cin. Oh this perfidious Woman! No marvel she was so surpriz'd and angry at my Approach to Night.

Cha. Who can this be?—but I'll be prepar'd.

[*Lays his Hand on his Sword.*

Doct. Why *Scaramouch*, Knave, a Light!

[*Turns to the Door to call.*

Enter Scaramouch with a Light, and seeing the two Lovers there, runs against his Master, puts out the Candle, and flings him down and falls over him. At the entrance of the Candle, Charmante slipt from Cinthio into the Closet. Cinthio gropes to find him; when Mopsophil and Elaria, hearing a great Noise, enter with a Light. Cinthio finding he was discover'd falls to acting a Mad-man, Scaramouch helps up the Doctor, and bows.

Ha,—a Man,—and in my House,—Oh dire Misfortune!—Who are you, Sir?

Cin. Men call me *Gog Magog*, the Spirit of Power;
My Right-hand Riches holds, my Left-hand Honour.

212 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Is there a City Wife wou'd be a Lady?—Bring her to me,
Her easy Cuckold shall be dub'd a Knight.

Ela. Oh Heavens! a Mad-man, Sir.

Cin. Is there a tawdry Fop wou'd have a Title?
A rich Mechanick that wou'd be an Alderman?

Bring 'em to me,

And I'll convert that Coxcomb, and that Blockhead, into
Your Honour and Right-Worshipful.

Doct. Mad, stark mad! Why Sirrah, Rogue—*Scaramouch*—
How got this Mad-man in? [*While the Doctor turns to Scaramouch, Cinthio speaks softly to Elaria.*]

Cin. Oh, thou perfidious Maid! Who hast thou hid in
yonder conscious Closet? [*Aside to her.*]

Scar. Why, Sir, he was brought in a Chair for your Ad-
vice; but how he rambled from the Parlour to this Cham-
ber, I know not.

Cin. Upon a winged Horse, ycleped *Pegasus*,
Swift as the fiery Racers of the Sun,

—— I fly —— I fly ——

See how I mount, and cut the liquid Sky. [*Runs out.*]

Doct. Alas poor Gentleman, he's past all Cure.—
But Sirrah, for the future, take you care that no young
mad Patients be brought into my House.

Scar. I shall, Sir, —— and see, —— here's your Key you
look'd for.

Doct. That's well; I must be gone—Bar up the Doors,
and upon Life or Death let no man enter.

[*Exit Doctor, and all with him, with the Light.*]

Charmante peeps out—and by degrees comes all out,
listning every step.

Char. Who the Devil cou'd that be that pull'd me from
the Closet? but at last I'm free, and the Doctor's gone;
I'll to *Cinthio*, and bring him to pass this Night with
our Mistresses. [*Exit.*]

As he is gone off, enter Cinthio groping.

Cin. Now for this lucky Rival, if his Stars will make
this last part of his Adventure such. I hid my self in the
next Chamber, till I heard the Doctor go, only to return
to be reveng'd. [*He gropes his way into the Closet,*

with his Sword drawn.

Enter

The Emperor of the Moon. 213

Enter Elaria with a Light.

Ela. *Scaramouch* tells me *Charmante* is conceal'd in the Closet, whom *Cinthio* surely has mistaken for some Lover of mine, and is jealous; but I'll send *Charmante* after him, to make my peace and undeceive him. [*Goes to the Door.*—Sir, Sir, where are you? they are all gone, you may adventure out. [*Cinthio comes out.*

Ha,——*Cinthio* here?

Cin. Yes, Madam, to your shame:
Now your Perfidiousness is plain, false Woman,
'Tis well your Lover had the Dexterity of escaping, I'd spoil'd his making Love else. [*Goes from her, she holds him.*

Ela. Prithee hear me.

Cin. But since my Ignorance of his Person saves his Life, live and possess him, till I can discover him.

[*Goes out.*

Ela. Go peevish Fool—

Whose Jealousy believes me given to change,
Let thy own Torments be my just Revenge. [*Exit.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

An Antick Dance.

After the Musick has plaid, enter Elaria; to her Bellemante.

Ela. HEAVENS *Bellemante!* Where have you been?
Bell. Fatigu'd with the most disagreeable Affair, for a Person of my Humour, in the World. Oh, how I hate Business, which I do no more mind, than a Spark does the Sermon, who is ogling his Mistress at Church all the while: I have been ruffling over twenty Reams of Paper for my Uncle's Writings.

Enter Scaramouch.

Scar. So, so, the old Gentleman is departed this wicked World, and the House is our own for this Night.—Where are the Sparks? where are the Sparks?

Ela.

14 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Ela. Nay, Heaven knows.

Bell. How ! I hope not so ; I left *Charmante* confin'd to my Closet, when my Uncle had like to have surpriz'd us together : Is he not here ?

Ela. No, he's escap'd, but he has made sweet doings.

Bell. Heavens Cousin ! What ?

Ela. My Father was coming into the Chamber, and had like to have taken *Cinthio* with me, when, to conceal him, I put him into your Closet, not knowing of *Charmante's* being there, and which, in the dark, he took for a Gallant of mine ; had not my Father's Presence hinder'd, I believe there had been Murder committed ; however they both escap'd unknown.

Scar. Pshaw, is that all ? Lovers Quarrels are soon adjust'd ; I'll to 'em, unfold the Riddle, and bring 'em back—take no care, but go in and dress you for the Ball ; *Mopsophil* has Habits which your Lovers sent to put on : the Fiddles, Treat, and all are prepar'd. [Exit.

Enter Mopsophil.

Mop. Madam, your Cousin *Florinda*, with a Lady, are come to visit you.

Bell. I'm glad on't, 'tis a good Wench, and we'll trust her with our Mirth and Secret. [They go out.

SCENE changes to a Street.

Enter Page with a Flambeau, follow'd by Cinthio ; passes over the Stage. Scaramouch follows Cinthio in a Campaign Coat.

Scar. 'Tis *Cinthio*—Don *Cinthio*. [Calls, he turns. Well, what's the Quarrel ?—How fell ye out ?

Cin. You may inform your self I believe, for these close Intrigues cannot be carried on without your Knowledge.

Scar. What Intrigues, Sir ? be quick, for I'm in haste.

Cin. Who was the Lover I surpriz'd i'th' Closet ?

Scar. *Deceptio visus*, Sir ; the Error of the Eyes.

Cin. Thou Dog, I felt him too ; but since the Rascal escap'd me, I'll be reveng'd on thee.

Goes

The Emperor of the Moon. 215

[Goes to beat him; he running away, runs against Harlequin, who is entering with Charmante, and like to have thrown 'em both down.

Char. Ha,——What's the matter here?

Scar. Seignior Don Charmante. [Then he struts courageously in with 'em.

Char. What, Cinthio in a Rage!

Who's the unlucky Object?

Cin. All Man and Woman Kind: *Elaria's* false.

Char. *Elaria* false! take heed, sure her nice Virtue is proof against the Vices of her Sex,

Say rather *Bellemante*,

She who by Nature's light and wavering,

The Town contains not such a false Impertinent.

This Evening I surpriz'd her in her Chamber,

Writing of Verses, and between her Lines

Some Spark had newly pen'd his proper Stuff.

Curse of the Jilt, I'll be her Fool no more.

Har. I doubt you are mistaken in that, Sir, for 'twas I was the Spark that writ the proper Stuff to do you service.

Char. Thou!

Scar. Ay, we that spend our Lives and Fortunes here to serve you,——to be us'd like Pimps and Scoundrels. Come, Sir, satisfy him who 'twas was hid i'th' Closet, when he came in and found you.

Cin. Ha,—is't possible? Was it *Charmante*?

Char. Was it you, *Cinthio*? Pox on't, what Fools are we, we cou'd not know one another by Instinct?

Scar. Well, well, dispute no more this clear Case, but let's hasten to your Mistresses.

Cin. I'm ashamed to appear before *Elaria*.

Char. And I to *Bellemante*.

Scar. Come, come, take Heart of Grace; pull your Hats down over your Eyes; put your Arms across; sigh and look scurvily; your simple Looks are ever a Token of Repentance: come——come along. [Exeunt.

S C E N E

216 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

SCENE *changes to the Inside of the House.*
The Front of the Scene is only a Curtain or Hangings to be drawn up at Pleasure.

Enter Elaria, Bellemante, Mopsophil, and Ladies, dress'd in Masking Habits.

Ela. I am extremely pleas'd with these Habits, Cousin.

Bell. They are *à la Gothic* and *Uncommune*.

Lady. Your Lovers have a very good Fancy, Cousin, I long to see 'em.

Ela. And so do I. I wonder *Scaramouch* stays so, and what Success he has.

Bell. You have no cause to doubt, you can so easily acquit your self; but I, what shall I do? who can no more imagine who shou'd write those Boremes, than who I shall love next, if I break off with *Charmante*.

Lady. If he be a Man of Honour, Cousin, when a Maid protests her Innocence——

Bell. Ay, but he's a Man of Wit too, Cousin, and knows when Women protest most, they likely lye most.

Ela. Most commonly, for Truth needs no asseveration.

Bell. That's according to the Disposition of your Lover, for some believe you most, when you most abuse and cheat 'em; some are so obstinate, they wou'd damn a Woman with Protesting, before she can convince 'em.

Ela. Such a one is not worth convincing, I wou'd not make the World wise at the expence of a Virtue.

Bell. Nay, he shall e'en remain as Heaven made him for me, since there are Men enough for all uses.

Enter Charmante and Cinthio, dress'd in their Gothic Habits, Scaramouch, Harlequin and Musick. Charmante and Cinthio kneel.

Cin. Can you forgive us? [Elaria takes him up.

Bell. That, *Cinthio*, you're convinc'd, I do not wonder; but how *Charmante* is inspir'd, I know not.

[Takes him up.
Char. Let it suffice, I'm satisfy'd, my *Bellemante*.

Ela.

The Emperor of the Moon. 217

Ela. Pray know my Cousin *Florinda*.

[*They salute the Lady.*]

Bell. Come, let us not lose time, since we are all Friends.

Char. The best use we can make of it, is to talk of Love.

Bell. Oh! we shall have time enough for that hereafter; besides, you may make Love in Dancing as well as in Sitting; you may gaze, sigh, and press the Hand, and now and then receive a Kiss, what wou'd you more?

Char. Yes, with a little more.

Bell. We were unreasonable to forbid you that cold Joy, nor shall you wish long in vain, if you bring Matters so about, to get us with my Uncle's Consent.

Ela. Our Fortunes depending solely on his Pleasure, which are too considerable to lose.

Cin. All things are order'd as I have written you at large; our Scenes and all our Properties are ready; we have no more to do but to banter the old Gentleman into a little more Faith, which the next Visit of our new Cabalist *Charmante* will complete. [*The Musick plays.*]

Enter some Anticks, and dance. They all sit the while.

Ela. Your Dancers have performed well, but 'twere fit we knew who we have trusted with this Evening's Intrigue.

Cin. Those, Madam, who are to assist us in carrying on a greater Intrigue, the gaining of you. They are our Kinsmen.

Ela. Then they are doubly welcome.

[*Here is a Song in Dialogue, with Flute Doux and Harpsicords, between a Shepherd and Shepherdess; which ended, they all dance a Figure Dance.*]

Cin. Hark, what Noise is that? sure 'tis in the next Room.

Doct. within.] Scaramouch, Scaramouch!

[*Scaramouch runs to the Door, and holds it fast.*]

Scar. Ha,——the Devil in the likeness of my old Master's Voice, for it is impossible it should be he himself.

218 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Char. If it be he, how got he in? did you not secure the Doors?

Ela. He always has a Key to open 'em. Oh! what shall we do? there's no escaping him; he's in the next Room, thro' which you are to pass.

Doct. *Scaramouch*, Knave, where are you?

Scar. 'Tis he, 'tis he, follow me all——

[He goes with all the Company behind the Front Curtain.]

Doct. within.] I tell you, Sirrah, I heard the Noise of Fiddles.

Peter within.] No surely, Sir, 'twas a Mistake.

[Knocking at the Door.]

Scaramouch having plac'd them all in the Hanging, in which they make the Figures, where they stand without Motion in Postures, he comes out. He opens the Door with a Candle in his Hand.

Enter the Doctor, and Peter with a Light.

Scar. Bless me, Sir! Is it you—or your Ghost?

Doct. 'Twere good for you, Sir, if I were a thing of Air; but as I am a substantial Mortal, I will lay it on as substantially——

[Canes him. He cries.]

Scar. What d'ye mean, Sir? what d'ye mean?

Doct. Sirrah, must I stand waiting your Leisure, while you are roguing here? I will reward ye. *[Beats him.]*

Scar. Ay, and I shall deserve it richly, Sir, when you know all.

Doct. I guess all, Sirrah, and I heard all, and you shall be rewarded for all. Where have you hid the Fiddles, you Rogue?

Scar. Fiddles, Sir!

Doct. Ay, Fiddles, Knave.

Scar. Fiddles, Sir!——Where?

Doct. Here, here I heard 'em, thou false Steward of thy Master's Treasure.

Scar. Fiddles, Sir! Sure 'twas Wind got into your Head, and whistled in your Ears, riding so late, Sir.

Doct. Ay, thou false Varlet, there's another Debt I owe thee, for bringing me so damnable a Lye: My Brother's

The Emperor of the Moon. 219

ther's well—I met his Valet but a League from Town,
and found thy Roguery out. [Beats him. He cries.

Scar. Is this the Reward I have for being so diligent
since you went?

Doct. In what, thou Villain? in what?

[The Curtain is drawn up, and discovers the
Hangings where all of them stand.

Scar. Why look you, Sir, I have, to surprize you with
Pleasure, against you came home, been putting up this
Piece of Tapestry, the best in Italy, for the Rareness of
the Figures, Sir.

Doct. Ha! hum—It is indeed a stately Piece of Work;
how came I by 'em?

Scar. 'Twas sent your Reverence from the Virtuoso, or
some of the Cabalists.

Doct. I must confess, the Workmanship is excellent;—
but still I do insist I heard the Musick.

Scar. 'Twas then the tuning of the Spheres, some Se-
renade, Sir, from the Inhabitants of the Moon.

Doct. Hum, from the Moon,——and that may be.

Scar. Lord, d'ye think I wou'd deceive your Reve-
rence?

Doct. From the Moon, a Serenade,——I see no signs
on't here, indeed it must be so——I'll think on't more
at leisure.

——Prithee what Story's this? [Aside.
[Looks on the Hangings.

Scar. Why, Sir,——'Tis——

Doct. Hold up the Candles higher, and nearer.

[Peter and Scaramouch hold Candles near. He takes
a Perspective, and looks thro it; and coming nearer,
Harlequin, who is plac'd on a Tree in the Hang-
ings, hits him on the Head with his Trunchion.
He starts, and looks about. Harlequin sits still.

Scar. Sir——

Doct. What was that struck me?

Scar. Struck you, Sir! Imagination.

Doct. Can my Imagination feel, Sirrah?

Scar. Oh the most tenderly of any part about one,
Sir!

Doct. Hum——that may be.

220 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Scar. Are you a great Philosopher, and know not that, Sir?

Doct. This Fellow has a glimpse of Profundity.

[*Aside. Looks again.*]

— I like the Figures well.

Scar. You will, when you see 'em by Day-light, Sir.

[*Har. hits him again. The Doctor sees him.*]

Doct. Ha,—Is that Imagination too?—Betray'd, betray'd, undone! run for my Pistols, call up my Servants *Peter*, a Plot upon my Daughter and my Niece!

[*Runs out with Peter. Scaramouch puts out the Candle, they come out of the Hanging, which is drawn away. He places 'em in a Row just at the Entrance.*]

Scar. Here, here, fear nothing, hold by each other, that when I go out, all may go; that is, slip out, when you hear the Doctor is come in again, which he will certainly do, and all depart to your respective Lodgings.

Cin. And leave thee to bear the Brunt?

Scar. Take you no care for that, I'll put it into my Bill of Charges, and be paid all together.

[*Enter the Doctor with Pistols, and Peter.*]

Doct. What, by dark? that shall not save you, Villains, Traitors to my Glory and Repose.—*Peter*, hold fast the Door, let none 'scape.

[*They all slip out.*]

Pet. I'll warrant you, Sir.

[*Doctor gropes about, stamps and calls.*]

Doct. Lights there—Lights—I'm sure they cou'd not 'scape.

Pet. Impossible, Sir.

[*Enter Scaramouch undress'd in his Shirt, with a Light; h: starts.*]

Scar. Bless me!—what's here?

Doct. Ha—Who art thou?

[*Amaz'd to see him enter so.*]

Scar. I, who the Devil are you, and you go to that?

[*Rubs his Eyes, and brings the Candle nearer, looks on him.*]

— Mercy upon us!—Why what is't you, Sir, return'd so soon?

Doct.

The Emperor of the Moon, 221

Doct. Return'd ! [Looking sometimes on him,
sometimes about.]

Scar. Ay, Sir, did you not go out of Town last night, to your Brother the Advocate?

Doct. Thou Villain, thou question'st me, as if thou knew'st not that I was return'd.

Scar. I know, Sir! how shou'd I know? I'm sure I am but just awaked from the sweetest Dream.—

Doct. You dream still, Sirrah, but I shall wake your Rogueship.—Were you not here but now, shewing me a piece of Tapestry, you Villain?

Scar. Tapestry! [Mopsophil listning all the while.]

Doct. Yes Rogue, yes, for which I'll have thy Life.
[Offering a Pistol.]

Scar. Are you stark mad, Sir? or do I dream still?

Doct. Tell me, and tell me quickly, Rogue, who were those Traitors that were hid but now in the Disguise of a piece of Hangings. [Holds the Pistol to his Breast.]

Scar. Bless me! you amaze me, Sir. What conformity has every Word you say, to my rare Dream! Pray let me feel you, Sir,—Are you human?

Doct. You shall feel I am, Sirrah, if thou confests not.

Scar. Confests, Sir! What shall I confests?—I understand not your Cabalistical Language; but in mine, I confests that you wak'd me from the rarest Dream—Where methought the Emperor of the Moon-World was in our House, dancing and revelling; and methoughts his Grace was fallen desperately in love with Mrs. *Elaria*, and that his Brother, the Prince, Sir, of *Thunderland*, was also in love with Mrs. *Bellemante*; and methoughts they descended to court 'em in your Absence—And that at last you surpriz'd 'em, and that they transform'd themselves into a Suit of Hangings to deceive you. But at last, methought you grew angry at something, and they all fled to Heaven again; and after a deal of Thunder and Lightning, I wak'd, Sir, and hearing human Voices here, came to see what the Matter was.

[This while the Doctor lessens his signs of Rage by degrees, and at last stands in deep Contemplation.]

Doct. May I credit this?

222 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Scar. Credit it! By all the Honour of your House, by my unseparable Veneration for the Mathematicks, 'tis true, Sir.

Doct. That famous *Rosycrusian*, who yesterday visited me, told me the Emperor of the Moon was in love with a fair Mortal——This Dream is Inspiration in this Fellow——He must have wondrous Virtue in him, to be worthy of these divine Intelligences. [*Aside.*

——But if that Mortal shou'd be *Elaria!* but no more, I dare not yet suppose it——perhaps the thing was real and no Dream, for oftentimes the grosser part is hurried away in Sleep by the force of Imagination, and is wonderfully agitated——This Fellow might be present in his Sleep,——of this we've frequent Instances——I'll to my Daughter and my Niece, and hear what Knowledge they may have of this.

Mop. Will you so? I'll secure you, the Frolick shall go round. [*Aside.*

Doct. *Scaramouch*, if you have not deceiv'd me in this Matter, time will convince me farther; if it rest here, I shall believe you false.

Scar. Good Sir, suspend your Judgment and your Anger till then.

Doct. I'll do't, go back to bed. [*Ex. Doct. and Peter.*

Scar. No, Sir, 'tis Morning now—and I'm up for all day.——This Madness is a pretty sort of pleasant Disease, when it tickles but in one Vein——Why here's my Master now, as great a Scholar, as grave and wise a Man, in all Argument and Discourse, as can be met with; yet name but the Moon, and he runs into ridicule, and grows as mad as the Wind.

Well Doctor, if thou canst be madder yet,

We'll find a Medicine that shall cure your Fit,

——Better than all *Galenicus*.

[*Goes out.*

S C E N E

SCENE *draws off, discovers Elaria, Belle-
mante and Mopsophil in Night-Gowns.*

Mop. You have your Lessons, stand to it bravely, and
the Town's our own, Madam.

*[They put themselves in Postures of Sleeping, lean-
ing on the Table, Mopsophil lying at their Feet.*

Enter Doctor, softly.

Doct. Ha, not in Bed! this gives me mortal Fears.

Bell. Ah, Prince—— *[She speaks as in her Sleep;*

Doct. Ha, Prince! *[Goes nearer, and listens.*

Bell. How little Faith I give to all your Courtship, who
leaves our Orb so soon. *[In a feign'd Voice.*

Doct. Ha, said she Orb? *[Goes nearer.*

Bell. But since you are of a celestial Race,
And easily can penetrate
Into the utmost limits of the Thought,
Why shou'd I fear to tell you of your Conquest?
——And thus implore your Aid.

*[Rises and runs to the Doctor; kneels, and
holds him fast. He shews signs of Joy.*

Doct. I am ravish'd!

Bell. Ah, Prince Divine, take pity on a Mortal.

Doct. I am rapt!

Bell. And take me with you to the World above!

Doct. The Moon, the Moon she means; I am trans-
ported, over-joy'd, and ecstasy'd!

*[Leaping and jumping from her Hands,
she seems to wake.*

Bell. Ha, my Uncle come again to interrupt us!

Doct. Hide nothing from me, my dear Bellemante
since all already is discover'd to me—and more.

Ela. Oh, why have you wak'd me from the softest
Dream that ever Maid was blest with?

Doct. What—what my best Elaria? *[With over-joy.*

Ela. Methought I entertain'd a Demi-God, one of the
gay Inhabitants of the Moon.

224 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Bell. I'm sure mine was no Dream—I wak'd, I heard,
I saw, I spoke—and danc'd to the Musick of the Spheres;
and methought my glorious Lover ty'd a Diamond Chain
about my Arm—and see 'tis all substantial.

[Shows her Arm.

Ela. And mine a Ring, of more than mortal Lustre.

Doct. Heaven keep me moderate! lest excess of Joy
shou'd make my Virtue less.

[Stifling his Joy.

—There is a wondrous Mystery in this,

A mighty Blessing does attend your Fates.

Go in and pray to the chaste Powers above

To give you Virtue for such Rewards.

[They go in.

—How this agrees with what the learned Cabalist in-
form'd me of last Night! He said, that great *Iredonoxor*,
the Emperor of the Moon, was enamour'd on a fair Mor-
tal. It must be so—and either he descended to court
my Daughter personally, which for the rareness of the
Novelty, she takes to be a Dream; or else, what they
and I beheld, was visionary, by way of a sublime Intel-
ligence:—And possibly—'tis only thus: the People of
that World converse with Mortals.—I must be satisfy'd
in this main Point of deep Philosophy.

I'll to my Study,—for I cannot rest,

Till I this weighty Mystery have discuss'd.

[Ex. very gravely.

S C E N E, *The Garden.*

Enter Scaramouch with a Ladder.

Scar. Tho I am come off *en Cavalier* with my Ma-
ster, I am not with my Mistress, whom I promised to
console this Night, and 'tis but just I shou'd make good
this Morning; 'twill be rude to surprize her sleeping, and
more gallant to wake her with a Serenade at her Window.

[Sets the Ladder to her Window, fetches his
Lute, and goes up the Ladder.

He

The Emperor of the Moon. 225

He plays and sings this Song.

*When Maidens are young and in their Spring
Of Pleasure, of Pleasure, let 'em take their full Swing
full Swing,—full Swing,
And love, and dance, and play, and sing.
For Silvia, believe it, when Youth is done,
There's nought but hum drum, hum drum, hum drum;
There's nought but hum drum, hum drum, hum drum.*

*Then Silvia be wise—be wise—be wise,
The Painting and Dressing for awhile are Supplies,
And may——surprize——
But when the Fire's going out in your Eyes,
It twinkles, it twinkles, it twinkles, and dies.
And then to hear Love, to hear Love from you,
I'ad as live hear an Owl cry——Wit to woo,
Wit to woo, Wit to woo.*

Enter Mopsophil above.

Mop. What woful Ditty-making Mortal's this,
That e'er the Lark her early Note has sung,
Does doleful Love beneath my Casement thrum?
—Ah, Seignior *Scaramouch*, is it you?

Scar. Who shou'd it be that takes such pains to sue?

Mop. Ah, Lover most true blue.

Enter Harlequin in Woman's Clothes.

Har. If I can now but get admittance, I shall not only deliver the young Ladies their Letters from their Lovers, but get some opportunity, in this Disguise, to slip this Billet-Doux into *Mopsophil's* Hand, and bob my Comrade *Scaramouch*.—Ha, What do I see?—My Mistress at the Window, courting my Rival! Ah Gipsy!

Scar. But we lose precious time, since you design me a kind Hour in your Chamber.

Har. Oh Traitor!

Mop. You'll be sure to keep it from *Harlequin*.

Har. Ah yes, he, hang him Fool, he takes you for a Saint.

226 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Scar. *Harlequin!* Hang him, shotten Herring.

Har. Ay, a Cully, a Noddy.

Mop. A meer Zany.

Har. Ah, hard-hearted *Turks*.

Mop. Fit for nothing but a Cuckold.

Har. Monster of Ingratitude! How shall I be reveng'd?

[*Scar. going over the Balcony.*]

—Hold, hold, thou perjur'd Traytor.

[*Cries out in a Woman's Voice.*]

Mop. Ha, discover'd!—a Woman in the Garden!

Har. Come down, come down, thou false perfidious Wretch.

Scar. Who in the Devil's Name, art thou?

And to whom dost thou speak?

Har. To thee, thou false Deceiver, that hast broke thy Vows, thy lawful Vows of Wedlock. [*Bawling out.*]

Oh, oh, that I shou'd live to see the Day. [*Crying.*]

Scar. Who mean you, Woman?

Har. Whom shou'd I mean but thou,—my lawful Spouse?

Mop. Oh Villain! Lawful Spouse!—Let me come to her.

[*Scar. comes down, as Mopsophil flings out of the Balcony.*]

Scar. The Woman's mad—hark ye Jade, how long have you been thus distracted?

Har. E'er since I lov'd and trusted thee, false Varlet.

—See here, the Witness of my Love and Shame.

[*Bawls, and points to her Belly.*]

Just then Mopsophil enters.

Mop. How! with Child! Out Villain, was I made a Property?

Scar. Hear me.

Har. Oh, thou Heathen Christian! was not one Woman enough?

Mop. Ay, Sirrah, answer to that.

Scar. I shall be sacrific'd.

Mop. I am resolv'd to marry to morrow—either to the Apothecary or the Farmer, Men I never saw, to be reveng'd on thee, thou termagant Infidel.

Enter

The Emperor of the Moon. 227

Enter the Doctor.

Doct. What Noise, what Out-cry, what Tumult's this?

Har. Ha, the Doctor!—What shall I do?

[Gets to the Door, Scar. pulls her in.]

Doct. A Woman! some Baud I am sure;—Woman, what's your Business here? ha.

Har. I came, an't like your Seigniorship, to Madam the Governante here, to serve her in the Quality of a *Fille de Chambre* to the young Ladies.

Doct. A *Fille de Chambre*! 'tis so, a she Pimp.

Har. Ah, Seignior— *[Makes his little dapper Leg instead of a Curiosity.]*

Doct. How now, what do you mock me?

Har. Oh Seignior! *[Gets nearer the Door.]*

Mop. Stay, stay, Mistress; and what Service are you able to do the Seignior's Daughters?

Har. Is this Seignior Doctor *Baliardo*, Madam?

Mop. Yes.

Har. Oh! he's a very handsome Gentleman—indeed!

Doct. Ay, ay, what Service can you do, Mistress?

Har. Why Seignior, I can tie a Crevat the best of any Person in *Naples*, and I can comb a Periwig—and I can—

Doct. Very proper Service for young Ladies; you, I believe, have been *Fille de Chambre* to some young Cavaliers.

Har. Most true, Seignior; why shou'd not the Cavaliers keep *Filles de Chambre*, as well as great Ladies *Valets de Chambre*?

Doct. Indeed 'tis equally reasonable.—'Tis a Baud.

[Aside.]

But have you never serv'd Ladies?

Har. Oh yes, I serv'd a Parson's Wife.

Doct. Is that a great Lady?

Har. Ay, surely, Sir, what is she else? for she wore her Mantuas of *Brocade d'or*, Petticoats lac'd up to the Gathers, her Points, her Patches, Paints and Perfumes, and sat in the uppermost place in the Church too.

Mop.

228 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Mop. But have you never serv'd Countesses and Dutchessees?

Har. Oh, yes, Madam; the last I serv'd, was an Alderman's Wife in the City.

Mop. Was that a Countess or a Dutchesse?

Har. Ay, certainly—for they have all the Money; and then for Clothes, Jewels, and rich Furniture, and eating, they out-do the very *Vice-Reine* her self.

Doct. This is a very ignorant running Baud,—therefore first search her for *Billets-Doux*, and then have her pump'd.

Har. Ah, Seignior,—Seignior. [Scar. searches him, finds Letters.]

Scar. Ha, to *Elaria*,—and *Bellemante*!

[Reads the Outside, pops 'em into his Bosom.]

These are from their Lovers.

—Ha, a Note to *Mopsophil*.—Oh, Rogue! have I found you?

Har. If you have, 'tis but Trick for your Trick, Seignior *Scaramouch*, and you may spare the Pumping.

Scar. For once, Sirrah, I'll bring you off, and deliver your Letters.—Sir, do you not know who this is?

Why 'tis a Rival of mine, who put on this Disguise to cheat me of Mistress *Mopsophil*.—See here's a Billet to her.

Doct. What is he?

Scar. A Mungrel Dancing-Master; therefore, Sir, since all the Injury's mine, I'll pardon him for a Dance, and let the Agility of his Heels save his Bones, with your Permission, Sir.

Doct. With all my Heart, and am glad he comes off so comically. [Harlequin dances.]

[A knocking at the Gate. Scar. goes and returns.]

Scar. Sir, Sir, here's the rare Philosopher who was here yesterday.

Doct. Give him Entrance, and all depart.

Enter Charmante.

Char. Blest be those Stars that first conducted me to so much Worth and Virtue; you are their Darling, Sir, for whom they wear their brightest Lustre.

Your

The Emperor of the Moon. 229

Your Fortune is establish'd, you are made, Sir.

Doct. Let me contain my Joy.

[*Keeping in an impatient Joy.*

—May I be worthy, Sir, to apprehend you?

Char. After long searching, watching, fasting, praying, and using all the virtuous means in Nature, whereby we solely do attain the highest Knowledge in Philosophy; it was resolv'd, by strong Intelligence—you were the happy Sire of that bright Nymph, that had infascinated, charm'd, and conquer'd the mighty Emperor *Iredonozor*, the Monarch of the Moon.

Doct. I am undone with Joy! ruin'd with Transport.

[*Aside.*

—Can it—can it, Sir,—be possible?

[*Stifling his Joy, which breaks out.*

Char. Receive the Blessing, Sir, with Moderation.

Doct. I do, Sir, I do.

Char. This very Night, by their great Art, they find, He will descend, and shew himself in Glory.

An Honour, Sir, no Mortal has receiv'd
This sixty hundred years.

Doct. Hum—say you so, Sir; no Emperor ever descend this sixty hundred years? [*Looks sad.*

—Was I deceiv'd last Night?

[*Aside.*

Char. Oh! yes, Sir, often in Disguise, in several Shapes and Forms, which did of old occasion so many fabulous Tales of all the Shapes of *Jupiter*—but never in their proper Glory, Sir, as Emperors. This is an Honour only design'd to you.

Doct. And will his Grace—be here in Person, Sir?

[*Joyful.*

Char. In Person—and with him, a Man of mighty Quality, Sir, 'tis thought, the Prince of *Thunderland*—but that's but whisper'd, Sir, in the Cabal, and that he loves your Niece.

Doct. Miraculous! how this agrees with all I've seen and heard—To Night, say you Sir?

Char. So 'tis conjectur'd, Sir,—some of the Cabalists are of opinion, that last Night there was some Sally from the Moon.

Doct.

230 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. About what Hour, Sir?

Char. The Meridian of the Night, Sir, about the Hours of Twelve or One; but who descended, or in what Shape, is yet uncertain.

Doct. This I believe, Sir.

Char. Why, Sir?

Doct. May I communicate a Secret of that nature?

Char. To any of the Cabalists, but none else.

Doct. Then know——last Night, my Daughter and my Niece were entertain'd by those illustrious Heroes.

Char. Who, Sir, the Emperor, and Prince his Cousin?

Doct. Most certain, Sir.

But whether they appear'd in solid Bodies, or Fantomical, is yet a Question; for at my unlucky approach, they all transform'd themselves into a Piece of Hangings.

Char. 'Tis frequent, Sir, their Shapes are numerous; and 'tis also in their power to transform all they touch, by virtue of a certain Stone they call the *Ebula*.

Doct. That wondrous *Ebula*, which *Gonzales* had?

Char. The same, by virtue of which, all Weight was taken from him, and then with ease the lofty Traveller flew from *Parnassus Hill*, and from *Hymethus Mount*, and high *Gerania*, and *Acrocorinthus*, thence to *Taygetus*, so to *Olympus Top*, from whence he had but one step to the Moon. Dizzy he grants he was.

Doct. No wonder, Sir, Oh happy great *Gonzales*!

Char. Your Virtue, Sir, will render you as happy—but I must haste——this Night prepare your Daughter and your Niece, and let your House be dress'd, perfum'd, and clean.

Doct. It shall be all perform'd, Sir.

Char. Be modest, Sir, and humble in your Elevation; for nothing shews the Wit so poor, as Wonder, nor Birth so mean, as Pride.

Doct. I humbly thank your Admonition, Sir, and shall, in all I can, struggle with human Frailty.

[Brings *Char.* to the Door bare. *Ex.*

Enter Scaramouch, peeping at the other Door.

Scar. So, so, all things go gloriously forward, but my own Amour, and there is no convincing this obstinate
Woman

The Emperor of the Moon. 231

Woman, that 'twas that Rogue *Harlequin* in Disguise, claim'd me; so that I cannot so much as come to deliver the young Ladies their Letters from their Lovers. I must get in with this damn'd Mistress of mine, or all our Plot will be spoil'd for want of Intelligence.

—Hum, the Devil does not use to fail me at a dead Lift. I must deliver these Letters, and I must have this Wench—tho but to be reveng'd on her for abusing me—Let me see—she is resolv'd for the Apothecary or the Farmer. Well, say no more, honest *Scaramouch*; thou shalt find a Friend at need of me—and if I do not fit you with a Spouse, say that a Woman has out-witted me.

A C T III. S C E N E I.

The Street, with the Town-Gate, where an Officer stands with a Staff like a London Constable.

Enter Harlequin riding in a Calash, comes through the Gate towards the Stage, dress'd like a Gentleman sitting in it. The Officer lays hold of his Horse.

Officer. **H**Old, hold, Sir, you I suppose know the Customs that are due to this City of *Naples*, from all Persons that pass the Gates in Coach, Chariot, Calash, or *Siege Volant*.

Har. I am not ignorant of the Custom, Sir, but what's that to me?

Off. Not to you, Sir! why, what Privilege have you above the rest?

Har. Privilege, for what, Sir?

Off. Why for passing, Sir, with any of the before-named Carriages.

Har.

232 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Har. Art mad?—Dost not see I am a plain Baker, and this my Cart, that comes to carry Bread for the Vice-Roy's, and the City's Use?——ha.

Off. Are you mad, Sir, to think I cannot see a Gentleman Farmer and a Calash, from a Baker and a Cart?

Har. Drunk by this Day—and so early too? Oh you're a special Officer; unhand my Horse, Sirrah, or you shall pay for all the Damage you do me.

Off. Hey day! here's a fine Cheat upon the Vice-Roy: Sir, pay me, or I'll seize your Horse.

[*Har. strikes him. They scuffle a little.*

——Nay, and you be so brisk, I'll call the Clerk from his Office.

Calls.——Mr. Clerk, Mr. Clerk.

[*Goes to the Entrance to call the Clerk, the mean time Har. whips a Frock over himself, and puts down the hind part of the Chariot, and then 'tis a Cart.*

Enter Clerk.

Cler. What's the matter here?

Off. Here's a Fellow, Sir, will persuade me, his Calash is a Cart, and refuses the Customs for passing the Gate.

Cler. A Calash——Where?——I see only a Carter and his Cart. [The Officer looks on him.

Off. Ha, what a Devil was I blind?

Har. Mr. Clerk, I am a Baker, that came with Bread to sell, and this Fellow here has stopt me this Hour, and made me lose the sale of my Ware; and being drunk, will out-face me I am a Farmer, and this Cart a Calash.

Cler. He's in an Error, Friend, pass on.

Har. No Sir, I'll have satisfaction first, or the Vice-Roy shall know how he's serv'd by drunken Officers, that are a Nufance to a Civil Government.

Cler. What do you demand, Friend?

Har. Demand,——I demand a Crown, Sir.

Off. This is very hard——Mr. Clerk——If ever I saw in my Life, I thought I saw a Gentleman and a Calash.

Cler. Come, come, gratify him, and see better hereafter.

Off. Here Sir,—if I must, I must. [Gives him a Crown.

Cler. Pass on, Friend.

[*Ex. Clerk.*

Har.

The Emperor of the Moon. 233

Har. *unseen, puts up the back of his Calash, and whips off his Frock, and goes to drive on. The Officer looks on him, and stops him again.*

Off. Hum, I'll swear it is a Calash——Mr. Clerk, Mr. Clerk, come back, come back. [*Runs out to call him. He changes as before.*]

Enter Officer and Clerk.

——Come Sir, let your own Eyes convince you, Sir.

Cler. Convince me, of what, you Sot?

Off. This is a Gentleman, and that a——ha——

[*Looks about on Har.*]

Cler. Stark drunk! Sirrah, if you trouble me at every Mistake of yours thus, you shall quit your Office.

Off. I beg your Pardon, Sir, I am a little in Drink I confes, a little blind and mad——Sir,——This must be the Devil, that's certain. [*The Clerk goes out.*]

Har. *puts up his Calash again, and pulls off his Frock and drives out.*

——Well, now to my thinking, 'tis as plain a Calash again as ever I saw in my Life, and yet I'm satisfy'd 'tis nothing but a Cart. [*Ex.*]

S C E N E *changes to the Doctor's House,*
The Hall.

Enter Scaramouch in a Chair, which is set down and open'd on all sides, and on the top represents an Apothecary's Shop, the Inside being painted with Shelves and rows of Pots and Bottles; Scaramouch sitting in it dress'd in Black, with a short black Cloke, a Ruff, and little Hat.

Scar. The Devil's in't, if either the Doctor, my Master, or *Mopsophil*, know me in this Disguise——And thus I may not only gain my Mistress, and out-wit *Harlequin*, but deliver the Ladies those Letters from their Lovers, which I took out of his Pocket this Morning; and who wou'd suspect an Apothecary for a Pimp?——Nor can the Jade *Mopsophil*, in Honour, refuse a Person of my Gravity, and so well set up.— [*Pointing to his Shop.*]

——Hum, the Doctor here first, this is not so well, but I'm prepar'd with Impudence for all Encounters.

Enter

234 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Enter the Doctor. Scaramouch salutes him gravely.

—Most Reverend Doctor *Baliardo.* [Bows.]

Doct. Seignior—— [Bows.]

Scar. I might thro great Pusillanimity, blush to give you this Anxiety, did not I opine you were as gracious as communicative and eminent; and tho you have no Cognifance of me, your humble Servant,—yet I have of you,—you being fo gravely fram'd for your admirable Skill both in Galenical and Paracelsian *Phænomena's*, and other approv'd Felicities in Vulnerary Emeticks, and purgative Experiences.

Doct. Seignior, — your Opinion honours me—rare Man this.

Sca. And tho I am at present busied in writing—— those few Observations I have accumulated in my Peregrinations, Sir; yet the Ambition I aspir'd to, of being an ocular and arial Witness of your Singularity, made me trespass on your sublimer Affairs.

Doct. Seignior——

Scar. —Besides a violent Inclination, Sir, of being initiated into the Denomination of your learned Family, by the Conjugal Circumference of a Matrimonial Tye, with that singularly accomplish'd Person—Madam, the Governante of your Hostel——

Doct. Hum— A Sweet-heart for *Mopsophil!* [Aside.]

Scar. And if I may obtain your Condescension to my Hymenzal Propositions, I doubt not my Operation with the Fair One.

Doct. Seignior, she's much honour'd in the Overture, and my Abilities shall not be wanting to fix the Concord.

——But have you been a Traveller, Sir?

Scar. Without Circumlocutions, Sir, I have seen all the Regions beneath the Sun and Moon.

Doct. Moon, Sir! You never travell'd thither, Sir?

Scar. Not in *Propria Persona*, Seignior, but by Speculation, I have, and made most considerable Remarks on that incomparable *Terra Firma*, of which I have the compleatest Map in Christendom——and which *Gonzales* himself omitted in his *Cosmographia* of the *Lunar Mundus*.

Doct.

The Emperor of the Moon. 235

Doct. A Map of the *Lunar Mundus*, Sir! may I crave the Honour of seeing it?

Scar. You shall, Sir, together with a Map of *Terra Incognita*; a great Rarity, indeed, Sir.

Enter Bellemante.

Doct. Jewels, Sir, worth a King's Ransom!

Bell. Ha,——What Figure of a Thing have we here, bantering my credulous Uncle?——This must be some Scout sent from our *Forlorn Hope*, to discover the Enemy, and bring in fresh Intelligence.——Hum, that Wink tipt me some Tidings, and she deserves not a good Look, who understands not the Language of the Eyes.——Sir, Dinner's on the Table.

Doct. Let it wait, I am employ'd——

[*She creeps to the other side of Scaramouch, who makes Signs with his Hand to her.*]

Bell. Ha, 'tis so:—This Fellow has some Novel for us, some Letter or Instructions, but how to get it—

[*As Scar. talks to the Doctor, he takes the Letters by degrees out of his Pocket, and unseen, gives 'em Bellemante behind him.*]

Doct. But this Map, Seignior; I protest you have fill'd me with Curiosity. Has it signify'd all things so exactly, say you?

Scar. Omitted nothing, Seignior, no City, Town, Village, or Villa; no Castle, River, Bridge, Lake, Spring or Mineral.

Doct. Are any, Sir, of those admirable Mineral Waters there, so frequent in our World?

Scar. In abundance, Sir: the Famous *Garamanteen*, a young *Italian*, Sir, lately come from thence, gives an account of an excellent *Scaturigo*, that has lately made an Ebulation there, in great Reputation with the Lunar Ladies.

Doct. Indeed, Sir! be pleas'd Seignior, to 'solve me some Queries that may enode some appearances of the Virtue of the Water you speak of.

Scar. Pox upon him, what Questions he asks—but I must on [*Aside.*] Why Sir, you must know,—the Tincture of this Water upon Stagnation ceruleates, and the Crocus upon

236 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

upon the Stones flavesc; this he observes—to be, Sir, the Indication of a generous Water.

Doct. Hum—— [Gravely nodding.

Scar. Now, Sir, be pleas'd to observe the three Regions: if they be bright, without doubt *Mars* is powerful; if the middle Region or *Camera* be palled, *Filia Solis* is breeding.

Doct. Hum.

Scar. And then the third Region, if the *Fæces* be volatile, the Birth will soon come *in Balneo*. This I observed also in the Laboratory of that ingenious Chymist *Lysidono*, and with much Pleasure animadverted that Mineral of the same Zenith and Nadir, of that now so famous Water in *England*, near that famous Metropolis, call'd *Islington*.

Doct. Seignior——

Scar. For, Sir, upon the Infusion, the Crows Head immediately procures the Seal of *Hermes*; and had not *Lac Virginis* been too soon suck'd up, I believe we might have seen the Consummation of *Amalgama*.

[*Bellemante* having got her Letters, goes off. She makes Signs to him to stay a little. He nods.

Doct. Most likely, Sir.

Scar. But, Sir, this *Garamanteen* relates the strangest Operation of a Mineral in the Lunar World, that ever I heard of.

Doct. As how, I pray, Sir?

Scar. Why, Sir, a Water impregnated to a Circulation with *prima Materia*; upon my Honour, Sir, the strongest I ever drank of.

Doct. How, Sir! did you drink of it?

Scar. I only speak the words of *Garamanteen*, Sir.

——Pox on him, I shall be trapt. [Aside.

Doct. Cry Mercy, Sir.—— [Bows.

Scar. The Lunary Physicians, Sir, call it *Urinam Vulcani*, it calybeates every ones Excrements more or less according to the Gradus of the natural Calor.——To my Knowledge, Sir, a Smith of a very fiery Constitution is grown very opulent by drinking these Waters.

Doct. How, Sir, grown rich by drinking the Waters, and to your Knowledge?

Scar.

The Emperor of the Moon. 237

Scar. The Devil's in my Tongue. To my Knowledge, Sir; for what a Man of Honour relates, I may safely affirm.

Doct. Excuse me, Seignior——

[*Putts off his Hat again gravely.*]

Scar. For, Sir, conceive me how he grew rich; since he drank those Waters he never buys any Iron, but hammers it out of *Stercus Proprius*.

Enter Bellemante with a Billet.

Bell. Sir, 'tis three a Clock, and Dinner will be cold.

[*Goes behind Scaramouch, and gives him the Note and goes out.*]

Doct. I come Sweet-heart; but this is wonderful.

Scar. Ay, Sir, and if at any time Nature be too infirm, and he prove Costive, he has no more to do, but apply a Load-stone *ad Anum*.

Doct. Is't possible?

Scar. Most true, Sir, and that facilitates the Journey *per Viscera*.——But I detain you, Sir:——another time Sir,—I will now only beg the Honour of a Word or two with the Governante, before I go.

Doct. Sir, she shall wait on you, and I shall be proud of the Honour of your Conversation. [*Ex. Doctor.*]

Enter to him Harlequin, dress'd like a Farmer, as before.

Har. Hum——What have we here, a Taylor or a Tumbler?

Scar. Ha——Who's this?—Hum—What if it shou'd be the Farmer that the Doctor has promis'd *Mopsophil* to? My Heart misgives me. [*They look at each other a while.*]
Who wou'd you speak with, Friend?

Har. This is, perhaps, my Rival the Apothecary.—Speak with, Sir! why what's that to you?

Scar. Have you Affairs with Seignior Doctor, Sir?

Har. It may be I have, it may be I have not. What then, Sir?

While they seem in angry Dispute, enter Mopsophil.

Mop. Seignior Doct or tells me I have a Lover waits me, sure it must be the Farmer or the Apothecary. No matter which, so a Lover, that welcomest Man alive. I am resoly'd to take the first good Offer, tho but in revenge
of

238 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

of *Harlequin* and *Scaramouch*, for putting Tricks upon me.—Ha,——Two of 'em!

Scar. My Mistress here! [*They both bow, and advance, putting each other by.*]

Mop. Hold Gentlemen,—do not worry me.
Which of you wou'd speak with me?

Both. I, I, I, Madam——

Mop. Both of you?

Both. No, Madam, I, I.

Mop. If both Lovers, you are both welcome; but let's have fair Play, and take your turns to speak.

Har. Ay, Seignior, 'tis most uncivil to interrupt me.

Scar. And disingenuous, Sir, to intrude on me.

[*Putting one another by.*]

Mop. Let me then speak first.

Har. I'm dumb.

Scar. I acquiesce.

Mop. I was inform'd there was a Person here had Propositions of Marriage to make me.

Har. That's I, that's I— [*Shoves Scar. away.*]

Scar. And I attend to that consequential *Finis*.

[*Shoves Har. away.*]

Har. I know not what you mean by your *Finis*, Seignior; but I am come to offer my self this Gentlewoman's Servant, her Lover, her Husband, her Dog in a Halter, or any thing.

Scar. Him I pronounce a Paltroon, and an ignominious Utensil, that dares lay claim to the renowned Lady of my *Primum Mobile*; that is, my best Affections. [*In Rage.*]

Har. I fear not your hard Words, Sir, but dare aloud pronounce, if *Donna Mopsophil* like me, the Farmer, as well as I like her, 'tis a Match, and my Chariot's ready at the Gate to bear her off, d'ye see.

Mop. Ah, how that Chariot pleads. [*Aside.*]

Scar. And I pronounce, that being intoxicated with the sweet Eyes of this refulgent Lady, I come to tender her my noblest Particulars, being already most advantageously set up with the circumstantial Implements of my Occupation.
[*Points to the Shop.*]

Mop.

The Emperor of the Moon. 239

Mop. A City Apothecary, a most genteel Calling—
Which shall I chuse?—Seignior Apothecary, I'll not
expostulate the circumstantial Reasons that have occasion'd
me this Honour.

Scar. Incomparable Lady, the Elegancy of your Re-
partees most excellently denotes the Profundity of your Ca-
pacity.

Har. What the Devil's all this? Good Mr. Conjuror,
stand by—and don't fright the Gentlewoman with your
elegant Profundities. [Puts him by.]

Scar. How, a Conjuror! I will chastise thy vulgar Ig-
norance, that yclepes a Philosopher a Conjuror. [In Rage.]

Har. Losaphers!—Prithee, if thou be'st a Man,
speak like a Man—then.

Scar. Why, what do I speak like? what do I speak
like?

Har. What do you speak like!—why you speak like
a Wheel-Barrow.

Scar. How!

Har. And how.

*[They come up close together at half Sword Parry;
stare on each other for a while, then put up and
bow to each other civilly.]*

Mop. That's well, Gentlemen, let's have all Peace,
while I survey you both, and see which likes me best.

*[She goes between 'em, and surveys 'em both,
they making ridiculous Bows on both sides,
and Grimaces the while.]*

—Ha, now on my Conscience, my two foolish Lovers,
Harlequin and *Scaramouch*; how are my Hopes de-
feated?—but faith I'll fit you both. [She views 'em both.]

Scar. So, she's considering still, I shall be the happy
Dog. [Aside.]

Har. She's taking aim, she cannot chuse but like me
best. [Aside.]

Scar. Well, Madam, how does my Person propagate?
[Bowling and smiling.]

Mop. Faith Seignior, now I look better on you, I do
not like your Phisnomy so well as your Intellects; you
dis-

240 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

discovering some circumstantial Symptoms that ever denote a villanous Inconstancy.

Scar. Ah, you are pleas'd, Madam.

Mop. You are mistaken, Signior, I am displeas'd at your Grey-Eyes, and black Eye-brows, and Beard; I never knew a Man with those Signs, true to his Mistress or his Friend. And I wou'd sooner wed that Scoundrel *Scaramouch*, that very civil Pimp, that mere pair of chymical Bellows that blow the Doctor's projecting Fires, that Deputy-urinal Shaker, that very Guzman of *Salamanca*, than a Fellow of your infallible *Signum Mallis*.

Har. Ha, ha, ha, you have your Answer, Seignior Friskin——and may shut up your Shop and be gone.—
Ha, ha, ha.

Scar. Hum, sure the Jade knows me. [*Aside.*

[*Mop.* And as for you, Seignior——

Har. Ha, Madam. [*Bowing and smiling.*

Mop. Those Lanthorn Jaws of yours, with that most villanous Sneer and Grin, and a certain fierce Air of your Eyes, looks altogether most fanatically——which with your notorious Whey Beard, are certain Signs of Knavery and Cowardice; therefore I'ad rather wed that Spider *Harlequin*, that Skeleton Buffoon, that Ape of Man, that Jack of Lent, that very Top, that's of no use, but when 'tis whip'd and lash'd, that piteous Property I'ad rather wed than thee.

Har. A very fair Declaration.

Mop. You understand me——and so adieu sweet Glister-pipe, and Seignior Dirty-Boots, Ha, ha, ha. [*Runs out.*

[*They stand looking simply on each other, without speaking a while.*

Scar. That I shou'd not know that Rogue *Harlequin*.

[*Aside.*

Har. That I shou'd take this Fool for a Physician. [*Aside.*
—— How long have you commenc'd Apothecary, Seignior?

Scar. Ever since you turn'd Farmer,——Are not you a damn'd Rogue to put these Tricks upon me, and most dishonourably break all Articles between us?

Har.

The Emperor of the Moon. 241

Har. And are not you a damn'd Son of a——something——to break Articles with me ?

Scar. No more Words, Sir, no more Words, I find it must come to Actions, draw. [Draws.]

Har. Draw!——so I can draw, Sir. [Draws.]

They make a ridiculous cowardly Fight. Enter the Doctor, which they seeing, come on with more Courage. He runs between, and with his Cane beats the Swords down.

Doct. Hold, hold, what mean you, Gentlemen ?

Scar. Let me go, Sir, I am provok'd beyond measure, Sir.

Doct. You must excuse me, Seignior.

[Parlies with Harlequin.]

Scar. I dare not discover the Fool for his Master's sake, and it may spoil our Intrigue anon ; besides, he'll then discover me, and I shall be discarded for bantering the Doctor. [Aside.]

—A Man of Honour to be so basely affronted here.

[The Doctor comes to appease Scaramouch.]

Har. Shou'd I discover this Rascal, he wou'd tell the old Gentleman I was the same that attempted his House to day in Woman's Clothes, and I should be kick'd and beaten most insatiably.

Scar. What Seignior, for a Man of Parts to be impos'd upon, and whip'd thro the Lungs here——like a Mountebank's Zany for Sham Cures——Mr. Doctor, I must tell you 'tis not civil.

Doct. I am extremely sorry for it, Sir,—and you shall see how I will have this Fellow handled for the Affront to a Person of your Gravity, and in my House.——
Here *Pedro.*

Enter Pedro.

——Take thts Intruder, or bring some of your Fellows hither, and tofs him in a Blanket. [Exit Pedro.]

Har. going to creep away, Scar. holds him.

Har. Hark ye, bring me off, or I'll discover all your Intrigue. [Aside to him.]

Scar. Let me alone.

242 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. I'll warrant you some Rogue that has some Plot on my Niece and Daughter.

Scar. No, no, Sir, he comes to impose the grossest Lye upon you, that ever was heard of.

Enter Pedro with others, with a Blanket. They put Harlequin into it, and toss him.

Har. Hold, hold, I'll confess all, rather than indure it.

Doct. Hold, what will you confess, Sir.

[He comes out, makes sick Faces.

Scar. — That he's the greatest Impostor in Nature. Wou'd you think it, Sir? he pretends to be no less than an Ambassador from the Emperor of the Moon, Sir.

Doct. Ha, Ambassador from the Emperor of the Moon! *[Pulls off his Hat.*

Scar. Ay, Sir, thereupon I laugh'd, thereupon he grew angry—I laugh'd at his Resentment, and thereupon we drew, and this was the high Quarrel, Sir.

Doct. Hum—Ambassador from the Moon. *[Pauses.*

Scar. I have brought you off, manage him as well as you can.

Har. Brought me off, yes, out of the Frying-pan into the Fire. Why, how the Devil shall I act an Ambassador? *[Aside.*

Doct. It must be so, for how shou'd either of these know I expected that Honour? *[He addresses him with profound Civility to Har.*

Sir, if the Figure you make, approaching so near ours of this World, have made us commit any undecent Indignity to your high Character, you ought to pardon the Frailty of our mortal Education and Ignorance, having never before been bless'd with the Descension of any from your World.

Har. What the Devil shall I say now? *[Aside.*

—I confess I am, as you may see by my Garb, Sir, a little *Incognito*, because the publick Message I bring is very private— which is, that the mighty *Iredonozor*, Emperor of the Moon, with his most worthy Brother, the Prince of *Thunderland*, intend to sup with you to Night.

—Therefore be sure you get good Wine.—Tho by the way let me tell you, 'tis for the sake of your fair Daughter.

Scar.

The Emperor of the Moon. 243

Scar. I'll leave the Rogue to his own Management. I presume, by your whispering, Sir, you wou'd be private, and humbly begging pardon, take my leave. [*Exit.*]

Har. You have it, Friend. Does your Niece and Daughter drink, Sir?

Doct. Drink, Sir?

Har. Ay, Sir, drink hard?

Doct. Do the Women of your World drink hard, Sir?

Har. According to their Quality, Sir, more or less; the greater the Quality, the more profuse the Quantity.

Doct. Why that's just as 'tis here; but your Men of Quality, your Statesmen, Sir, I presume they are sober, learned and wise.

Har. Faith, no Sir; but they are, for the most part, what's as good, very proud and promising, Sir, most liberal of their Word to every fauning Suiter, to purchase the state of long Attendance, and cringing as they pass; but the Devil of a Performance, without you get the Knack of bribing in the right Place and Time; but yet they all defy it, Sir.

Doct. Just, just, as 'tis here.—But pray, Sir, how do these Great Men live with their Wives?

Har. Most nobly, Sir, my Lord keeps his Coach, my Lady hers; my Lord his Bed, my Lady hers; and very rarely see one another, unless they chance to meet in a Visit, in the Park, the Mall, the Tour, or at the Basset-Table, where they civilly salute and part, he to his Mistress, she to play.

Doct. Good lack! just as 'tis here.

Har. —Where, if she chance to lose her Money, rather than give out, she borrows of the next amorous Coxcomb, who, from that Minute, hopes, and is sure to be paid again one way or other, the next kind Opportunity.

Doct. — Just as 'tis here.

Har. As for the young Fellows that have Money, they have no Mercy upon their own Persons, but wearing Nature off as fast as they can, swear, and whore and drink, and borrow as long as any rooking Citizen will lend,

244 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

till having dearly purchased the heroick Title of a Bully or a Sharper, they live pity'd of their Friends, and despis'd by their Whores, and depart this transitory World, diverse and sundry ways.

Doct. Just, just as 'tis here!

Har. As for the Citizen, Sir, the Courtier lies with his Wife; he in revenge, cheats him of his Estate, till rich enough to marry his Daughter to a Courtier, again gives him all—unless his Wife's over-gallantry breaks him; and thus the World runs round.

Doct. The very same 'tis here.—Is there no preferment, Sir, for Men of Parts and Merit?

Har. Parts and Merit! what's that? a Livery, or the handsome tying a Cravat; for the great Men prefer none but their Foot-men and Valets.

Doct. By my Troth just as 'tis here.

—Sir, I find you are a Person of most profound Intelligence—under Favour, Sir, are you a Native of the Moon, or this World?

Har. The Devil's in him for hard Questions.

—I am a *Neapolitan*, Sir.

Doct. Sir, I honour you; good luck, my Countryman! How got you to the Region of the Moon, Sir?

Har. A plaguy inquisitive old Fool!

—Why, Sir,—Pox on't, what shall I say?—I being—one day in a musing Melancholy, walking by the Sea-side—there arose, Sir, a great Mist, by the Sun's exhaling of the Vapours of the Earth, Sir.

Doct. Right, Sir.

Har. In this Fog, or Mist, Sir, I was exhal'd.

Doct. The Exhalations of the Sun draw you to the Moon, Sir?

Har. I am condemn'd to the Blanket again.—I say, Sir, I was exhal'd up, but in my way—being too heavy, was drop'd into the Sea.

Doct. How, Sir, into the Sea?

Har. The Sea, Sir, where the Emperor's Fisherman casting his Nets, drew me up, and took me for a strange and monstrous Fish, Sir,—and as such, presented me to his Mightiness,—who going to have me Spitchcock'd for

his own use. —————

Doct.

The Emperor of the Moon. 245

Doct. How, Sir, eating?

Har. What did me I, Sir (Life being sweet) but fall on my Knees, and besought his Gloriousness not to eat me, for I was no Fish, but a Man; he ask'd me of what Country, I told him of *Naples*; whereupon the Emperor overjoy'd ask'd me if I knew that most reverend and learned Doctor *Baliardo*, and his fair Daughter. I told him I did: whereupon he made me his Bed-fellow, and the Confident to his Amour to *Seigniora Elaria*.

Doct. Bless me, Sir! how came the Emperor to know my Daughter?

Har. There he is again with his damn'd hard Questions.—Know her, Sir,—Why—you were walking abroad one day.

Doct. My Daughter never goes abroad, Sir, farther than our Garden.

Har. Ay, there it was indeed, Sir,—and as his Highness was taking a Survey of this lower World—thro a long Perspective, Sir,—he saw you and your Daughter and Neice, and from that very moment fell most desperately in love.—But hark, the sound of Timbrels, Kettle-Drums and Trumpets.—The Emperor, Sir, is on his way, prepare for his Reception.

[A strange Noise is heard of Brass Kettles, and Pans, and Bells, and many tinkling things.]

Doct. I'm in a Rapture—How shall I pay my Gratitude for this great Negotiation?—but as I may, I humbly offer, Sir.

[Presents him with a rich Ring and a Purse of Gold.]

Har. Sir, as an Honour done the Emperor, I take your Ring and Gold. I must go meet his Highness.

[Takes leave.]

Enter to him Scaramouch, as himself.

Scar. Oh, Sir! we are astonish'd with the dreadful sound of the sweetest Musick that ever Mortal heard, but know not whence it comes. Have you not heard it, Sir?

Doct. Heard it, yes, Fool,—'tis the Musick of the Spheres, the Emperor of the Moon-World is descending.

Scar. How, Sir, no marvel then, that looking towards the South, I saw such splendid Glories in the Air.

246 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Ha, saw'st thou ought descending in the Air?

Scar. Oh, yes, Sir, Wonders! Haste to the old Gallery, whence, with the help of your Telescope, you may discover all.

Doct. I would not lose a moment for the lower Universe.

Enter Elaria, Bellemante, Mopsophil, dress'd in rich Antick Habits.

Ela. Sir, we are dress'd as you commanded us, what is your farther Pleasure?

Doct. It well becomes the Honour you're design'd for, this Night to wed two Princes—come with me and know your happy Fate. [*Ex. Doctor and Scar.*]

Ela. Bless me! My Father, in all the rest of his Discourse shows so much Sense and Reason, I cannot think him mad, but feigns all this to try us.

Bell. Not mad! Marry Heavens forbid, thou art always creating Fears to startle one; why if he be not mad, his want of Sleep this eight and forty hours, the Noise of strange unheard-of Instruments, with the fantastick Splendor of the unusual Sight, will so turn his Brain and dazzle him, that in Grace and Goodness, he may be mad, if he be not;—come, let's after him to the Gallery, for I long to see in what showing Equipage our princely Lovers will address to us. [*Exeunt.*]

S C E N E, *The Gallery richly adorn'd with Scenes and Lights.*

Enter Doctor, Elaria, Bellemante, and Mopsophil. Soft Musick is heard.

Bell. Ha——Heavens! what's here? what Palace is this?—No part of our House, I'm sure.

Ela. 'Tis rather the Apartment of some Monarch.

Doct. I'm all amazement too; but must not show my Ignorance.—Yes, *Elaria*, this is prepar'd to entertain two Princes.

Bell. Are you sure on't, Sir? are we not, think you, in that World above, I often heard you speak of? in the Moon, Sir?

Doct.

The Emperor of the Moon.

Doct. How shall I resolve her—For ought I know
are.

Ela. Sure, Sir, 'tis some Inchantment.

Doct. Let not thy female Ignorance profane the highest
Mysteries of natural Philosophy: To Fools it seems In-
chantment—but I've a Sense can reach it—sit and ex-
pect the Event.—Hark, I am amaz'd, but must conceal
my Wonder, that Joy of Fools—and appear wise in
Gravity.

Bell. Whence comes this charming Sound, Sir?

Doct. From the Spheres—it is familiar to me.

*[The Scene in the Front draws off, and shows the
Hill of Parnassus; a noble large Walk of Trees
leading to it, with eight or ten Negroes upon Pe-
destals, rang'd on each side of the Walks. Next
Keplair and Galileus descend on each side, oppo-
site to each other, in Chariots, with Perspectives
in their Hands, as viewing the Machine of the
Zodiack. Soft Musick plays still.]*

Doct. Methought I saw the Figure of two Men de-
scend from yonder Cloud on yonder Hill.

Ela. I thought so too, but they are disappear'd, and
the wing'd Chariot's fled.

Enter Keplair and Galileus.

Bell. See, Sir, they approach. *[The Doctor rises
and bows.]*

Kepl. Most reverend Sir, we, from the upper World,
thus low salute you—*Keplair and Galileus* we are call'd,
sent as Interpreters to Great *Iredonozor*, Emperor of the
Moon, who is descending.

Doct. Most reverend Bards—profound Philosophers—
thus low I bow to pay my humble Gratitude.

Kepl. The Emperor, Sir, salutes you, and your fair
Daughter.

Gal. And, Sir, the Prince of *Thunderland* salutes you,
and your fair Neice.

Doct. Thus low I fall to thank their Royal Goodness.

[Kneels. They take him up.]

Bell. Came you, most reverend Bards, from the Moon-
World?

248 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Kep. Most lovely Maid, we did.

Doct. May I presume to ask the manner how?

Kep. By Cloud, Sir, thro the Regions of the Air, down to the fam'd *Parnassus*; thence by Water, along the River *Helicon*, the rest by Post upon two wing'd Eagles.

Doct. Sir, are there store of our World inhabiting the Moon?

Kep. Oh, of all Nations, Sir, that lie beneath it in the Emperor's Train! Sir, you will behold abundance; look up and see the Orbal World descending; observe the Zodiack, Sir, with her twelve Signs.

[Next the Zodiack descends, a Symphony playing all the while; when it is landed, it delivers the twelve Signs: Then the Song, the Persons of the Zodiack being the Singers. After which, the Negroes dance and mingle in the Chorus.]

A Song for the Zodiack.

LET murmuring Lovers no longer repine,
But their Hearts and their Voices advance;
Let the Nymphs and the Swains in the kind Chorus join,
And the Satyrs and Fauns in a Dance.
Let Nature put on her Beauty of May,
And the Fields and the Meadows adorn;
Let the Woods and the Mountains resound with the Joy,
And the Echoes their Triumph return.

Chorus.

For since Love wore his Darts,
And Virgins grew Coy;
Since these wounded Hearts,
And those cou'd destroy,
There ne'er was more Cause for your Triumphs and Joy.

Hark, hark, the Musick of the Spheres,
Some Wonder approaching declares;
Such, such, as has not bless'd your Eyes and Ears
This thousand, thousand, thousand Years.

See,

The Emperor of the Moon. 249

*See, see what the Force of Love can make,
Who rules in Heaven, in Earth and Sea;
Behold how he commands the Zodiack,
While the fix'd Signs unbinging all obey.
Not one of which, but represents
The Attributes of Love,
Who governs all the Elements
In Harmony above.*

Chorus.

*For since Love wore his Darts,
And Virgins grew coy;
Since these wounded Hearts,
And those cou'd destroy,
There ne'er was more Cause for your Triumphs and Joy.*

*The wanton Aries first descends,
To show the Vigor and the Play,
Beginning Love, beginning Love attends,
When the young Passion is all-over Joy,
He bleats his soft Pain to the fair curled Throng,
And he leaps, and he bounds, and loves all the day long.
At once Love's Courage and his Slavery
In Taurus is express'd,
Tho' o'er the Plains the Conqueror be,
The generous Beast
Does to the Yoke submit his noble Breast;
While Gemini smiling and twining of Arms,
Shews Love's soft Indearments and Charms;
And Cancer's slow Motion the degrees do express,
Respectful Love arrives to Happiness.
Leo his Strength and Majesty,
Virgo her blushing Modesty,
And Libra all his Equity.
His Subtilty does Scorpio show,
And Sagittarius all his loose desire,
By Capricorn his forward Humour know,
And Aqua, Lovers Tears that raise his Fire,
While Pisces, which intwin'd do move,
Shew the soft Play, and wanton Arts of Love.*

Chorus.

*For since Love wore his Darts,
And Virgins grew coy;
Since these wounded Hearts,
And those cou'd destroy,
There ne'er was more Cause for Triumphs and Joy.*

—See how she turns, and sends her Signs to Earth.—
Behold the Ram, *Aries*—see *Taurus* next descends;
then *Gemini*—see how the Boys embrace.—Next
Cancer, then *Leo*, then the *Virgin*; next to her *Libra*—
Scorpio, *Sagittar*, *Capricorn*, *Aquarius*, *Pisces*. This
eight thousand Years no Emperor has descended, but
Incognito; but when he does, to make his Journey more
magnificent, the Zodiack, Sir, attends him.

Doct. 'Tis all amazing, Sir.

Rep. Now, Sir, behold the Globick World descends
two thousand Leagues below its wonted Station, to shew
Obedience to its proper Monarch.

[*After which, the Globe of the Moon appears, first
like a new Moon, as it moves forward it in-
creases till it comes to the Full. When it is de-
scended, it opens, and shews the Emperor and
the Prince. They come forth with all their
Train, the Flutes playing a Symphony before
them, which prepares the Song. Which ended the
Dancers mingle as before.*

A S O N G.

ALL Joy to Mortals, Joy and Mirth,
Eternal IO'S sing;
The Gods of Love descend to Earth,
Their Darts have lost the Sting.
The Youth shall now complain no more
Of Sylvia's needless Scorn,
But she shall love, if he adore,
And melt when he shall burn.

The

The Emperor of the Moon. 251

*The Nymph no longer shall be shy,
But leave the jilting Road;
And Daphne now no more shall fly
The wounded panting God;
But all shall be serene and fair,
No sad Complaints of Love
Shall fill the gentle whispering Air,
No echoing Sighs the Grove.*

*Beneath the Shades young Strephon lies,
Of all his Wish possess'd;
Gazing on Sylvia's charming Eyes,
Whose Soul is there confess'd.
All soft and sweet the Maid appears,
With Looks that know no Art.
And tho' she yields with trembling Fears,
She yields with all her Heart.*

— See, Sir, the Cloud of Foreigners appears, *French, English, Spaniards, Daves, Turks, Russians, Indians,* and the nearer Climes of Christendom; and lastly, Sir, behold the mighty Emperor. —

[*A Chariot appears, made like a Half Moon, in which is Cinthio for the Emperor, richly dress'd, and Charmante for the Prince, rich, with a good many Heroes attending. Cinthio's Train born by four Cupids. The Song continues while they descend and land. They address themselves to Elaria and Bellemante.*

Doct. falls on his Face, the rest bow very low as they pass. They make signs to Keplair.

Kepl. The Emperor wou'd have you rise, Sir, he will expect no Ceremony from the Father of his Mistress.

[*Takes him up.*

Doct. I cannot, Sir, behold his Mightiness—the Splendor of his Majesty confounds me.

Kepl. You must be moderate, Sir, it is expected.

[*The two Lovers make all the Signs of Love in dumb show to the Ladies, while the soft Musick plays again from the End of the Song.*

Doct.

252 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Shall I not have the Joy to hear their heavenly Voices, Sir?

Kep. They never speak to any Subject, Sir, when they appear in Royalty, but by Interpreters, and that by way of Stentraphon, in manner of the Delphick Oracles.

Doct. Any way, so I may hear the Sense of what they wou'd say.

Kep. No doubt you will—But see the Emperor commands by Signs his Foreigners to dance.

[*Soft Musick changes.*

A very Antick Dance. The Dance ended, the Front Scene draws off, and shows a Temple, with an Altar, one speaking thro a Stentraphon from behind it. Soft Musick plays the while.

Kep. Most Learned Sir, the Emperor now is going to declare himself, according to his Custom, to his Subjects. Listen.—

Sten. Most Reverend Sir, whose Virtue did incite us,
Whose Daughter's Charms did more invite us;
We come to grace her with that Honour,
That never Mortal yet had done her;
Once only, *Jove* was known in Story,
To visit *Semele* in Glory.
But fatal 'twas, he so enjoy'd her,
Her own ambitious Flame destroy'd her.
His Charms too fierce for Flesh and Blood,
She dy'd embracing of her God.
We gentler marks of Passion give,
The Maid we love, shall love and live;
Whom visibly we thus will grace,
Above the rest of human Race.
Say, is't your Will that we shou'd wed her,
And nightly in Disguises bed her?

Doct. The Glory is too great for Mortal Wife.

[*Kneels with Transport.*

Sten. What then remains, but that we consummate
This happy Marriage in our splendid State?

Doct. Thus low I kneel, in thanks for this great Blessing.

The Emperor of the Moon. 253

Cinthio takes Elaria by the Hand; Charmante, Bellemante; two of the Singers in white being Priests, they lead 'em to the Altar, the whole Company dividing on either side. Where, while a Hymeneal Song is sung, the Priest joins their Hands: The Song ended, and they marry'd, they come forth; but before they come forward, two Chariots descend one on one side above, and the other on the other side; in which is Harlequin dress'd like a Mock Hero, with others; and Scaramouch in the other, dress'd so in Helmets.

Scar. Stay mighty Emperor, and vouchsafe to be the Umpire of our Difference. [*Cinthio signs to Keplairs*

Kepl. What are you?

Scar. Two neighbouring Princes to your vast Dominion.

Har. Knights of the Sun, our honourable Titles, And fight for that fair Mortal, *Mopsophil.*

Mop. Bless us! — my two precious Lovers, I'll warrant; well, I had better take up with one of them, than lie alone to Night.

Scar. Long as two Rivals we have lov'd and hop'd, Both equally endeavour'd, and both fail'd. At last by joint Consent, we both agreed To try our Titles by the Dint of Lance, And chose your Mightiness for Arbitrator.

Kepl. The Emperor gives Consent.

[*They both, all arm'd with gilded Lances and Shields of Black, with Golden Suns painted. The Musick plays a fighting Tune. They fight at Barriers, to the Tune. — Harlequin is often foil'd, but advances still; at last Scaramouch throws him, and is Conqueror; all give Judgment for him.*

Kepl. The Emperor pronounces you are Victor. —

[*To Scar.*

Doct. Receive your Mistress, Sir, as the Reward of your undoubted Valour —

[*Presents Mopsophil.*

Scar. Your humble Servant, Sir, and Scaramouch returns you humble Thanks.

[*Puts off his Helmet.*

Doct.

254 *The Emperor of the Moon.*

Doct. Ha,—*Scaramouch!* [*Bawls out, and falls in a Chair. They all go to him.*]

My Heart misgives, me——Oh, I am undone and cheated every way. [*Bawling out.*]

Kept. Be patient, Sir, and call up all your Virtue,
You're only cur'd, Sir, of a Disease
That long has reign'd over your nobler Faculties.
Sir, I am your Physician, Friend and Counsellor;
It was not in the Power of Herbs or Minerals,
Of Reason, common Sense, and right Religion,
To draw you from an Error that unmann'd you.

Doct. I will be patient, Gentlemen, and hear you.
——Are not you *Ferdinand*?

Kept. I am,—and these are Gentlemen of Quality,
That long have lov'd your Daughter and your Niece;
Don Cinthio this, and this is *Don Charmante*,
The Vice-Roy's Nephews both.
Who found as Men——'twas impossible to enjoy 'em,
And therefore try'd this Statagem.

Cin. Sir, I beseech you, mitigate your Grief,
Altho indeed we are but mortal Men,
Yet we shall love you, serve you, and obey you.

Doct. Are not you then the Emperor of the Moon?
And you the Prince of *Thunderland*?

Cin. There's no such Person, Sir.
These Stories are the Fantoms of mad Brains,
To puzzle Fools withal—the Wise laugh at 'em—
Come, Sir, you shall no longer be impos'd upon.

Doct. No Emperor of the Moon, and no Moon-
World!

Char. Ridiculous Inventions.
If we'ad not lov'd you, you'ad been still impos'd on;
You had brought a Scandal on your learned Name,
And all succeeding Ages had despis'd it. [*He leaps up.*]

Doct. Burn all my Books, and let my Study blaze,
Burn all to Ashes, and be sure the Wind
Scatter the vile contagious monstrous Lyes.
——Most Noble Youths—you've honour'd me with your
Alliance, and you, and all your Friends, Assistances in
this glorious Miracle, I invite to Night to revel with
me.

me.—Come all and see my happy Recantation of all the Follies, Fables have inspir'd till now. Be pleasant to repeat your Story, to tell me by what kind degrees you cozen'd me.

I see there's nothing in Philosophy——
Of all that writ, he was the wisest Bard, who spoke this mighty Truth——

“ He that knew all that ever Learning writ,
“ Knew only this—that he knew nothing yet.

EPILOGUE,

To be spoken by Mrs. Cooke.

With our old Plays, as with dull Wife it fares,
To whom you have been marry'd tedious Years,
You cry——She's wondrous good, it is confess'd,
But still 'tis Chapon Bouillé at the best; }
That constant Dish can never make a Feast:
Yet the pall'd Pleasure you must still pursue,
You give so small Incouragement for new;
And who would drudge for such a wretched Age,
Who want the Bravery to support one Stage?
The wiser Wits have now new Measures set,
And taken up new Trades, that they may hate.
No more your nice fantastick Pleasures serve,
Your Pimps you pay, but let your Poets starve.
They long in vain for better Usage hop'd,
Till quite undone and tir'd, they dropt and dropt;
Not one is left will write for thin third Day,
Like desperate Pickeroons, no Prize no Play;
And when they have done their best, the Recompence
Is, Damn the Set, his Play wants common Sense.

Ill-natur'd Wits, who can so ill requite
 The drudging Slaves, who for your Pleasure write.
 Look back on flourishing Rome, ye proud Ingrates,
 And see how she her thriving Poets treats:
 Wisely she priz'd 'em at the noblest Rate,
 As necessary Ministers of State,
 And Contributions rais'd to make 'em great.
 They from the publick Rank she did maintain,
 And freed from want, they only writ for Fame;
 And were as useful in a City held,
 As formidable Armies in the Field.
 They but a Conquest over Men pursu'd,
 While these by gentle force the Soul subdu'd.
 Not Rome in all her happiest Pomp cou'd show
 A greater Cæsar than we boast of now;
 Augustus reigns, but Poets still are low.
 May Cæsar live, and while his mighty Hand
 Is scattering Plenty over all the Land;
 With God-like Bounty recompensing all,
 Some fruitful drops may on the Muses fall;
 Since honest Pens do his just cause afford
 Equal Advantage with the useful Sword.



T H E
Amorous Prince.

P R O L O G U E.

WELL! you expect a Prologue to the Play,
And you expect it too Petition-way;
With Chapeau bas beseeching you t' excuse
A damn'd Intrigue of an unpractis'd Muse;
Tell you it's Fortune waits upon your Smiles,
And when you frown, Lord how you kill the whites!
Or else to rally up the Sins of th' Age,
And bring each Fop in Town upon the Stage;
And in one Prologue run more Vices o'er,
Than either Court or City knew before:
Ah! that's a Wonder which will please you too,
But my Commission's not to please you now.
First then for you grave Dons, who love no Play
But what is regular, Great Johnson's way;
Who hate the Monsieur with the Farce and Droll,
But are for things well said with Spirit and Soul;
'Tis

'Tis you I mean, whose Judgment will admit
 No Interludes of fooling with your Wit ;
 You're here defeated, and anon will cry,
 'Sdeask ! wou'd 'twere treason to write Comedy.
 So ! there's a Party lost ; now for the rest,
 Who swear they'd rather hear a smutty Jest
 Spoken by Nokes or Angel, than a Scene
 Of the admir'd and well-penn'd Cataline ;
 Who love the comick Hat, the Fig and Dance,
 Things that are fitted to their Ignorance :
 You too are quite undone, for here's no Farce
 Damn me ! you'll cry, this Play will be mine A——
 Not serious, nor yet comick, what is't then ?
 Th' imperfect Issue of a lukewarm Brain :
 'Twas born before its time, and such a Whelp ;
 As all the after-lickings could not help.
 Bait it then as ye please, we'll not defend it,
 But he that dis-approves it, let him mend it.

Dra-

Dramatis Personæ.

M E N.

Frederick, Son to the Duke.

Curtius, his Friend.

Lorenzo, a rich extravagant Lord, a kind of Favorite to
Frederick.

Antonio, a Nobleman of *Florence*.

Alberto, his dear Friend, a Nobleman also.

Pietro, Man to *Curtius*.

Galliard, Servant to the Prince.

Valet to *Antonio*.

W O M E N.

Clarina, Wife to *Antonio*.

Ismenia, Sister to *Antonio*, in love with *Alberto*.

Laura, Sister to *Lorenzo*, in love with *Curtius*.

Cloris, Sister to *Curtius*, disguis'd like a Country Maid,
in love with *Frederick*

Isabella, Woman to *Clarina*.

Lucia, Maid to *Cloris*.

Guilham, Man to *Cloris*, a Country-fellow.

Pages and Musick.

SCENE, *The Court of Florence.*

A C T

ACT I. SCENE I.

The Chamber of Cloris.

Enter Cloris dress'd in her Night Attire, with Frederick dressing himself.

Clo. **A**ND will you leave me now to Fears,
Which Love it self can hardly satisfy?
But those, and that together sure will kill me,
If you stay long away.

Fred. My Dear, 'tis almost day, and we must part;
'Should those rude Eyes 'mongst whom thou dwell'st
perceive us,
'Twould prove unhappy both to thee and me.

Clor. And will you, Sir, be constant to your Vows?

Fred. Ah *Cloris!* do not question what I've sworn;
If thou would'st have it once again repeated,
I'll do't. By all that's good, I'll marry thee;
By that most Holy Altar, before which we kneel'd,
When first I saw the brightest Saint that e'er ador'd it;
I'll marry none but thee, my dearest *Cloris.*

Clor. Sir, you have said enough to gain a credit
With any Maid, tho she had been deceiv'd
By some such Flatteries as these before.
I never knew the pains of Fear till now; [*Sighs.*
And you must needs forgive the Faults you make,
For had I still remain'd in Innocence,
I should have still believ'd you.

Fred. Why dost thou not, my Love?

Clor. Some doubts I have, but when I look on you,
Tho I must blush to do so, they all vanish;
But I provide against your absence, Sir.

Fred.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 261

Fred. Make no provision, *Cloris*, but of Hope,
Prepare thy self against a Wedding-day,
When thou shalt be a little Deity on Earth.

Clor. I know not what it is to dwell in Courts,
But sure it must be fine, since you are there;
Yet I could wish you were an humble Shepherd,
And knew no other Palace than this Cottage;
Where I would weave you Crowns, of Pinks and Daisies,
And you should be a Monarch every *May*.

Fred. And *Cloris*, I could be content to sit
With thee, upon some shady River's Bank,
To hear thee sing, and tell a Tale of Love.
For these, alas! I could do any thing;
A Sheep-hook I could prize above a Sword;
An Army I would quit to lead a Flock,
And more esteem that Chaplet wreath'd by thee,
Than the victorious Bay:
All this I could, but Dear I have a Father,
Whom for thy sake, to make thee great and glorious,
I would not lose my Int'rest with.
But *Cloris*, see, the unkind day approaches,
And we must kiss and part.

Clor. Unkind it is indeed, may it prove so
To all that wish its presence,
And pass as soon away,
That welcome Night may re-assume its place,
And bring you quickly back.

Fred. With great impatience I'll expect that Hour,
That shall conduct me in its Shades to thee;
Farewel.

Clor. Farewel Sir, if you must be gone. [Sighs.]

Fred. One Kiss, and then indeed I will be gone.

[Kisses her.]

A new blown Rose kist by the Morning Dew,
Has not more natural Sweetness.
Ah *Cloris*! can you doubt that Heart,
To whom such Blessings you impart?
Unjustly you suspect that Prize,
Won by such Touches and such Eyes.

My

262 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

My Fairest, turn that Face away,
Unless I could for ever stay;
Turn but a little while I go.

Clor. Sir, I must see the last of you.

Fred. I dare not disobey; adieu till Evening. [Exit.

Enter Lucia.

Clor. How now, *Lucia*; is my Father up?

Luc. No, not a Mouse stirs yet; I have kept a true
Watch all this Night, for I was cruelly afraid lest we
should have been surpriz'd—

Is the Prince gone? but why do I ask, that may read it
in your sad Looks.

Clor. Yes, he is gone, and with him too has taken—

[Sighs.

Luc. What has he taken? I'll swear you frighten me.

Clor. My Heart, *Lucia*.

Luc. Your Heart, I am glad 'tis no worse.

Clor. Why, what dost think he should have taken?

Luc. A thing more hard to hard to have been reco-
vered again.

Clor. What thing prithee?

Luc. Your Maiden-head.

Clor. What's that?

Luc. A thing young Gallants long extremely for,
And when they they have it too, they say
They care not a Daisy for the Giver.

Clor. How comest thou so wise, *Lucia*?

Luc. Oh the fine Gentleman that comes a-nights with
the Prince, told me so much, and bid me be sure never to
part with it for fine Words; for Men would lye as often
as they swore; and so bid me tell you too.

Clor. Oh *Lucia*!

Luc. Why do you sigh?

Clor. To think if Princes were like common Men,
How I should be undone,
Since I have given him all I had to give;
And who that looks on him can blame my Faith?

Luc. Indeed he surpasses *Damon* far;
But I'ad forgot my self, you are the Prince's Wife;
He said you should be kneel'd to, and ador'd,

And

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 263

And never look'd on but on Holy-days:
That many Maids should wait upon your call,
And strow fine Flowers for you to tread upon.
Musick and Love should daily fill your Ears,
And all your other Senses should be ravish'd
With wonders of each kind, great as your Beauty.

Clor. *Lucia*, methinks you have learnt to speak fine things.

Luc. I have a thousand more I've heard him say;
Oh I could listen a whole Night to hear him talk:
But hark, I hear a Noise, the House is up,
And must not find us here.

Clor. Lock up this Box of Jewels for me.

Luc. Oh rare! what did these come to night?

Clor. Yes, yes, away.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A Grove.*

Enter Curtius and Pietro.

Cur. I wonder the Prince stays so long;
I do not like these Night-works;
Were I not confident of *Cloris's* Virtue,
——Which shall no more be tempted.
I hear some coming, and hope 'tis he——

Pietro, are the Horses ready?

Piet. Yes my Lord.

[*Exit.*]

Enter Frederick.

Cur. Sir, you are welcome from *Cloris's* Arms.

Fred. With much ado, I am got loose from those fair Fetters, but not from those of her Beauty;
By these she still inflames me,
In spite of all my humours of Inconstancy;
So soft and young, so fair and innocent,
So full of Air, and yet of Languishment;
So much of Nature in her Heart and Eyes,
So timorous and so kind without disguise:
Such untaught Sweets in every part do move,
As 'gainst my Reason does compel my Love;
Such artless smiles look so unorder'd too,
Gains more than all the charms of Courts can do;

From

264 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

From Head to Foot, a spotless Statue seems,
 As Art, not Nature, had compos'd her Limbs;
 So white, and so unblemish'd, oh *Curtius!*
 I'm ravish'd beyond Sense when I but think on't;
 How much more must my Surprize be,
 When I behold these Wonders.

Cur. And have you seen her, Sir, in all this Beauty?
 Oh Hell! [*Aside.*]

Fred. Curtius, I will not hide my Soul from thee;
 I have seen all the marvels of that Maid.

Cur. My Soul, learn now the Art of being disguis'd;
[*Aside.*]

—'Tis much, my Lord, that one
 Bred in such simple Innocence,
 Should learn so soon so much of Confidence:
 Pray, Sir, what Arts and Cunning do you use?

Fred. Faith time and importunity refuse no body.

Cur. Is that the way? had you no other Aids?
 Made you no promise to her, Sir, of Marriage?

Fred. Oh, yes in abundance, that's your only bait,
 And tho' they cannot hope we will perform it,
 Yet it secures their Honour and my Pleasure.

Cur. Then, Sir, you have enjoy'd her?

Fred. Oh yes, and gather'd Sweets
 Would make an Anchoret neglect his Vow,
 And think he had mistook his way to future bliss,
 Which only can be found in such Embraces;
 'Twas hard to gain, but, *Curtius,* when once Victor,
 Oh how the joys of Conquest did enslave me!

Cur. But, Sir, methinks 'tis much that she should yield,
 With only a bare promise that you'd marry her.

Fred. Yes, there was something more——but——

Cur. But, what Sir, you are not married.

Fred. Faith yes, I've made a Vow,
 And that you know would go as far as any other Man.

Cur. But she it seems forgot you were the Prince?

Fred. No, she urg'd that too,
 And left no Arguments unus'd
 Might make me sensible of what I did;
 But I was fixt, and overcame them all,

Repeating still my Vows and Passions for her,
Till in the presence of her Maid and Heaven
We solemnly contracted.

Cur. But, Sir, by your permission was it well?

Fred. What wouldst thou have him do
That's all on fire, and dies for an Enjoyment?

Cur. But having gain'd it, do you love her still?

Fred. Yes, yes, extremely,
And would be constant to the Vows I've made,
Were I a Man, as thou art of thy self;
But with the aid of Counsels I must chuse,
And what my Soul adores I must refuse.

Cur. This Passion, Sir, Possession will destroy,
And you'll love less, the more you do enjoy.

Fred. That's all my hope of cure; I'll ply that game,
And slacken by degrees th' unworthy flame.

Cur. Methinks, my Lord, it had more generous been
To've check'd that flame when first it did begin,
E'er you the flighted Victory had won,
And a poor harmless Virgin quite undone:
And what is worse, you've made her love you too.

Fred. Faith that's the greater mischief of the two;
I know to such nice virtuous Souls as thine,
My juster Inclination is a Crime:

But I love Pleasures which thou canst not prize,
Beyond dull gazing on thy Mistress' Eyes,
The lovely Object which enslaves my Heart,
Must yet more certain Cures than Smiles impart:

—And you on *Laura* have the same design.

Cur. Yes, Sir, when justify'd by Laws divine.

Fred. Divine! a pleasant Warrant for your Sin,
Which being not made, we ne'er had guilty been.

But now we speak of *Laura*,
Prithee when is't that I shall see that Beauty?

Cur. Never I hope [*Aside.*] I know not, Sir,
Her Father still is cruel, and denies me,
What she and I have long made suit in vain for:
But, Sir, your Interest might prevail with him,
When he shall know I'm one whom you esteem;

266 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

He will allow my flame, and my address,
He whom you favour cannot doubt Success.

Fred. This day I will begin to serve thee in it.

Cur. Sir, 'twill be difficult to get access to her,
Her Father is an humorous old Man,
And has his fits of Pride and Kindness too.

Fred. Well, after Dinner I will try my Power,
And will not quit his Lodgings till I have won him.

Cur. I humbly thank you, Sir.

Fred. Come let us haste, the Day comes on apace.

[*Ex. Fred.*]

Cur. I'll wait upon you, Sir.

Oh, *Cloris*, thou'rt undone, false amorous Girl;
Was it for this I bred thee in obscurity,
Without permitting thee to know what Courts meant,
Lest their too powerful Temptation
Might have betray'd thy Soul?
Not suffering thee to know thy Name or Parents,
Thinking an humble Life might have secur'd thy Virtue:
And yet I should not hate thee for this Sin,
Since thou art bred in so much Innocence,
Thou couldst not dream of Falsity in Men:
Oh that it were permitted me to kill this Prince,
This false perfidious Prince;
And yet he knows not that he has abus'd me.
When did I know a Man of so much Virtue,
That would refuse so sweet and soft a Maid?
—No, he is just and good, only too much misled
By Youth and Flattery;
And one to whom my Soul is ty'd by Friendship;
—Yet what's a Friend, a name above a Sister?
Is not her Honour mine?
And shall not I revenge the loss of it?
It is but common Justice.
But first I'll try all gentle means I may,
And let him know that *Cloris* is my Sister;
And if he then persevere in his Crime,
I'll lay my Interest and my Duty by,
And punish him, or with my Honour die.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE

SCENE III. *The Apartment of Antonio.*

Enter Lorenzo pulling in of Isabella.

Lor. Nay, nay, *Isabella*, there's no avoiding me now, you and I must come to a parley. Pray what's the reason you took no notice of me, when I came with so civil an address too?

Isab. Can you ever think to thrive in an Amour, when you take notice of your Mistress, or any that belongs to her, in publick, and when she's a married Woman too?

Lor. Good *Isabella*, the loser may have leave to speak, I am sure it has been a plaguy dear Amour to me.

Isab. Let me hear you name that again, and you shall miss of my assistance.

Lor. Nay, do but hear me a little; I vow 'tis the strangest thing in the World, a Man must part from so much Money as I have done, and be confin'd to Signs and Grimaces only, to declare his Mind in: if a Man has a Tongue, let him exercise it, I say, as long as he pays for speaking.

Isab. Again with your paying for't? I see you are not to be reclaim'd; farewell——

Lor. Stay good *Isabella*, stay, and thou shalt hear not one word of that more, tho I am soundly urg'd to't.

Isab. Yes, yes, pray count them, do; I know you long to be at it, and I am sure you will find you are in Arrears to us.

Lor. Say you so, I am not of that opinion: but well, ——let me see——here 'tis, here 'tis, ——my Bill of Charge for courting *Clarina*.

[Draws out his Table Book, and reads.]

Isab. And here's mine for the returns that have been made you; begin, begin. *[Pulls out her Book.]*

Lor. Item, two hundred Crowns to *Isabella* for undertaking.

Isab. Item, I have promis'd *Lorenzo* to serve him in his Amour with all Fidelity.

268 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Lor. Well, I own that Debt paid, if you keep your word——out with it then—— [*He crosses that out.*
Item, two thousand Crowns in a Bracelet for *Clarina*;
 what say you to that now, *Isabella*?

Isab. *Item*, the day after they were presented, she saluted you with a smile at the Chappel.

Lor. And dost thou think it was not dearly bought?

Isab. No Man in *Florence* should have had it a Souce cheaper.

Lor. Say you so, *Isabella*? out with it then.

[*Crosses it out.*

Item, one hundred more to thee for presenting them.

Isab. Which I did with six lyes in your Commendation, worth ten Pistoles a piece for the exactness of a Lye; write there indebted to me——

Lor. Nay then thou dost deserve it: Rests due to *Isabella*.

[*Writes.*

Item, Innumerable Serenades, Night-walks, Affronts and Fears; and lastly, to the Poets for Songs, and the like.

Isab. All which was recompensed in the excessive laughing on you that Day you praunc'd under our Window on Horse-back, when you made such a deal of *Capriol* and *Curvet*.

Lor. Yes, where I ventur'd my Neck to shew my Activity, and therefore may be well accounted amongst my Losses.

Isab. Then she receiv'd your Presents, suffer'd your Serenades, without sending her Foot-men to break your Pate with the Fiddles.

Lor. Indeed that was one of the best Signs; for I have been a great Sufferer in that kind upon the like occasions: but dost thou think in Conscience that this should satisfy?

Isab. Yes, any reasonable Man in the World, for the first Month at least; and yet you are still up with your Expences, as if a Lady of her Quality were to be gain'd without them.——Let me hear of your Expences more, and I'll——

Lor. Oh sweet *Isabella*! upon my Knees I beg thou wilt take no fatal Resolution; for I protest, as I am a
 Man

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 269

Man of Honour, and adore thy Sex, thou shalt only see, not hear of my Expences more; and for a small testimony of it, here take this; there's twenty Pistoles upon Reputation. *[Gives her Money.]*

Isab. Fy, fy, 'tis not brave, nor generous to name the Sum, you should have slid it into my Coat, without saying what you had done.

Lor. What signifies that mun, as long as 'tis current, and you have it sure?

Isab. Well, leave the management of your Affairs to me——What shall we do? here's *Alberto*.

Enter Alberto.

Lor. Well, who can help it? I cannot walk invisible.

Alb. *Lorenzo*, what making Love to *Isabella*?

Lor. She'll serve, my Lord, for want of a better.

Isab. That's but a coarse Complement.

Lor. 'Twill serve to disguise a Truth however.

[Aside to her. Ex. Isab.]

Faith I'll tell you, Sir, 'twas such another Damsel as this, that sav'd me five hundred Pound once upon a time; and I have lov'd the whole Tribe of Waiting-women the better ever since.

Alb. You have reason; how was it?

Lor. Why look you, Sir, I had made Love a long time to a Lady; but she shall be nameless, since she was of a quality not to be gain'd under the aforesaid Sum: well, I brought it, came powder'd and perfum'd, and high in expectation.

Alb. Well, Sir.

Lor. And she had a very pretty Wench, who was to conduct me, and in the dark too; and on my Conscience, I e'en fell aboard of her, and was as well accommodated for my five, as five hundred Pounds, and so return'd.

Alb. A great defeat to the Lady the while, on my word.

Lor. Ay, she smelt the Plot, and made a Vow to follow the *Italian* mode for the future; and be serv'd in Affairs of that kind by none but an old Woman.

270 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Alb. 'Twas wittily resolv'd.

Lor. Are you for the Presence this Morning ?

Alb. No, I have business here with *Antonio*.

Lor. Your Servant, my Lord.

[*Exit.*

Alb. I do not like this Fellow's being here,
The most notorious Pimp and Rascal in *Italy* ;
'Tis a vile shame that such as he should live,
Who have the form and sence of Man about them,
And in their Action Beast ;
And that he thrives by too.

Enter Isabella.

— *Isabella*, is *Antonio* stirring ?

Isab. He is, please your Lordship to walk in.

Alb. You may tell him I wait here :

For I would avoid all opportunity of seeing *Clarina*.

[*Aside.*

Isab. My Lord, you need not stand upon Ceremonies.

[*Exit Alberto.*

Enter Clarina and Ismena, dress'd like one another in every thing, laughing and beholding one another.

— Dress'd already ! now on my conscience I know not which is which : Pray God *Antonio* be not mistaken at night, for I'll be sworn I am by day-light.

Ism. Dost think I may pass thus for *Clarina* ?

Isab. Madam, you are the same to a hair ; would I might never stir if I can do any thing but wonder.

Clar. But hark, *Isabella*, if thou thou'dst have heard amiss, and that thy information should not be good, thou hast defeated us of a design, wherein we promise our selves no little pleasure.

Ism. Yes I vow, all the Jest is lost if it be so.

Isab. I doubt it will be a true Jest on your side. [*Aside.*

— I warrant you, Madam, my Intelligence is good ; and to assure you of what I have said, I dare undertake you shall hear the same over again : for just now *Alberto* is come to visit my Lord, who I am sure will entertain him with no other stories, but those of his Jealousy, and to persuade him to court you.

Clar. 'Tis strange, since he set him that Task so long ago, he would not begin before.

Ism.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 271

Ism. Nay, pray God he begin now; Sister, he has hitherto took me for thee, and sometimes his Eyes give me hope of a secret Fire within, but 'twill not out; and I am so impatient till he declares himself, that if he do not do it soon, I shall e'en tell him who I am; for perhaps the Wife takes off the appetite, which would sharpen upon knowledge of the Virgin.

Clar. What then, you'll have all the Sport to your self? —But, *Ismena*, remember my little Revenge on *Antonio* must accompany your Love to *Alberto*.

Isab. But why this resemblance? for, Madam, since he never saw you, and takes *Ismena* to be you; might you not still pass so, without this likeness?

Clar. Didst thou not say *Antonio* left the Court and City, on purpose to give *Alberto* the more freedom to court me?—Whilst he was away, I needed but retire, and *Ismena* appear, and 'twould suffice; but now he is return'd, he may chance to see them together, *en passant*, or so, and this dress will abuse him as well as *Alberto*; for without that, this Plot of ours signifies little.

Ism. Ay, truly for my part, I have no other design than doing my Sister a service.

Isab. The Plot is very likely to thrive I see, since you are so good at dissembling.

Ism. Fie *Isabella*, what an ill opinion you have of me?—But Sister, 'tis much *Alberto* being so intimate with *Antonio*, should never see you all this whole six Months of your being married.

Clar. Had you been bred any where but in a Monastery, you would have known 'tis not the custom here for Men to expose their Wives to the view of any.

Isab. I hear them coming, let's away, and pray listen to the Truths I have already told you. [*They retire.*]

S C E N E IV.

Enter Antonio and Alberto. Clarina and Ismena listen.

Alb. Once more *Antonio*, welcome back to Court.

272 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ant. Oh my dear Friend, I long'd for thy Embraces;
—How goes the Game I left with thee to play?
What says my Wife, my beautiful *Clarina*?

Alb. *Clarina!*——

Ant. Yes *Clarina*, have you not seen her yet?
I left the Court on purpose, for 'twas not handsome
For me to introduce you,
Lest she had look'd upon't as some design.

Alb. Seen her—yes—

Ant. And I conjur'd her too, to give you freedoms
Even equal to *Antonio*;
As far as I durst press with modesty,
And with pretence of Friendship;
And have you not attempted her?

Alb. Yes——but 'tis in vain.

Ant. Oh villanous Dissembler!

[*Aside.*

Alb. She's cruel, strangely cruel,
And I'm resolv'd to give the Courtship o'er.

Ant. Sure, Friend, thou hast not us'd thy wonted
power.

Alb. Yes, all that I know I am master of, I us'd.

Ant. But didst thou urge it home? did she not see
Thy Words and Actions did not well agree?
Canst thou dissemble well? didst cry and melt,
As if the pain you but express'd, you felt?
Didst kneel, and swear, and urge thy Quality,
Heightning it too with some Disgrace on me?
And didst thou too assail her feeble side?
For the best bait to Woman is her Pride;
Which some mis-call her Guard:
Didst thou present her with the set of Jewels?
For Women naturally are more inclin'd
To Avarice, than Men: pray tell me Friend.

—Vile Woman! did she take them——

Alb. I never ask'd her that.

Clar. Poor *Antonio*, how I pity him.

[*Aside.*

Ant. No!

Alb. No, I've done enough to satisfy thy Jealousy.
Here take your set of Jewels back again; [*Gives a Box.*
Upon my Life *Clarina* is all Chastity.

Ant.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 273

Ant. I were the happiest Man on Earth, were this but
But what are single Courtships?—give her these, (true ;
Which will assist thy Tongue to win her Heart ;
And that once got, the other soon will follow ;
There's far more Women won by Gold than Industry ;
Try that, my dear *Alberto*,
And save thy Eyes the trouble of dissembling.

Alb. Content thee here, and do not tempt thy Fate,
I have regard unto thy Honour, Friend ;
And should she yield, as Women are no Gods,
Where were thy future Joys ?
What is't could make thee happy, or restore
That true Contentment which thou hadst before ?
Alas ! thou tempt'st me too, for I am frail,
And Love above my Friendship may prevail.

Ant. This will not do ;
No, as thou art my Friend, and lov'st my Honour,
Pursue *Clarina* further ;
Rally afresh, and charge her with this Present,
Disturb her every night with Serenades ;
Make Love-Songs to her, and then sing them too ;
Thou hast a Voice enough alone to conquer.

Alb. Fool *Antonio* ! [*Aside.*]

Ant. Come, wilt thou undertake it once again ?

Alb. I would not.

Ant. I am resolv'd to get this trial made,
And if thou dost refuse thy Amity,
I'll try a Friend more willing, tho' less faithful ;
With thee my Wife and Honour too are safe :
For should she yield, and I by that were lost,
'Twere yet some ease,
That none but thou wert witness to't.

Alb. Well, if it must be done, I'd rather do't,
Than you should be expos'd to th' scorn of others.

Ant. Spoke like my noble Friend ;
Come dine with her to day, for I must leave you,
And give you all the opportunity
A real Lover wishes with a Mistress.

Ism. So we have heard enough. [*Ex. Clar, and Ism.*]

274 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ant. Oh were *Clarina* chaste, as on my Soul
I cannot doubt, more than that I believe
All Womankind may be seduc'd from Virtue;
I were the Man of all the World most bless'd
In such a Wife, and such a Friend as thou.

Alb. But what if I prevail, *Antonio*?

Ant. Then I'll renounce my faith in Womankind,
And place my satisfaction in my Amity.

—But see she comes, I'll leave you to your task.

Enter Ismena and Isabella.

Ism. *Antonio* not yet gone—

This must secure me. *[Pulls down her Veil.*

Ant. *Clarina*, why thus clouded?

Isab. I see he has most happily mistaken.

Ism. I was going, Sir, to visit *Laura*—

Ant. You must not go, I've business to the Duke,
And you must entertain my Friend till my return;
It is a freedom not usual here amongst Ladies,
But I will have it so;

Whom I esteem, I'll have you do so too.

Ism. Sir, I am all obedience.

[Exit Antonio, she pulls off her Veil; Alberto salutes her with seeming lowness.]

Alb. Oh how my Soul's divided
Between my Adoration and my Amity! *[Aside.]*
Friendship, thou sacred band, hold fast thy Interest;
For yonder Beauty has a subtle power,
And can undo that knot, which other Arts
Could ne'er invent a way for.

Enter Antonio, and listens at the Door.

Ant. I'll see a little how he behaves himself. *[Aside.]*

Alb. But she's *Antonio's* Wife; my Friend *Antonio*,
[Aside.]

A Youth that made an Interest in my Soul,
When I had Language scarce to express my sense of it.

Ant. Death! he speaks not to her. *[Aside.]*

Alb. So grew we up to Man, and still more fit;
And shall a gaudy Beauty,
A thing which t'other day I never saw,
Deprive my Heart of that kind Heat,

And

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 275

And place a new and unknown Fire within? [*Aside.*

Clarina, 'tis unjust.

Ism. Sir, did you speak to me?

Alb. I have betray'd my self— [*Aside.*

Madam, I was saying how unjust it was
Antonio should leave me all alone with a Lady,
Being certainly the worst to entertain them in the World.

Ant. His Face assures me he speaks of no Love to her
now.

Ism. Alas, he speaks not of me.

Sure *Isabella* was mistaken, who told me that he lov'd me.

—*Alberto*, if thou art oblig'd to me, [*Aside.*

For what I have not yet observ'd in thee,
Oh do not say my Heart was easily won,
But blame your Eyes, whose forces none can shun.

Ant. Not a word, what can he mean by this?

Ism. Sir, will you please to sit a while?

Isab. Madam, the inner Chamber is much better, for
there he may repose upon the Cushions till my Lord's
return; I see he is not well—

—And you are both sick of one Disease. [*Aside.*

Alb. I thank you, here's more Air,

—And that I need, for I am all on fire, [*Aside.*
And every Look adds fuel to my flame.

—I must avoid those Eyes, whose Light misguides me:

—Madam, I have some business calls me hence,
And cannot wait my Friend's return.

Ism. *Antonio*, Sir, will think 'tis my neglect
That drove you hence; pray stay a little longer.

Alb. You shall command me, if you can dispense
With so dull Company.

Isab. I can with any thing *Antonio* loves.

Alb. Madam, it is a Virtue that becomes you;
For tho' your Husband should not merit this,
Your Goodness is not less to be admir'd;
But he's a Man so truly worth your Kindness,
That 'twere a Sin to doubt

Your Passion for him were not justly paid.

Ism. Sir, I believe you, and I hope he thinks
That my opinion of him equals yours;

276 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

'Tis plain he loves me not ; [*Aside.*]

Perhaps his Virtue, thinking me *Clarina*,
May hide the real Passion of his Soul.

Oh Love, what dangerous Paths thou mak'st us tread !

Ant. Cold, cold as Devotion, oh inhuman Friend-
ship ! [*Aside.*]

Alb. What shall I do next ? I must either be rude,
And say nothing, or speak of Love to her ;
And then, my Friend, thou'rt lost should I prevail,
And I'm undone should she not hear my Tale,
Which for the World I would not have her hear ;
And yet I fear my Eyes too much declare.

Ism. Since he's in so ill an Humour, let's leave him,
I'm satisfy'd now that thou'rt mistaken.

[*Ex. Ismena and Isabella unseen.*]

Alb. But they shall gaze no more on hers,
Nor stray beyond the limits of a just Salute.

—I will my Honour to my Love prefer,
And my *Antonio* shall out-rival her. [*Looks about, and
misses them.*]

—Ah, am I left alone !—how frail is Man !
That which last Moment I resolv'd upon,
I find my Heart already disapproves,
And grieve her loss ; can this be ought but Love ?
My Soul's dissatisfy'd now she is gone,
And yet but now I wish'd to be alone.

—Inform me, Love, who shares the better part,
Friendship, or thee, in my divided Heart. [*Offers to go.*]

Enter Antonio, and stays him.

Ant. Whither in such haste ?

Thou look'st e'en as sad as a Lover repuls'd,
I fear that Fate's not thine.

Alb. Now for a lye to satisfy him. [*Aside.*]
Prithee discharge me of this toil of dissembling,
Of which I grow as weary as she's of hearing it.

Ant. Indeed !

Alb. Sure thou hast a design to make her hate me.

Ant. Do you think so in earnest, why, was she angry ?

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 277

Alb. Oh! hadst thou seen her pretty blushing Scorn,
Which she would fain have hid,
Thou woulst have pitied what I made her suffer.

Ant. Is't possible!

And didst present her with the Box of Jewels?

Alb. Yes.

Ant. And kneel, and cry and swear, and——

Alb. All, all.

Ant. I hardly gave thee time for so much Courtship,
——But you are sure she was displeas'd with it?

Alb. Extremely.

Ant. Enough *Alberto*; adieu to thee and Friendship.

Alb. What mean you?

Ant. Ask your own Guilt, it will inform thee best.

Alb. Thou canst not think *Clarina* has abus'd thee.

Ant. I do not think she has, nor have you try'd her;
In that you have not only disoblig'd me,
But now you would impose upon my Weakness.

——Did I not see how unconcern'd you were,
And hardly paying her a due respect;
And when she even invited thee to speak,
Most rudely thou wert silent?

Alb. Be calm *Antonio*, I confess my error,
And hate that Virtue taught me to deceive thee;
——Here take my hand,——
I'll serve you in good earnest.

Ant. And now I do believe thee,
Go——thou shalt lose no time, I must away,
My Soul's in torment, till I am confirm'd
Of my *Clarina's* Virtue;
I do believe thou hast a generous Shame,
For what thou'st said and done to me thy Friend.
For could I doubt thy Love, oh how ridiculous
This act of mine would seem!

But 'tis to thee, as to my Soul I come;
Disputing every petty Crime and Doubt.

Alb. *Antonio*, is there need of Oaths between us?

Ant. No, I credit thee; go in;
And prithee dress thy Eyes in all their Charms;

278 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

For this uncertainty disturbs me more,
Than if I knew *Clarina* were a——Whore.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

ACT II. SCENE I.

The Apartment of Frederick.

Enter Frederick with a Letter, and Galliard.

Fred. NOT allow me to speak to her, say ye, 'tis
strange; didst say it was the Prince that
sent thee?

Ser. My Lord, I did, but he says, he cares not for a
thousand Princes.

Fred. I am resolv'd I will see this Woman;
—Harkye, go back again and say— [Whispers.
Enter Lorenzo drunk.

Lor. Hah the Prince——he must not see me in this
pickle; for I would not lose my Reputation of Wenching
for this of Drinking; and I am sure I cannot be excel-
lent at both, they are inconsistent.

Ser. I shall, my Lord. [Exit.

Lor. Your Highness's humble Servant.

Fred. Ha, ha, what *Lorenzo* in debauch?

Lor. Now my Tongue will betray me:——Faith, my
Lord, I have took six, but am come briskly off; by this
hand, my Lord, I am Cock over five stout Rogues too
I can tell you at this sport.

Fred. I did not think thou hadst had that Virtue.

Lor. I'll tell you, Sir, 'tis necessary those of my Office
and Quality should have more Virtues than one to recom-
mend them; but to tell you truth, for now I am most
apt for that, I was drunk in mere Malice to day.

Fred. Malice, against whom prithee?

Lor. Why, why, Sir, the humorous old Fellow my Fa-
ther, he will not hear reason from me when I am sober.
My

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 279

My Lord, you know *Curtius* is an honest Fellow, and one of us too; my Sister *Laura* is a good pretty Wench, he loves her, and she likes him; and because this testy old Blade has done himself, do you think I can bring him to consider? No, not for my Life, he won't consider, Sir; and now am I got drunk to see how that will edify him.

Fred. How! is *Laura*, the Mistress of *Curtius*, your Sister?

Lor. Yes marry is she, Sir, at least by the Mother's side; and to tell you truth, we are too good-natur'd to believe *Salvator* our Father.

Fred. Thy Sister, and Daughter to *Salvator*?

Lor. So said my Mother, but she was handsome; and on my conscience liv'd e'en in such another debauch'd World as 'tis now, let them say what they will of their primitive Virtue.

Fred. May not I see this Sister of thine, *Lorenzo*?

Lor. Yes by *Venus* shall you, Sir, an she were my Mother.

Fred. But art sure thy Father will permit us?

Lor. My Father permit us! he may do what he will when I am sober, but being thus fortify'd with potent Wine, he must yield obedience to my Will. Why, my Lord, I'll tell you, I'll make him ask me blessing when I am in this almighty Power.

Fred. And is thy Sister so very fine?

Lor. The Girl is well, and if she were not my Sister, I would give you a more certain Proof of my opinion of her; she has excellent good Hair, fine Teeth, and good Hands, and the best natur'd Fool—Come, come, Sir, I'll bring you to her, and then I'll leave you; For I have a small Affair of Love to dispatch.

Fred. This is a freedom that sutes not with the Humour of an *Italian*.

Lor. No faith, my Lord; I believe my Mother play'd soul play with some *Englishman*, I am so willing to do you a good office to my Sister. And if by her Humour you become of that opinion too, I shall hope to render my self more acceptable to you by that Franchise.

Enter

280 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Enter Galliard, whispers.

Fred. Thou knowest my grateful Temper,
—No matter; here carry this Letter to *Cloris*,
And make some excuse for my not coming this Evening.

[Gives him a Letter, and goes out with Lorenzo.]

Ser. So, poor *Lafs*, 'tis a hundred to one if she be not
lay'd by now, and *Laura* must succeed her: Well, even
Brederick, I see, is but a Man, but his Youth and Quality
will excuse him; and 'twill be call'd Gallantry in him,
when in one of us, 'tis Ill-nature and Inconstancy.

S C E N E II.

Enter Ismena and Isabella.

Ifab. Nay, Madam, 'tis in vain to deny it; do you
think I have liv'd to these years, and cannot interpret
cross Arms, imperfect Replies, your sudden Weepings,
your often Sighing, your melancholy Walks, and making
Verses too? and yet I must not say that this is Love.

Ism. Art thou so notable a Judge of it?

Ifab. I should be, or I am a very dull Scholar; for I
have lost the foolish Boy as many Darts, as any Woman
of my age in *Florence*.

Ism. Thou hast paid dear for thy knowledge then.

Ifab. No, the hurt one did, the other still made good,
with very little Pain on either side.

Ism. I must confess, I think it is not so hard to get
Wounds, as 'tis to get them cur'd again.

Ifab. I am not of your opinion, nor ever saw that
Man who had not Faults to spare, as well as Charms to
kill.

Ism. Since thou'rt so good a Judge of Man, prithee
tell me how thou lik'st *Alberto*.

Ifab. I knew 'twould come to this—— *[Aside.]*
Why, well, Madam.

Ism. No more than so?

Ifab. Yes wondrous well, since I am sure he loves you,
and that indeed raises a Man's Value.

Ism. Thou art deceiv'd, I do not think he loves me.

Ifab.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 281

Ifab. Madam, you cannot but see a thousand Marks on't.

Ism. Thou hast more Skill than I ; but prithee why does he not tell me so himself?

Ifab. Oh Madam, whilst he takes you for *Clarina*, 'Twould shew his disrespect to tell his Love ; But when he knows *Ismena* is the Object, He'll tire you with the wish'd for story.

Ism. Ah, thou art a pleasing Flatterer.

Enter Page.

Page. Madam, *Alberto* is without.

Ism. Tell him I'm indispos'd, and cannot see him now.

Ifab. Nay, good Madam, see him now by all means, For I am sure my Lord *Antonio* is absent on purpose.

— Bid him come in Boy. [Exit Page.]

Enter Alberto.

Ism. *Antonio*, Sir, is not return'd.

Alb. Madam, this Visit was not meant to him, But by a Cause more pressing I am brought, Such as my Passion, not my Friendship taught ; A Passion which my Sighs have only shewn, And now beg leave my bashful Tongue may own. The knowledge, Madam, will not much surprize, Which you have gain'd already from mine Eyes ; My timorous Heart that way my Tongue would spare, And tells you of the Flames you've kindled there : 'Tis long I've suffered under this Constraint, Have always suffer'd, but ne'er made Complaint ; And now against my will I must reveal What Love and my Respect would fain conceal.

Ism. What mean you, Sir ? what have you seen in me, That should encourage this temerity ?

Alb. A world of Beauties, and a world of Charms, And every Smile and Frown begets new harms ; In vain I strove my Passion to subdue, Which still increas'd the more I look'd on you ; Nor will my Heart permit me to retire, But makes my Eyes the convoys to my Fire, And not one Glance you send is cast away.

Ism.

Ism. Enough, my Lord, have you nought else to say ?
 The Plot's betray'd, and can no further go ; [Smiles.
 The Stratagem's discover'd to the Foe ;
 I find *Antonio* has more Love than Wit,
 And I'll endeavour too to merit it.

Alb. What you have said, I do confess is true,
Antonio beg'd I would make love to you ;
 But, Madam, whilst my Heart was unconfin'd,
 A thousand ways the Treachery I declin'd —
 But now, *Clarina*, by my Life I swear,
 It is my own concern that brings me here :
 Had he been just to you, I had suppress'd
 The Flames your Eyes have kindled in my Breast ;
 But his Suspicion rais'd my Passion more,
 And his Injustice taught me to adore :
 But 'tis a Passion which you may allow,
 Since its effects shall never injure you.

Ism. You have oblig'd me, Sir, by your Confession,
 And I shall own it too at such a rate,
 As both becomes my Duty to *Antonio*,
 And my Respect to you ; but I must beg
 You'll never name your Passion to me more,
 That guilty Language, Sir, I must not hear :
 —And yet your silence kills me.

Isab. Very well dissembled.

Alb. I can obey you, Madam, tho I cannot live,
 Whilst you command me silence ;
 For 'tis a Flame that dares not look abroad
 To seek for pity from another's Eyes.

Ism. How he moves me ! if this were real now,
 Or that he knew to whom he made this Courtship—

Alb. Oh do not turn away as if displeas'd.

Ism. No more, you've discompos'd my thoughts ;
 Be gone, and never let me see thy Face again.

Alb. Madam, I go, and will no more offend you,
 —But I will look my last—farewel. [Offers to go.

Isab. Pray, Madam, call him back, he may be desperate.
 —My Lord, return—

Ism. *Alberto*, tell me what you'd have me do.

Alb.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 283

Alb. Ah Madam, do not put me to my choice,
For Lovers are unreasonable;

If I might name it, I would have you love me.

Ism. Love you, and what would be the end of that?

Alb. I cannot tell, but wish you were inclin'd
To make a tryal, Madam;
I have no thought or wish beyond that Blessing,
And that once gain'd, sure I should ask no more.

Ism. Were I inclin'd to this, have you consider'd
The fatal Consequences which attend
The breach of Vows and Friendship?

Alb. Madam, *Antonio* first was false to you,
And not to punish that were such a Virtue
As he would never thank you for;
By all that's good, till he prov'd so to you,
He had my Soul in keeping;
But this act makes me resolve
To recompense his Folly.

Ism. You've found the easiest Passage to my Heart,
You've took it on the weakest side;

—But I must beg you will pretend no further.

Alb. Divine *Clarina*, let me pay my Thanks
In this submissive Posture, and never rise, [Kneels]
Till I can gain so much upon your Credit,
As to believe my Passion tends no farther
Than to adore you thus—and thus possess you.

[Kisses her hand, and bows.]
Ism. Have not I dissembled finely, *Isabella*? [Aside]

Isab. Yes, if you could make me believe 'tis so. [Aside]

Ism. Rise, Sir, and leave me, that I may blush alone
For what I've parted with so easily;
Pray do not visit me again too soon,
—But use your own discretion, and be secret.

Alb. Madam, the blessed Secret here is lodg'd,
Which Time shall ne'er reveal to human Knowledge. [Ex. Alb.]

Ism. I'm glad he's gone before *Antonio*'s return.

Enter

284 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Enter Laura weeping.

—What, *Laura* all in Tears! the reason pray.

Lau. Madam, the Prince, conducted by my Brother,
About an Hour since made me a Visit;
The Man of all the World I would have shun'd,
Knowing his amorous and inconstant Temper.

—At his approach he blusht and started back,
And I with great amazement did the like.

With fear I lost all power of going from him,
As he had done of making his Address;
He gaz'd and wonder'd, and I gaz'd on him,
And from his silence I became amaz'd.

—My Brother stood confounded at our Postures,
And only by the motion of his Head
(Which now he turn'd to me, then to the Prince)
We knew that he had Life.

Ism. Well, how recover'd ye?

Lau. The Prince then kneel'd, but could approach no
nearer;

And then as if he'd taken me for some Deity,
He made a long disorder'd amorous Speech,
Which brought me back to Sense again:
But *Lorenzo* told him that I was a Mortal,
And brought him nearer to me,
Where he began to make such Vows of Love——

Ism. What then?

Lau. Then I am ruin'd——

To all I said he found a contradiction,
And my denials did but more inflame him;
I told him of the Vows I'd made to *Curtius*,
But he reply'd that *Curtius* was a Subject.
But sure at last I'd won upon his Goodness;
Had not my Father enter'd,
To whom the Prince address himself;
And with his moving tale so won upon him,
Or rather by his Quality,
That he has gain'd his leave to visit me,
And quite forbids me e'er to speak to *Curtius*.

Ism. Alas the day, is this all?

Lau. All! can there be more to make me miserable?

Ism.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 285

Ism. I see no reason thou hast to complain:
Come, wipe your Eyes, and take a good Heart; for I'll
tell thee a Story of my own, that will let thee see I have
much more cause to weep; and yet I have a thousand
little Stratagems in my Head, which give me as many
hopes. This unlucky restraint upon our Sex, makes us
all cunning; and that shall assist thee now with my help,
I warrant thee; come in with me, and know the rest.

[*Exeunt.*]

Isab. So, so, disguise it how you will, I know you are
a real Lover; and that secret shall advance my Love-
design. Yes Madam, now I will be serv'd by you, or
you shall fail to find a Friend of me. [Ex. *Isab.*]

S C E N E III.

*Enter Lorenzo drunk, with a Page, and Musick, as in
the dark.*

Lor. Here's the Door, begin and play your best,
But let them be soft low Notes, do you hear? [They play.
Enter Antonio.]

Ant. Musick at my Lodgings! it is *Alberto*; oh how
I love him for't—*if Clarina* stand his Courtship, I am
made; I languish between Hope and Fear.

Lor. Stay Friend, I hear somebody. [Musick ceases.
Pag. 'Tis nobody, Sir.

Enter Isabella.

Isab. 'Tis *Lorenzo*, and my Plots ripe; [Aside.
Lorenzo retires the while a little further.

'Twill not sure be hard to get him, under pretence of
seeing *Clarina*, into my Chamber, and then I'll order
him at my pleasure: *Ismana* is on my side, for I know all
her Secrets, and she must wink at mine therefore.

[*She retires.*]

Lor. Thou art in the right Boy,
I think indeed 'twas nothing. [Plays again.

Enter Alberto.

Alb. She yields, bad Woman!
Why so easily won?
By me too, who am thy Husband's Friend:

Oh

286 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Oh dangerous Boldness! unconsidering Woman!
I lov'd thee, whilst I thought thou couldst not yield;
But now that Easiness has undone thy Interest and my Heart,
I'll back, and tell thee that it was to try thee.

Lor. No, no, 'twas my Fears, away with the Song,
I'll take it on your word that 'tis fit for my purpose.

Fid. I'll warrant you, my Lord.

S O N G.

IN vain I have labour'd the Victor to prove
Of a Heart that can ne'er give attendance to Love;
So hard to be done,
That nothing so young
Could e'er have resisted a Passion so long.

Yet nothing I left unattempted or said,
That might soften the Heart of this pitiless Maid;
But still she was shy,
And would blushing deny,
Whilst her willinger Eyes gave her Language the lye.

Since, Phillis, my Passion you vow to despise,
Withdraw the false Hopes from your flattering Eyes:
For whilst they inspire
A resistless vain Fire,
We shall grow to abhor, what we now do admire.

[Ex. Musick.]

Alb. What's this, and at *Clarissa's* Lodgings too?
Sure 'tis *Antonio*, impatient of delay,
Gives her a Serenade from me.

Enter Isabella.

Isab. 'Tis the Fool himself—my Lord, where are you?

Alb. How! a Woman's Voice! 'tis dark, I'll advance.

Lor. Thou Simpleton, I told thee there was somebody!

Pag. Lord, Sir, 'tis only *Isabella* that calls you.

Lor. Away Sirrah, I find by my Fears 'tis no Woman,

[Goes out with the Page.]

Isab.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 287

Ifab. Why don't you come? here's nobody.

Alb. Here I am.

Ifab. Where?

Alb. Here.

[Gives her his Hand.

Ifab. My Lord, you may venture, *Clarina* will be alone within this Hour, where you shall entertain her at your freedom: but you must stay a while in my Chamber till my Lord's a bed; for none but I must know of the favour she designs you.

Alb. Oh Gods! what Language do I here—
False and Perfidious Woman, I might have thought,
Since thou wert gain'd so easily by me,
Thou wouldst with equal haste yield to another.

Ifab. It is not *Lorenzo*, what shall I do? *[She steals in.*
Enter Lorenzo and Page.

Lor. A Pox of all damn'd cowardly fear! Now did I think I had drunk Nature up to Resolution: I have heard of those that could have dar'd in their Drink; but I find, drunk or sober, 'tis all one in me.

Alb. The Traitor's here,
Whom I will kill whoe'er he be.

Lor. Boy, go see for *Isabella*.

Boy. I see a Man should not be a Coward and a Lover at once.—*Isabella, Isabella*, she's gone, Sir. *[Calls.*

Alb. Yes Villain, she's gone, and in her room
Is one that will chastise thy Boldness.

Lor. That's a proud word tho, whoe'er thou be; but how I shall avoid it, is past my Understanding.

Alb. Where art thou, Slave?

[Alberto gropes for him, he avoids him.

Pag. Take heart Sir, here's company which I will
Get to assist you —

Enter Antonio.

Sir, as you are a Gentleman, assist a Stranger set upon by
Thieves. *[They fight, Antonio with Alberto,*

Alberto falls, is wounded. Lor. runs away the while.

Alb. Whoe'er thou be'st that takes the Traitor's part,
Commend me to the wrong'd *Antonio*.

Ant. *Alberto!* dear *Alberto*, is it thee?

Alb. *Antonio!*

Ant.

288 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ant. I am asham'd to say I am *Antonio*;
Oh Gods, why would you suffer this mistake?

Alb. I am not wounded much,
My greatest pain is my concern for thee;
Friend, thou art wrong'd, falsely and basely wrong'd;
Clarina, whom you lov'd and fear'd,
Has now betray'd thy Honour with her own.

Ant. Without that sad addition to my Grief,
I should not long have born the weight of Life,
Having destroy'd thine by a dire mistake.

Alb. Thou art deceiv'd.

Ant. Alas, why was it not permitted me
To lose my Friend, or Wife? had one surviv'd,
I might have dy'd in silence for the other;
Oh my *Alberto*! oh *Clarina* too! — [Weeps.]

Alb. Come, do not grieve for me, I shall be well,
I yet find strength enough to get away;
And then I'll let thee know my Fate and thine. [Exeunt.]

S C E N E IV.

Enter Clarina, Ismena, and Isabella weeping.

Ifab. For Heaven sake, Madam, pardon me.

Clar. Be dumb for ever, false and treacherous Woman,
Was there no way but this to mask your Cheat?
A Lye which has undone us all.

Ifab. Alas, 'twas in the dark, how could I know him?
Pray forgive it me, and try my future Service.

Clar. I never will forgive thee, naughty Girl;
Alberto now incens'd will tell *Antonio* all.

Ifab. What need you care, Madam?
You are secure enough.

Clar. Thou salv'st an Error with a greater still;
Dost thou not know *Antonio*'s Jealousy,
Which yet is moderate, rais'd to a higher pitch,
May ruin me, *Ismena*, and thy self?

Ism. Sister, there cannot be much harm in this;
'Tis an ill chance, 'tis true, for by it we have lost
The pleasure of an innocent Revenge.

Upon.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 289

Upon *Antonio*; but if understood,
We have but mis'd that end.

Clar. Oh *Ismena*!

This Jealousy is an unapprehensive madness,
A non-sense which does still abandon Reason.

Isab. Madam, early in the Morning
I'll to *Alberto's* Lodgings, and tell him the mistake.

Clar. 'Twill be too late.

Ism. Sister, what think you if I go my self?

Clar. You should not be so daring;
Besides, I blush to think what strange opinion
He'll entertain of me the while.

Ism. Do not let that afflict you,
Fetch my Veil, and if *Antonio* chance to ask for me,
Tell him I'm gone to *Laura*. [Ex. *Isab.*
Believe me, I will set all strait again.

Enter Isabella with the Veil.

Clar. Thou hast more Courage, Girl, than I.

Ism. What need is there of much of that, to encounter
a gay young Lover, where I am sure there cannot be
much danger?

Clar. Well take your chance, I wish you luck Sir,
For I am e'en as much bent upon Revenge,
As thou art upon Marriage.

Ism. Come, my Veil, this and the Night will enough
secure me. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. Discovers *Alberto* and
Antonio.

Alb. Nay thou shalt see't before thou dost revenge it;
In such a case, thy self should be the Witness,
She knows not what has past to night between us,
Nor should she, if thou couldst contain thy Rage;
And that, *Antonio*, you shall promise me:
To morrow place thy self behind the Arras,
And from thy Eyes thy own Misfortunes know.
—What will not disoblinded Passion do? [Aside.

290 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ant. I'll hide my Anger in a seeming Calm,
And what I have to do, consult the while,
And mask my Vengeance underneath a Smile. [*Ex. Ant.*]

Page. My Lord, there is without a Lady
Desires to speak with you.

Alb. Who is't ?

Page. I know not, Sir, she's veil'd.

Enter Ismena weeping.

Alb. Conduct her in.

Ism. Oh *Alberto*, *Isabella* has undone us all !

Alb. She weeps, and looks as innocent.

— What mean you, false dissembling *Clarina* ?

What, have you borrow'd from Deceit new Charms,
And think'st to fool me to a new belief ?

Ism. How Sir, can you too be unkind ? Nay then 'tis
time to die ; alas, there wanted but your Credit to this mi-
stake, to make me truly miserable.

Alb. What Credit ? what Mistake ? oh undeceive me,
For I have done thee Injuries past Forgiveness,
If thou be'st truly innocent.

Ism. If *Isabella*, under pretence of courting me for
Lorenzo, whom she designs to make a Husband, has
given him freedoms will undo my Honour, if not pre-
vented soon.

Alb. May I credit this, and that it was not by thy
Command she did it ?

Ism. Be witness Heaven, my Innocence in this,
Which if you will believe, I'm safe again.

Alb. I do believe thee, but thou art not safe.
Here, take this Ponyard, and revenge thy Wrongs,
Wrongs which I dare not beg a Pardon for.

[*He gives her a Dagger.*]

Ism. Why, Sir, what have you done ? have you de-
ceiv'd me, and do you not indeed love me ?

Alb. Oh *Clarina* ! do not ask that Question,
Too much of that has made me ruin thee ;
It made me jealous, drunk with Jealousy,
And then I did unravel all my Secrets.

Ism. What Secrets, Sir ? you have then seen *Antonio*.

Alb. Yes.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 291

Ism. Hah—Now Wit, if e'er thou didst possess a Woman, assist her at her need. [Aside.]

—Well, Sir, rise and tell me all.

Alb. I will not rise till you have pardon'd me, Or punish'd my Misfortune.

Ism. Be what it will, I do forgive it thee.

Alb. Antonio, Madam, knows my Happiness, For in my Rage I told him that you lov'd me;

—What shall I do?

Ism. I cannot blame you tho it were unkind.

Alb. This I could help, but I have promis'd him, That he shall be a witness of this Truth; What say you, Madam, do I not merit Death? Oh speak, and let me know my doom whate'er it be.

Ism. Make good your Word.

Alb. What mean you?

Ism. What you have promised him, perform as you intended.

Alb. What then?

Ism. Then come as you design'd to visit me.

Alb. But let me know what 'tis you mean to do, That I may act accordingly.

Ism. No. Answer me to every Question ask'd, And I perhaps may set all strait again; It is now late, and I must not be missing: But if you love me, be no more jealous of me.

—Farewel.

Alb. Must I be ignorant then of your Design?

Ism. Yes, Alberto;

And you shall see what Love will make a Woman do.

[He leads her out.]

Alb. Now am I caught again, inconstant Nature.

—Would she had less of Beauty or of Wit, Or that Antonio did but less deserve her; Or that she were not married, Or I'd had less Virtue, for 'tis that which awes me, That tender sense of nothing, And makes the other Reasons seem as Bugbears.

—I love Clarina more than he can do.

And yet this Virtue doth oppose that Love,

292 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

Tells me there lurks a Treason there
 Against *Antonio's* and *Clarina's* Virtue.
 —'Tis but too true indeed, and I'm not safe,
 Whilst I conceal the Criminal within :
 I must reveal it, for whilst I hide the Traitor,
 I seem to love the Treason too ;
 I will resign it then, since 'tis less blame
 To perish by my Pain, than live with Shame. [Exit.

A C T III. S C E N E I.

Enter Frederick and Laura.

Fred. **L** *Aura*, consider well my Quality,
 And be not angry with your Father's Confidence,
 Who left us here alone.

Lau. He will repent that Freedom when he knows
 What use you've made on't, Sir.

Fred. Fy, fy, *Laura*, a Lady bred at Court, and yet
 want Complaisance enough to entertain a Gallant in pri-
 vate ! this coy Humour is not *à-la-mode*. — Be not so
 peevish with a Heart that dies for you.

Lau. Pray tell me, Sir, what is't in me that can encou-
 rage this ?

Fred. That which is in all lovely Women, *Laura* ;
 A thousand Blushes play about your Cheeks,
 Which shows the briskness of the Blood that warms them.
 — If I but tell you how I do adore you,
 You strait decline your Eyes ;
 Which does declare you understand my meaning,
 And every Smile or Frown betrays your Thoughts,
 And yet you cry, you do not give me cause.

Enter Maid.

Maid. *Curtius*, Madam, waits without.

Fred. I do not like his haste,
 — Tell him he cannot be admitted now.

Lau.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 293

Lau. Sir, he is one that merits better treatment from you ;

How can you injure thus the Man you love ?

Fred. Oh Madam, ask your Eyes, those powerful Attracts,
And do not call their Forces so in question,
As to believe they kindle feeble Fires,
Such as a Friendship can surmount. No, *Laura*,
They've done far greater Miracles.

Lau. Sir, 'tis in vain you tell me of their Power,
Unless they could have made a nobler Conquest
Than Hearts that yield to every petty Victor.

— Look on me well,

Can nothing here inform you of my Soul,
And how it scorns to treat on these Conditions ?

[Looks on him, he gazes with a half Smile.

Fred. Faith, no, *Laura*.

I see nothing there but wondrous Beauty,
And a deal of needless Pride and Scorn,
And such as may be humbled.

Lau. Sir, you mistake, that never can abate.
But yet I know your Power may do me injuries ;
But I believe you're guilty of no Sin,
Save your Inconstancy, which is sufficient ;
And, Sir, I beg I may not be the first [Kneels and weeps.
May find new Crimes about you.

Fred. Rise *Laura*, thou hast but too many Beauties,
Which pray be careful that you keep conceal'd.

[Offers to go.

Lau. I humbly thank you, Sir.

Fred.— But why should this interposing Virtue check me ?
— Stay *Laura*, tell me ; must you marry *Curtius* ?

Lau. Yes Sir, I must.

Fred. *Laura*, you must not.

Lau. How, Sir !

Fred. I say you shall not marry him,
Unless you offer up a Victim,
That may appease the Anger you have rais'd in me.

Lau. I'll offer up a thousand Prayers and Tears.

Fred. That will not do.

294 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Since thou'ft deny'd my juft Pretensions to thee,
No lefs than what I told you of fhall fatisfy me.

Lau. Oh where is all your Honour, and your Virtue?

Fred. Juft where it was, there's no fuch real thing.
I know that thou wert made to be poffeft,
And he that does refufe it, loves thee leaft.
—There's danger in my Love, and your Delay,
And you are moft fecure whilft you obey.

Lau. Then this fhall be my Safety, hold off,
[*He pulls her gently.*

Or I'll forget you are my Prince. [*He laughs.*

Fred. Pretty *Virago*, how you raife my Love?
—I have a Dagger too; what will you do?

[*Shows her a Dagger.*

Enter Curtius.

Cur. How! the Prince! arm'd againft *Laura* too!
[*Draws.*

Fred. Traitor, doft draw upon thy Prince?

Cur. Your Pardon, Sir, I meant it on a Ravifher,
A foul mifguided Villain, [*Bows.*
One that fcarce merits the brave name of Man;
One that betrays his Friend, forfakes his Wife,
And would commit a Rape upon my Miftrefs.

Fred. Her Prefence is thy Safety, be gone and leave me.

Cur. By no means, Sir; the Villain may return,
To which fair *Laura* fhould not be expos'd.

Fred. Slave, dar'ft thou difobey? [*Offers to fight.*

Cur. Hold, Sir, and do not make me guilty of a Sin,
Greater than that of yours.

Enter Salvator.

Salv. Gods pity me; here's fine doings!—Why how
came this roiftring Youngfter in my Houfe? Sir, who
fent for you, hah?

Cur. Love.

Salv. Love, with a witness to whom? my Daughter?
—No, Sir, ſhe's otherwife difpos'd of I can affure you.
Be gone and leave my Houfe, and that quickly too; and
thank me that I do not fecure thee for a Traitor.

Cur. Will you not hear me ſpeak?

Salv.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 295

Salv. Not a word, Sir, go be gone ; unless your Highness will have him apprehended. [To *Fred.*

Fred. No Sir, it shall not need — *Curtius*, look to hear from me. — [Comes up to him, and tells him so in a menacing Tone, and goes out severally.

Salv. Go Mrs. *Minks*, get you in. [Ex. *Salv.* and *Laur.*

SCENE II.

Enter Frederick passing in anger over the Stage, meets Lorenzo.

Lor. O Sir, I'm glad I've found you ; for I have the rarest News for you.

Fred. What News ?

Lor. Oh the Devil, he's angry ; — Why, Sir, the prettiest young —

Fred. There's for your Intelligence.

[Strikes him, and goes out.

Lor. So, very well ; how mortal is the favour of Princes ! these be turns of State now ; what the Devil ails he trow ; sure he could not be offended with the News I have brought him ; if he be, he's strangely out of tune : and sure he has too much Wit to grow virtuous at these Years. No, no, he has had some repulse from a Lady ; and that's a wonder ; for he has a Tongue and a Purse that seldom fails : if Youth and Vigour would stretch as far, he were the wonder of the Age !

Enter Curtius.

Cur. *Lorenzo*, didst thou see the Prince ?

Lor. Marry did I, and feel him too.

Cur. Why, did he strike you ?

Lor. I'm no true Subject if he did not ; and that only for doing that Service which once was most acceptable to him. — Prithce what's the matter with him, hah ?

Cur. I know not, leave me.

Lor. Leave thee, what art thou out of humour too ? Let me but know who 'tis has disoblig'd thee, and I'll —

Cur. What wilt thou ?

Lor. Never see his Face more, if a Man.

296 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Cur. And what if a Woman?

Lor. Then she's an idle peevish Slut, I'll warrant her.

Cur. Conclude it so, and leave me.

Lor. Nay, now thou hast said the only thing that could keep me with thee, thou mayst be desperate; I'll tell you *Curtius*, these female Mischiefs make Men take dangerous Resolutions sometimes.

Enter Alberto.

Alb. *Curtius*, I've something to deliver to your Ears.

[*Whispers.*]

Cur. Any thing from *Alberto* is welcome.

Lor. Well, I will be hang'd if there be not some Mischiefs in agitation; it cannot be wenching; they look all too dull and sober for that; and besides, then I should have been a party concern'd.

Cur. The place and time.

Alb. An hour hence i'th' Grove by the River-side.

Cur. Alone thou sayst?

Alb. Alone, the Prince will have it so.

Cur. I will not fail a moment.

[*Ex. Alb.*]

—So this has eas'd my Heart of half its Load.

Lor. I'll sneak away, for this is some fighting Business, and I may perhaps be invited a Second, a Compliment I care not for.

[*Offers to go.*]

Cur. *Lorenzo*, a word with you.

Lor. 'Tis so, what shall I do now?

[*Aside.*]

Cur. Stay.

Lor. I am a little in haste, my Lord.

Cur. I shall soon dispatch you.

Lor. I believe so, for I am half dead already with Fear. [*Aside.*]—Sir, I have promis'd to make a visit to a Lady, and—

Cur. What I've to say will not detain you long.

Lor. What a Dog was I, I went not when he first desir'd me to go? Oh Impertinency, thou art justly rewarded!

Cur. *Lorenzo*, may I believe you love me?

Lor. Now what shall I say, Ay or no?

[*Aside.*]

The Devil take me if I know.

Cur. Will you do me a favour?

Lor. There 'tis again.

[*Aside.*]

Cur.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 297

Cur. I know I may trust thee with a secret.

Lor. Truly *Curtius*, I cannot tell,
In some cases I am not very retentive.

Cur. I am going about a business, that perhaps
May take up all the time I have to live,
And I may never see thy Sister more ;
Will you oblige me in a Message to her ?

Lor. You know you may command me ;
—I'm glad 'tis no worse.

[*Aside.*

Cur. Come, go with me into my Cabinet,
And there I'll write to *Laura* ;
And prithee if thou hear'st that I am dead,
Tell her I fell a Sacrifice to her,
And that's enough, she understands the rest.

Lor. But harkye, *Curtius*, by your favour, this is but a
scurvy Tale to carry to your Mistress ; I hope you are not
in earnest.

Cur. Yes.

Lor. Yes ! why, what a foolish idle humour's this in
you ? I vow 'twill go near to break the poor Girl's
Heart ;—Come be advis'd, Man.

Cur. Perhaps I may consider on't for that reason.

Lor. There are few that go about such businesses, but
have one thing or other to consider in favour of Life ; I
find that even in the most magnanimous :— Prithee who
is't with ?

Cur. That's counsel ; and pray let this too which I
have told you be a secret, for 'twill concern your Life.

Lor. Good *Curtius*, take it back again then ; for a
hundred to one but my over-care of keeping it will be-
tray it.

Cur. Thou lovest thy self better.

Lor. Well, that's a comfort yet.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *A Wood.*

Enter Cloris dress'd like a Country-Boy, follow'd by
Guilliam a Clown ; Cloris reading a Letter.

Clo. reads. Cloris beware of Men ; for tho I my self
be one,

298 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

*Yet I have the Frailties of my Sex, and can dissemble too ;
Trust none of us, for if thou dost, thou art undone ;
We make Vows to all alike we see,*

*And even the best of Men, the Prince,
Is not to be credited in an affair of Love.*

—Oh *Curtius*, thy advice was very kind ;
Had it arriv'd before, I'd been undone !

—Can *Frederick* too be false ?

A Prince, and be unjust to her that loves him too ?

—Surely it is impossible—

Perhaps thou lov'st me too, and this may be

[*Pointing to the Letter.*

Some Plot of thine to try my Constancy :

—Howe'er it be, since he could fail last night
Of seeing me, I have at least a cause to justify
This shameful change ; and sure in this Disguise,
I shall not soon be known, dost think I shall ?

[*Looks on her self.*

Guil. Why forsooth, what do you intend to pass for,
a Maid or a Boy ?

Clo. Why, what I seem to be, will it not do ?

Guil. Yes, yes, it may do, but I know not what ;
I would Love would transmography me to a Maid now,
—We should be the prettiest Couple :

Don't you remember when you dress'd me up the last
Carnival, was not I the woundiest handsome Lass a body
could see in a Summer's day ? There was *Claud* the
Shepherd as freakish after me, I'll warrant you, and
simper'd and tript it like any thing.

Clo. Ay, but they say 'tis dangerous for young Maids
to live at Court.

Guil. Nay, then I should be loth to give temptation.

—Pray forsooth, what's that you read so often there ?

Clo. An advice to young Maids that are in love.

Guil. Ay, ay, that same Love is a vengeance thing,
Wou'd I were in love too ; I see it makes a body valiant ;
One neither feels Hunger nor Cold that is possess'd with it.

Clo. Thou art i'th' right, it can do Miracles.

Guil. So it seems, for without a Miracle you and I
could never have rambled about these Woods all night
without

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 299

without either Bottle or Wallet: I could e'en cry for hunger now.

Clo. What a dull Soul this Fellow hath?
Sure it can never feel the generous Pains
Of Love, as mine does now; oh how I glory
To find my Heart above the common rate!

Were not my Prince inconstant,
I would not envy what the Blessed do above;
But he is false, good Heaven!— [*Weeps.* *Guil. howls.*]
—What dost feel, that thou shouldst weep with me?

Guil. Nothing but Hunger, sharp Hunger, forsooth.

Clo. Leave calling me forsooth, it will betray us.

Guil. What shall I call you then?

Clo. Call me *Philibert*, or any thing;
And be familiar with me: put on thy Hat, lest any come
and see us.

Guil. 'Tis a hard name, but I'll learn it by heart.

—Well *Philibert*—what shall we do when we come to
Court? [*Puts on his Hat.*]

Besides eating and drinking, which I shall do in abundance.

Clo. We must get each of us a Service:

—But thou art such a Clown.

Guil. Nay, say not so, honest *Philibert*: for look ye,
I am much the properer Fellow of the two. [*Walks.*]

Clo. Well, try thy fortune; but be sure you never discover me, whatever Questions may chance to be asked thee.

Guil. I warrant thee, honest Lad, I am true and trusty;
But I must be very familiar with you, you say.

Clo. Yes, before Company.

Guil. Pray let me begin and practise a little now,
An't please you, for fear I should not be saucy enough,
When we arrive at Court.

Clo. I'll warrant you you'll soon learn there.

Guil. Oh Lord, *Philibert*! *Philibert*! I see a Man
coming most deadly fine, let's run away.

Clo. Thus thou hast serv'd me all this night, there's
not a Bush we come at, but thou start'st thus.

Guil.

300 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Guil. 'Tis true you are a Lover, and may stay the danger on't; but I'll make sure for one.

Clo. It is the Prince, Oh Gods! what makes he here? With Looks disorder'd too; this Place is fit for Death and sad

Despair; the melancholy Spring a sleepy murmur makes,
A proper Confort for departing Souls,
When mix'd with dying Groans, and the thick Boughs
Compose a dismal Roof;

Dark as the gloomy Shades of Death or Graves.
—He comes this way, I'll hide my self awhile.

[Goes behind a Bush.

Enter Frederick.

Fred. But yet not this, nor my despight to *Laura*,
Shall make me out of love with Life,
Whilst I have youthful Fires about my Heart:

—Yet I must fight with *Curtius*,
And so chastise the Pride of that fond Maid,
Whose fancy Virtue durst controul my Flame.

—And yet I love her not as I do *Cloris*;
But fain I would have overcome that Chastity,
Of which the foolish Beauty boasts so.

Clo. *Curtius* I thank thee, now I do believe thee.

Guilliam, if thou see'st any fighting anon, [The Prince
Be sure you run out and call some body. walks.

Guil. You need not bid me run away, when I once see them go to that.

Enter Curtius.

Car. Sir, I am come as you commanded me.

Fred. When you consider what you've lately done,
You will not wonder why I sent for you;
And when I mean to fight, I do not use to parly:
Come draw.

Cur. Shew me my Enemy, and then if I am slow—

Fred. I am he, needst thou one more powerful?

Cur. You, Sir! what have I done to make you so?

Fred. If yet thou want'st a further proof of it,
Know I'll dispute my Claim to *Laura*.

Cur. That must not be with me, Sir;
God forbid that I should raise my Arm against my Prince.

If

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 301

—If *Laura* have so little Faith and Virtue,
To render up that Right belongs to me,
With all my heart I yield her
To any but to you :

And, Sir, for your own sake you must not have her.

Fred. Your Reason ?

Cur. Sir, you're already married.

Fred. Thou lyest, and seek'st excuses for thy Cowardice.

Cur. I wish you would recal that hasty Injury;
Yet this I'll bear from you, who know 'tis false.

Fred. Will nothing move thee ?

Cur. You would believe so, Sir, if I should tell you,
That besides all this, I have a juster Cause.

Fred. Juster than that of *Laura* ? call it up, then,
And let it save thee from a further shame.

Cur. Yes so I will, 'tis that of *Cloris*,
Who needs my aids much more ;
Do you remember such a Virgin, Sir ?
For so she was till she knew *Frederick*,
The sweetest Innocent that ever Nature made.

Fred. Not thy own Honour, nor thy Love to *Laura*,
Would make thee draw, and now at *Cloris*' Name
Thou art incens'd, thy Eyes all red with Rage :

— Oh thou hast rouz'd my Soul !
Nor would I justify my Wrongs to her,
Unless it were to satisfy my Jealousy,
Which thou hast rais'd in me by this concern.
— Draw, or I'll kill thee.

Cur. Stay, Sir, and hear me out.

Fred. I will not stay, now I reflect on all
Thy former kindness to her—

Cur. I will not fight, but I'll defend my self.

[*They fight.*]

Fred. We are betray'd.

Cur. Yes, Sir, and you are wounded.

[*Guil. runs bawling out, they are both wounded.*]

Clo. Oh Heaven defend the Prince ! [She peeps.

Fred.

302 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Fred. I hear some coming, go be gone,
And save thy self by flight.

[*Frederick stands leaning on his Sword.*]

Cur. Sir, give me leave to stay, my flight will look
like Guilt.

Fred. By no means, *Curtius*, thou wilt be taken here,
and thou shalt never charge me with that Crime of be-
traying thee: when we meet next, we'll end it.

Cur. I must obey you then. [Exit.]

Enter Cloris.

Clo. Sir, has the Villain hurt you? [*She supports him.*]
—Pray Heaven my Sorrows do not betray me now;
For since he's false, I fain would die conceal'd. [*Aside.*]

—Shew me your Wound, and I will tie it up.
Alas, you bleed extremely. — (come;

Fred. Kind Youth, thy Succours are in vain, tho' wel-
For tho' I bleed, I am not wounded much.

Clo. No? why did you let him pass unpunish'd then,
Who would have hurt you more?

Enter Guiliam with Galliard.

Serv. Where was't?

Guil. Look ye, Sir, there, don't you see them?

Serv. How does your Highness? This Fellow told me
of a quarrel here, which made me haste.

Fred. Be silent, and carry me to my own apartment.

Serv. Alas, Sir, is it you that fought?

Fred. No more Questions. —

Kind Boy, pray leave me not till I have found a way to
recompense thy pretty care of me.

Clo. I will wait on you, Sir. [Exeunt all but Guil.]

Enter Lorenzo. Peeps first.

Lor. What's the matter here? the Prince is wounded
too.

Oh what a Dog was I to know of some such thing,
And not secure them all?

[*Lor. stands gazing at Guil. Guil. stands tabering
his Hat, and scrwing his Face.*]

—What's here? Ha, ha, ha, this is the pleasantest Fel-
low that e'er I saw in my Life. Prithce Friend, what's
thy Name?

Guil.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 303

Guil. My Name, an't shall like ye.

My Name, it is *Guilliam*.

Lor. From whence comest thou?

Guil. From a Village a great huge way off.

Lor. And what's thy business here, hah?

Guil. Truly, Sir, not to tell a Lye;

I come to get a Service here at Court.

Lor. A Service at Court! ha, ha, that's a pleasant Humour i'faith. Why Fellow, what canst thou do?

Guil. Do Sir! I can do any thing.

Lor. Why what canst thou do? canst thou dress well?
—Set a Peruke to advantage, tie a Crevar,
And Cuffs? put on a Belt with dexterity, hah?
These be the Parts that must recommend you.

Guil. I know not what you mean, but I am sure I can do them all.

Lor. Thou art confident it seems, and I can tell you, Sirrah, that's a great step to Preferment;

—But well, go on then, canst ride the great Horse?

Guil. The biggest in all our Town
I have rid a thousand times.

Lor. That's well; canst fence?

Guil. Fence Sir, what's that?

Lor. A Term we use for the Art and Skill of handling
a Weapon.

Guil. I can thresh, Sir.

Lor. What's that, Man?

Guil. Why, Sir, it is—it is—threshing.

Lor. An Artist I vow; canst play on any Musick?

Guil. Oh most rologically, Sir, I have a Bagpipe that
every Breath sets the whole Village a dancing.

Lor. Better still; and thou canst dance I'll warrant?

Guil. Dance, he, he, he, I vow you've light on my
Master-piece, y'fegs.

Lor. And I'll try thee: Boy, go fetch [To the Page.
some of the Musick hither which I keep in pay. [Ex. Boy.
—But hark you, Friend, tho I love Dancing very well,
and that may recommend thee in a great degree; yet 'tis
wholly necessary that you should be valiant too: We
Great ones ought to be serv'd by Men of Valour, for we
are

304 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

are very liable to be affronted by many here to our Faces, which we would gladly have beaten behind our Backs. —But Pox on't, thou hast not the Huff and Grimace of a Man of Prowess.

Guil. As for fighting, tho I do not care for it, yet I can do't if any body angers me, or so.

Lor. But I must have you learn to do't when any body angers me too.

Guil. Sir, they told me I should have no need on't here ; but I shall learn.

Lor. Why you Fool, that's not a thing to be learn'd, —That's a brave Inclination born with Man, A brave undaunted something, a thing that, That comes from, from, I know not what, For I was born without it.

Enter Page and Musick.

Oh are you come? let's see, Sirrah, your Activity, For I must tell you that's another step to Preferment.

[*He dances a Fig en Paisant.*

'Tis well perform'd ; well, hadst thou but Wit, Valour, Bone Mine, good Garb, a Peruke, Conduct and Secrecy in Love-Affairs, and half a dozen more good Qualities, thou wert fit for something ; but I will try thee. Boy, let him have better Clothes ; as for his Documents, I'll give him those my self.

Guil. Hah, I don't like that word, it sounds terribly.

[*Aside. Ex. Page and Guil.*

Lor. This Fellow may be of use to me ; being doubtless very honest, because he is so very simple : For to say truth, we Men of Parts are sometimes over-wise, witness my last night's retreat from but a supposed Danger, and returning to fall into a real one. Well, I'll now to *Isabella*, and know her final Resolution ; if *Clarina* will be kind, so ; if not, there be those that will.

—And tho I cannot any Conquest boast

For all the Time and Money I have lost,

At least of *Isabel* I'll be reveng'd,

And have the flattering Baggage soundly swing'd ;

And rather than she shall escape my Anger,

My self shall be the Hero that shall bang her.

[*Exit.*

A C T

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Enter Ismena and Isabella.

Isab. **M**Adam, turn your back to that side,
For there *Antonio* is hid ; he must not see
your Face : now raise your Voice, that he may hear
what 'tis you say.

Ism. I'll warrant you, *Isabella* :
Was ever wretched Woman's Fate like mine,
Forc'd to obey the rigid Laws of Parents,
And marry with a Man I did not love ?

Ant. Oh there's my cause of Fear. [Ant. peeps.]

Ism. Tho since I've had him, thou know'st I have en-
deavour'd
To make his Will my Law,
Till by degrees and Custom, which makes things natural,
I found this Heart, which ne'er had been engag'd
To any other, grow more soft to him ;
And still the more he lov'd, the more I was oblig'd,
And made returns still kinder ; till I became
Not only to allow, but to repay his Tenderness.

Isab. She counterfeits rarely. [Aside.]
Madam, indeed I have observ'd this truth.

Ism. See who 'tis knocks. [One knocks.]

Ant. What will this come to ? [Aside.]

Isab. Madam, 'tis *Alberto*.

Enter Alberto. Bows.

Ism. My Lord, you've often told me that you lov'd me,
Which I with Womens usual Pride believ'd ;
And now, encourag'd by my hopeful Promises,
You look for some Returns ; Sir, is it so ?

Alb. What means she ?
Pray Heaven I answer right. [Aside.]

—Madam, if I have err'd in that belief,
To know I do so, is sufficient punishment.

—Lovers, Madam, tho they have no returns,
Like sinking Men, still catch at all they meet with ;

And

306 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

And whilst they live, tho in the midst of Storms,
Because they wish, they also hope for Calms.

Ism. And did you, Sir, consider who I was?

Alb. Yes, Madam, Wife unto my Friend *Antonio*,
The only Man that has an Interest here;

—But, Madam, that must still submit to Love.

Ism. Canst thou at once be true to him and me?

Alb. Madam, I know not that;

But since I must lose one,
My Friendship I can better lay aside.

Ism. Hast thou forgot how dear thou art to him?

Alb. No, I do believe I am, and that his Life
Were but a worthless trifle, if I needed it.

Yet, Madam, you are dearer to him still
Than his *Alberto*; and 'tis so with me:

—Him I esteem, but you I do adore;

And he whose Soul's insensible of Love,
Can never grateful to his Friendship prove.

Ism. By your example, Sir, I'll still retain
My Love for him; and what I had for you,
Which was but Friendship, I'll abandon too.

Ant. Happy *Antonio*.—

[*Aside.*

Ism. Pray what have you *Antonio* cannot own?
Has he not equal Beauty, if not exceeding thine?
Has he not equal Vigour, Wit, and Valour?
And all that even raises Men to Gods,
Wert not for poor Mortality?

—Vain Man, couldst thou believe
That I would quit my Duty to this Husband,
And sacrifice his Right to thee?

—Couldst thou believe me yesterday?
When from thy Importunity and Impudence,
To send thee from me,
I promised thee to love thee.

—Nay rather, treacherous Man,
Couldst thou believe I did hate thee then,
Who basely would betray thy Friend and me?

Alb. Sure this is earnest.

[*Aside.*

Ant. Oh brave *Clarina*!

[*Aside.*

Ism.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 307

Ism. Speak, Traitor, to my Fame and Honour ;
Was there no Woman, but *Antonio's* Wife,
With whom thou couldst commit so foul a Crime ?
And none but he, to bring to publick Shame ?
A Man who trusted thee, and lov'd thee too ?
—Speak—and if yet thou hast a sense of Virtue,
Call to the Saints for pardon, or thou dy'st.

[*She draws a Poniard, and runs at him ;
he steps back to avoid it.*

Alb. Hold *Clarina* !—I am amaz'd.

Ism. But stay.

Thou say'st my Beauty forc'd thee to this Wickedness,
And that's the cause you have abus'd *Antonio*.
—Nor is it all the Power I have with him,
Can make him credit what I tell him of thee ;
And should I live, I still must be pursu'd by thee,
And unbeliev'd by him :
—*Alberto*, thou shalt ne'er be guilty more,
Whilst this—and this may meet.

[*Offering to wound her self, is stay'd by
Alb. and Isab. they set Ism. in a
Chair ; Alb. kneels weeping.*

Alb. Hold, my divine *Clarina*.——

Ant. Shall I discover my self, or steal away ? [*Aside.*
And all asham'd of Life after this Action,
Go where the Sun or Day may never find me ?
Oh ! what Virtue I've abus'd——
Curse on my little Faith ;
And all the Curses Madness can invent,
Light on my groundless Jealousy. [*Ex. Antonio.*

Alb. *Clarina*, why so cruel to my Heart ?
'Tis true, I love you, but with as chaste an Ardour,
As Souls departing pay the Deities,
When with incessant Sighs they haste away,
And leave Humanity behind. Oh ! so did I
Abandon all the lesser Joys of Life,
For that of being permitted but t'adore ye.
Alas, if 'twere displeasing to you,
Why did your self encourage it ?
I might have languish'd, as I did before,

And

308 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

And hid those Crimes which make you hate me now.

—Oh I am lost! *Antonio*, thou'st undone me ;

[*He rises in Rage.*]

—Hear me Ungrate ; I swear by all that's good,
I'll wash away my Mischief with thy Blood.

Isab. *Antonio* hears you not, Sir, for he's departed.

Ism. Is *Antonio* gone ?

[*She looks pertly up, who before lay half dead.*]

Alb. How's this, has she but feign'd ?

Ism. No, it was but feign'd ; I hope this proof
Of what I have promis'd you, does not displease.

Alb. Am I thus fortunate, thus strangely happy ?

Ism. Time will confirm it to you—go, do not
Now thank me for't, but seek *Antonio* out ;
Perhaps he may have too great a Sense of the
Mischiefs his Jealousies had like to have caus'd :
But conjure him to take no notice of what's past to me ;
This easy flight of mine secures our Fears,
And serves to make *Antonio* confident,
Who now will unbelieve his Eyes and Ears ;
And since before, while I was innocent,
He could suspect my Love and Duty too,
I'll try what my dissembling it will do.

—Go haste.—

Alb. Madam, I go, surpriz'd with Love and Wonder.

[*Ex. Alb.*]

Ism. You'll be more surpriz'd, when you know [Aside.
That you are cheated too as well as *Antonio*. [Exeunt.

S C E N E II.

*Enter Curtius disguis'd in a black Peruke and Beard, with
Pietro disguis'd also.*

Cur. Well, what hast thou learn'd ?

Piet. News enough Sir, but none good ;
That the Prince's Wounds are but small,
So that he intends to take the Air this Evening ;
That he sollicit's *Laura* hard ;
And, Sir, that you are proclaim'd Traitor.

Cur. So, what says the Messenger you sent to *Cloris* ?

Piet.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 309

Piet. Sir, he brings sad tidings back.

Cur. What tidings? is she dead?

That would revive my Soul,
And fortify my easy Nature with some wicked Notions,
As deep as those this flattering Prince made use of,
When he betray'd my Sister, pretty *Cloris*:
—Come, speak it boldly, for nothing else
Will make me do her Justice.

—*Piet.* No, Sir, she is not dead,
But fled, and none knows whither;
Only *Guilliam* attends her.

Cur. Worse and worse; but what of *Laura*?

Piet. She, Sir, is kept a Prisoner by her Father,
And speaks with none but those that come from *Frederick*.

Cur. *Laura* confin'd too! 'tis time to hasten then,
With my, till now, almost disarm'd Revenge:

—Thus I may pass unknown the Streets of *Florence*,
And find an opportunity to reach this Prince's Heart,

—Oh Vengeance! luxurious Vengeance!

Thy Pleasures turn a Rival to my Love,
And make the mightier Conquest o'er my Heart.

—*Cloris*, I will revenge thy Tears and Sufferings;
And to secure the Doom of him that wrong'd thee,
I'll call on injur'd *Laura* too.

—Here take these Pictures——and where thou see'st

[*Gives him Boxes.*]

A knot of Gallants, open one or two, as if by stealth,
To gaze upon the Beauties, and then straight close them—

But stay, here comes the only Man

I could have wish'd for; he'll proclaim my Business

Better than a Picture or a Trumpet. [They stand by.]

[*Curtius takes back the Pictures.*]

*Enter Lorenzo and Guilliam drest in finish'd Clothes, but
the same high-crown'd Hat.*

Lor. Did, ha, ha, ha, did ha, ha; did ever any moral Man behold such a Figure as thou art now? Well, I see 'tis a damnable thing not to be born a Gentleman; the Devil himself can never make thee truly jantee now.

—Come, come, come forward; these Clothes become thee, as a Saddle does a Sow; why com'st thou not?

—Why

310 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

—Why—ha, ha, I hope thou hast not hanſel'd thy new Breeches, thou look'ſt ſo filthily on't.

[*He advances, looking ſourly.*]

Guill. No, Sir, I hope I have more manners than ſo; but if I ſhould, 'tis not my fault; for the neceſſary Houſes are hard to be met withal here at Court.

Lor. Very well, Sirrah; you begin already to be witty with the Court; but I can tell you, it has as many neceſſary Places in't, as any Court in Chriſtendom——
But what a Hat thou haſt?

Guill. Why Sir, tho I ſay't, this is accounted of in our Village; but I had another but now, which blew off in a high Wind; and I never miſt it, till I had an occaſion to pluck it off to a young Squire, they call a Lacquey; and Fegs I had none at all: and becauſe I wou'd not loſe my Leg for want of a Hat, I fetch'd this; and I can tell you, Sir, it has a fashionable Brim.

Lor. A Fool's head of your own, has it not?
The Boys will hoot at us as we paſs——hah,
Who be theſe, who be theſe——

[*Goes towards Cur. and Piet.*]

Cur. Here——this to *Don Alonſo*——this to the *English* Count; and this you may ſhew to the young *German* Prince——and this——I will reſerve for higher Prices.

[*Gives Piet. Pictures.*]

Piet. Will you ſhew none to the Courtiers, Sir?

Cur. Away you Fool, I deal in no ſuch Traſh.

Lor. How Sir, how was that? pray what, came we to gain your diſ-favour?

Cur. I cry you mercy, Sir, pray who are you?

Lor. A Courtier, Sir, I can aſſure you, and one of the beſt Rank too; I have the Prince's ear, Sir.

—What have you there, hah?—Pictures? let me ſee—
What, are they to be bought?

Cur. Sir, they are Copies of moſt fair Originals, not to be bought but hired.

Lor. Say you ſo, Friend? the Price, the Price.

Cur. Five thouſand Crowns a Month, Sir.

Lor. The Price is ſomewhat ſaucy.

Cur.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 311

Cur. Sir, they be curious Pieces, were never blown upon, have never been in Courts, nor hardly Cities.

Lor. Upon my word that's considerable; Friend, pray where do you live?

Cur. In the *Piazza*, near the Palace.

Lor. Well, put up your Ware, shew not a face of them till I return; for I will bring you the best Chapman in all *Florence*, except the Duke himself.

Cur. You must be speedy then, for to morrow I shall be going towards *Rome*.

Lor. A subtle Rascal this: thou think'st, I warrant, to make a better Market amongst the Cardinals.—But take my word, ne'er a Cardinal of them all comes near this Man, I mean, to bring you in Matters of Beauty—so, this will infallibly make my Peace again: [*Aside.* look ye Friend—Be ready, for 'tis the Prince, the noble generous *Frederick*, that I design your Merchant.

[*Goes out.*

Cur. Your Servant, Sir,—that is *Guilliam*; I cannot be mistaken in him, go call him back.

[*Pietro fetches him back, who puts on a furlly Face.*—Friend what art thou?

Guil. What am I? why what am I? dost thou not see what I am? a Courtier, Friend.

Cur. But what's thy Name?

Guil. My Name, I have not yet consider'd.

Cur. What was thy Name?

Guil. What was my Name?

Cur. Yes, Friend, thou hadst one.

Guil. Yes, Friend, thou hadst one.

Cur. Dog, do'st eccho me? do'st thou repeat?
I say again, what is thy Name? [*Shakes him.*

Guil. Oh horrible!—why, Sir, it was *Guilliam* when I was a silly Swain.

Cur. *Guilliam*—the same; didst thou not know a Maid whose name was *Cloris*?

Guil. Yes, there was such a Maid, but now she's none.

Cur. Was such a Maid, but now she's none!

—The Slave upbraids my Grievs. [*Aside.*

Guil. Yes, Sir, so I said.

Cur.

312 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Cur. So you said!

Guil. Why, yes, Sir, what do you repeat?

Cur. What mean you, Sirrah? have you a mind to have your Throat cut? tell me where she is.

Guil. I dare as well be hang'd.

Now must I devise a lye, or never look *Cloris* in the Face more. [*Aside.*]

Cur. Here's Gold for thee; I will be secret too.

Guil. Oh, Sir, the poor Maid you speak of is dead.

Cur. Dead! where dy'd she? and how?

Guil. Now am I put to my wits; this 'tis to begin in Sin, as our Curate said: I must go on: [*Aside.*]

—Why Sir, she came into the Wood—and hard by a River-side—she sigh'd, and she wept full sore; and cry'd two or three times out upon *Curtius*,—and—then—

[*Howls.*]

Cur. Poor *Cloris*, thy Fate was too severe.

Guil. And then as I was saying, Sir, she leapt into the River, and swam up the Stream. [*Cur. weeps.*]

Piet. And why up the Stream, Friend?

Guil. Because she was a Woman—and that's all.

[*Ex. Guil.*]

Cur. Farewel, and thank thee.

—Poor *Cloris* dead, and banish'd too from *Laura*!
Was ever wretched Lover's Fate like mine!

—And he who injures me, has power to do so;

—But why, where lies this Power about this Man?

Is it his Charms of Beauty, or of Wit?

Or that great Name he has acquir'd in War?

Is it the Majesty, that holy something,

That guards the Person of his Demi-god?

This awes not me, there must be something more.

For ever, when I call upon my Wrongs,

Something within me pleads so kindly for me,

As would persuade me that he could not err.

—Ah, what is this? where lies this Power divine,

That can so easily make a Slave of mine? [*Exeunt.*]

S C E N E

SCENE III.

Enter Frederick, and Cloris finely dress'd.

Fred. 'Tis much methinks, a Boy of so dejected, humble Birth, should have so much of Sense and Soul about him.

Clo. I know not that ; but if I have a thought
Above that humble Birth or Education,
It was inspir'd by Love.

Fred. Still you raise my Wonder greater ;
—Thou a Lover ?

Clo. Yes, my Lord, tho I am young,
I've felt the power of Beauty ;
And should you look upon the Object, Sir,
Your Wonders soon will cease ;
Each Look does even animate Insensibles,
And strikes a reverend Awe upon the Soul :
Nothing is found so lovely.

Fred. Thou speak'st prettily, I think Love
Indeed has inspir'd thee.

Clo. These were the Flatteries, Sir, she us'd to me ;
Of her it was I learn'd to speak, and sigh,
And look, as oft you say, I do on you.

Fred. Why then, it seems she made returns ?

Clo. Ah ! Sir, 'twas I that first was blest,
I first the happy Object was belov'd ;

For 'twas a Person, Sir, so much above me, —

It had been Sin to've rais'd my Eyes to her ;

Or by a glance, or sigh, betray my Pain.

But Oh ! when with a thousand soft Expressions,
She did encourage me to speak of Love !

— My God ! how soon extravagant I grew,

And told so soft the story of my Passion,

That she grew weary of the repeated Tale,

And punish'd my Presumption with a strange neglect.

[Weeps.]

Fred. How, my good *Philibert* ?

Clo. Would suffer me to see her Face no more.

Fred. That was pity ; without a Fault ?

314 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

Clo. Alas, Sir, I was guilty of no Crime,
 But that of having told her how I lov'd her ;
 For all I had I sacrific'd to her ;
 ——— Poor worthless Treasures to any but a Lover ;
 And such you know accept the meanest things,
 Which Love and true Devotion do present.
 When she was present, I found a thousand ways
 To let her know how much I was her Slave ;
 And absent, still invented new ones,
 And quite neglected all my little Business ;
 Counting the tedious Moments of the Day
 By Sighs and Tears ; thought it an Age to night,
 Whose Darkness might secure our happy meeting :
 But we shall meet no more on these kind Terms. [*Sighs.*]

Fred. Come, do not weep, sweet Youth, thou art too
 young,
 To have thy blooming Cheeks blasted with sorrow ;
 Thou wilt out-grow this childish Inclination,
 And shalt see Beauties here, whose every glance
 Kindle new Fires, and quite expel the old.

Clo. Oh never, Sir.

Fred. When I was first in love, I thought so too,
 But now with equal ardour
 I doat upon each new and beauteous Object.

Clo. And quite forget the old ?

Fred. Not so ; but when I see them o'er again,
 I find I love them as I did before.

Clo. Oh God forbid, I should be so inconstant !
 No, Sir, tho she be false, she has my Heart,
 And I can die, but not redeem the Victim.

Fred. Away you little Fool, you make me sad
 By this resolve : but I'll instruct you better.

Clo. I would not make you sad for all the World.
 Sir, I will sing, or dance, do any thing
 That may divert you.

Fred. I thank thee *Philibert*, and will accept
 Thy Bounty ; perhaps it may allay thy Griefs awhile too.

Clo. I'll call the Musick, Sir. [*She goes out.*]

Fred. This Boy has strange agreements in him.

Enter

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 315

Enter Cloris with Musick.

She bids them play, and dances a Fig.

This was wondrous kind, my pretty Philibert.

Enter Page.

Page. Lorenzo, my Lord, begs admittance.

Fred. He may come in.

Enter Lorenzo.

—Well, Lorenzo, what's the News with thee ?

—How goes the price of Beauty, hah ?

Lor. My Lord, that question is *a propos* to what I have to say ; this Paper will answer your Question, Sir —

[Gives him a Paper, he reads.

—Hah, I vow to gad a lovely Youth ; [Lor. gazes on Phil. But what makes he here with Frederick ?

This Stripling may chance to mar my market of Women now——

'Tis a fine Lad, how plump and white he is ; [Aside. Would I could meet him somewhere ith dark, I'd have a fling at him, and try whether I were right Florentine.

Fred. Well, Sir, where be these Beauties ?

Lor. I'll conduct you to them.

Fred. What's the Fellow that brings them ?

Lor. A Grecian, I think, or something.

Fred. Beauties from Greece, Man !

Lor. Why, let them be from the Devil, so they be new and fine, what need we care ? —— But you must go to night.

Fred. I am not in a very good condition to make Visits of that kind.

Lor. However see them, and if you like them, you may oblige the Fellow to a longer stay, for I know they are handsome.

Fred. That's the only thing thou art judge of ;

——Well, go you and prepare them ;

And Philibert, thou shalt along with me ;

I'll have thy Judgment too.

Clo. Good Heaven, how false he is ! [Aside.

Lor. What time will your Highness come ?

Fred. Two Hours hence. [Ex. Fred.

Lor. So then I shall have time to have a bout with this jilting

316 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

tilting Huswife *Isabella*, for my Fingers itch to [*Afide.*
be at her. [*Ex. Lorenzo.*

Cl. Not know me yet? cannot this Face inform him?
My Sighs, nor Eyes, my Accent, nor my Tale?
Had he once thought of me, he must have found me out.
— Yes, yes, 'tis certain I am miserable;
He's going now to see some fresher Beauties,
And I, he says, must be a witness of it;
This gives me Wounds, painful as those of Love:
Some Women now would find a thousand Plots
From so much Grief as I have, but I'm dull;
Yet I'll to *Laura*, and advise with her,
Where I will tell her such a heavy Tale,
As shall oblige her to a kind concern:
— This may do; I'll tell her of this Thought,
This is the first of Art I ever thought on;
And if this prove a fruitless Remedy,
The next, I need not study, how to die. [*Exeunt.*

S C E N E IV.

*Enter Lorenzo, meets Guillian, who passes by him, and
takes no notice of him.*

Lor. How now, Manners a few?

Guil. I cry you heartily, Sir, I did not see you.

Lor. Well, Sirrah, the News.

Guil. Sir, the Gentlewoman whom you sent me to,
says that she'll meet you here.

Lor. That's well, thou mayst come to be a States-man
in time, thou art a fellow of so quick dispatch: But hark
ye, Sirrah, there are a few Lessons I must learn you, con-
cerning Offices of this nature; but another time for that:
but—— [*Whispers.*

Enter Isabella and Valet.

Isab. Here he is; and prithee, when thou seest him in
my Chamber, go and tell my Lord, under pretence of the
care you have of the Honour of his House.

Val. I warrant you, let me alone for a Tale, and a Lye
at the end on't; which shall not over-much incense him,
nor yet make him neglect coming. [*Ex. Val.*
Lor.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 317

Lor. Oh are you there, Mistress? what have you now to say for your last Night's Roguery? Are not you a Baggage? confess.

Isab. You have a mind to lose your opportunity again, as you did last Night, have ye not? Pray God your own Shadow scare you not, as it did then; and you will possibly believe no body meant you harm then, nor now.

Lor. Art thou in earnest?

Isab. Are you in earnest?

Lor. Yes that I am, and that *Clarina* shall find, if I once come to her.

Isab. Come, leave your frippery Jests, and come in.

Lor. *Guilliam*, be sure you attend me here, and whoever you see, say nothing; the best on't is, thou art not much known.

[Isab. and Lor. go in.]

Guil. Well, I see there is nothing but foutering in this Town; wou'd our *Lucia* were here too for me, for all the Maids I meet with are so giglish and scornful, that a Man, as I am, gets nothing but flouts and flings from them. Oh, for the little kind Lass that liyes under the Hill, of whom the Song was made; which because I have nothing else to do, I will sing over now; hum, hum,

The Song for *Guilliam*.

IN a Cottage by the Mountain
Lives a very pretty Maid,
Who lay sleeping by a Fountain,
Underneath a Myrtle shade;
Her Petticoat of wanton Sarcenet,
The amorous Wind about did move,
And quite unveil'd the Throne of Love,
And quite unveil'd the Throne of Love.

'Tis something cold, I'll go take a Nipperkin of Wine.

[Goes out.]

Enter *Isab.* and *Lor.* above, as frighted into the Balcony.

Lor. This was some trick of thine, I will be hang'd else.

Isab.

318 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ifab. Oh, I'll be sworn you wrong me ;
 Alas, I'm undone by't. [*Ant. at the Door knocks.*]

Ant. Open the Door, thou naughty Woman.

Lor. Oh oh, what shall I do ? what shall I do ?

Ant. Open the Door, I say.

Lor. Oh 'tis a damnable leap out at this Balcony.

Ifab. And yet you are a dead Man, if you see him.

Ant. Impudence, will you open the Door ?

Ifab. I will, Sir, immediately.

Lor. Devise some way to let me down, or I will
 throw thee out ; no Ladder of Ropes, no Device ?

—If a Man would not forswear Whoring for the future
 that is in my condition, I am no true Gentleman.

Ant. Open, or I will break the Door.

Ifab. Hold the Door, and swear lustily that you are
 my Husband, and I will in the mean time provide for
 your safety, tho I can think of none but the Sheets from
 the Bed. [*He holds the Door.*]

Lor. Any thing to save my Life ;

—Sir, you may believe me upon my Honour,
 I am lawful Husband to *Isabella*,

And have no designs upon your House or Honour.

[*Ifab. this while fastens the Sheets, which are
 to be suppos'd from the Bed to the Balcony.*]

Ant. Thou art some Villain.

Lor. No, Sir, I am an honest Man, and married law-
 fully.

Ant. Who art thou ?

Lor. Hast thou done ?

Ifab. Yes, but you must venture hard.

Ifab. 'Tis *Lorenzo*, Sir.

Lor. A Pox on her, now I am ashamed to all eternity.

Ifab. Sir, let me beg you'll take his Word and Oath to-
 night, and to morrow I will satisfy you.

[*Lor. gets down by the Sheets.*]

Ant. Look you make this good, or you shall both
 dearly pay for't.

Lor. I am alive, yes, yes, all's whole and sound,
 which is a mercy, I can tell you ; this is whoring now :
 may I turn *Franciscan*, if I could not find in my heart to
 do

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 319

do penance in Camphire Posset, this Month, for this.
—Well, I must to this Merchant of Love, and I would
gladly be there before the Prince : for since I have mist
here, I shall be amorous enough, and then I'll provide
for *Frederick*;
For 'tis but just, altho he be my Master,
That I in these Ragousts should be his Taster. [Exeunt.]

SCENE V.

Enter Ismena with a Veil.

Ism. *Alberto* is not come yet, sure he loves me ;
But 'tis not Tears, and Knees, that can confirm me :
No, I must be convinc'd by better Argument.
—Deceit, if ever thou a Guide wert made
To amorous Hearts, assist a Love-sick Maid.

Enter Alberto.

Alb. Your pleasure, Madam ?
— Oh that she would be brief,
And send me quickly from her,
For her Eyes will overthrow my purpose. [Aside.]

Ism. *Alberto*, do you love me ?

Alb. No.

Ism. No ! have you deceiv'd me then ?

Alb. Neither, *Clarina* ; when I told you so,
By Heaven 'tis perfect Truth.

Ism. And what have I done since should merit your
Dis-esteem ?

Alb. Nothing but what has rais'd it.

Ism. To raise your Esteem, then it seems, is to lessen
your Love ; or, as most Gallants are, you're but pleas'd
with what you have not ; and love a Mistress with great
Passion, till you find your self below'd again, and then
you hate her.

Alb. You wrong my Soul extremely,
'Tis not of that ungrateful nature ;
To love me is to me a greater Charm
Than that of Wit or Beauty.

Ism. I'm glad on't, Sir ; then I have pleasant News
for you, I know a Lady, and a Virgin too, that loves
you

320 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

you with such Passion, as has oblig'd me to become her Advocate.

Alb. I am very much oblig'd to her,
If there be any such.

Ism. Upon my Life there is; I am in earnest,
The Lady is my Sister too.

Alb. How, *Clarina*, this from you?

Ism. Nay, I have promis'd her, that you should love
Since both her Birth and and Beauty merits you. (her too,

Alb. Away, false Woman: I love your Sister!
No, I will hate you both.

Ism. Why so angry?

Alas, it is against my Will I do it.

Alb. Did you betray my Faith, when 'twas so easy
To give a credit to your tale of Love?

—Oh Woman, faithless Woman!

Ism. *Alberto*, with a world of shame I own
That I then lov'd you, and must do so still;
But since that Love must be accounted criminal,
And that a world of danger does attend it;
I am resolv'd, tho I can never quit it,
To change it into kind Esteem for you;
And would ally you, Sir, as near to me,
As our unkind Stars will permit me.

Alb. I thank you, Madam: Oh what a shame it is,
To be out-done in Virtue, as in Love!

Ism. Another favour I must beg of you,
That you will tell *Antonio* what is past.

Alb. How mean you, Madam?

Ism. Why, that I love you, Sir,
And how I have deceiv'd him into confidence.

Alb. This is strange; you cannot mean it sure.

Ism. When I intend to be extremely good,
I would not have a secret Sin within,
Tho old, and yet repented too: no Sir,
Confession always goes with Penitence.

Alb. Do you repent you that you lov'd me then?

Ism. Not so; but that I did abuse *Antonio*.

Alb. And can you think that this will cure his Jealousy?

Ism.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 321

Ism. Doubtless it will, when he knows how needless 'tis;
For when they're most secure, they're most betray'd:
Besides, I did but act the part he made;
And Ills he forces, sure he'll not upbraid.
Go seek out *Antonio*.

Alb. You have o'ercome me, Madam, every way,
And this your last Command I can obey;
Your Sister too I'll see, and will esteem,
But you've my Heart, which I can ne'er redeem.
[*Exeunt severally.*]

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Laura, and Cloris like a Boy, as before.

Lau. Forward dear *Cloris*.

Clb. And, Madam, 'twas upon a Holiday,
It chanc'd Prince *Frederick* came into our Village,
On some reports were made him of my Beauty,
Attended only by the noble *Curtius*:

They found me in the Church at my Devotion,
Whom *Frederick* soon distinguish'd from the rest;
He kneel'd down by me, and instead of Prayer,
He fell to praise—but 'twas my Beauty only;

—That I could tell you, of my strange surprize!
My Zeal was all disorder'd, and my Eyes
Fed on the false, not real Sacrifice.

—I wanted Art my Sentiments to hide,
Which from my Eyes and Blushes soon he spy'd.

Lau. And did you know him then?

Clb. Not till he left me:

—But, to be short, Madam, we parted there;
But e'er he went he whisper'd in my ear,
And sigh'd, Ah *Cloris*! e'er you do depart,
Tell me, where 'tis you will dispose your Heart?

—Pray give me leave to visit it again,
Your Eyes that gave can only ease my Pain.

322 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

I, only blushing, gave him my consent ;
 He paid his Thanks in Sighs, and from me went.
 That night, alas, I took but little rest ;
 The new and strange Disorder in my Breast
 Can, Madam, only by your self be guest.

Lau. I'll not deny that I'm a Lover too,
 And can imagine what was felt by you.

Clo. No sooner did the welcome Day appear,
 But *Lucia* brought me word the Prince was there ;
 His very Name disorder'd me much more,
 Than did his Sight or Touch the day before ;
 So soon my rising Love grew up to power,
 So soon he did become my Conqueror.

—How pale and trembling, when he did appear,
 I grew, he too had marks of Love and Fear.

—But I'll omit the many Visits paid,
 Th' unvalued Presents, and the Oaths he made,
 My kind Disputes on all his Letters writ,
 How all my Doubts were answer'd by his Wit ;
 How oft he vow'd to marry me, whilst I
 Durst not believe the pleasing Perjury :

—And only tell you, that one night he came,
 Led by designs of an impatient Flame ;
 When all the House was silently asleep,
 Except my self, who Love's sad Watch did keep ;
 Arm'd with his Ponyard, and his Breast all bare,
 His Face all pale with restless Love and Fear ;
 So many wild and frantick things he said,
 And so much Grief and Passion too betray'd,
 So often vow'd he'd finish there his Life,
 If I refus'd him to become his Wife ;
 That I half-dying, said it shou'd be so ;
 Which tho I fear'd, Oh how I wish'd it too !
 Both prostrate on the Ground i'th' face of Heaven,
 His Vows to me, and mine to him were given :

—And then, oh then, what did I not resign !
 With the assurance that the Prince was mine.

[Weeps.]

Lau. Poor *Cloris*, how I pity thee !
 Since Fate has treated me with equal rigor ;
 —*Curtius* is banish'd, *Frederick* still pursues me,

And

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 323

And by a cruel Father I'm confin'd,
And cannot go to serve my self or thee. [One knocks.

Lor. without.] Sister Laura, Sister.

Lau. It is my Brother, would he would be kind,
And set us free; he shall not see thee,
And I'll persuade him.

[As she puts Cloris into her Closet, enter
Lorenzo with a Letter.

Lor. Hah, locking her Closet! now, were I a right
Italian, should I grow jealous, and enrag'd at I know
not what: hah Sister! what are you doing here? Open
your Cabinet, and let me see't.

Lau. Sir, 'tis in disorder, and not worth your seeing
now.

Lor. 'Tis so, I care not for that, I'll see't.

Lau. Pray do not, Brother.

Lor. Your denial makes me the more inquisitive.

Lau. 'Tis but my saying, he came from the Prince,
and he dares not take it ill.

—Here, Sir. [Gives him the Key.

Lor. And here's for you too; a Letter from Curtius,
and therefore I would not open it: I took it up at the
Post-house.

[She reads, and seems pleas'd.
Now if this should prove some surly Gallant of hers,
and give me a slash o'er the Face for peeping, I were but
rightly serv'd; and why the Devil should I expect my
Sister should have more Virtue than my self? She's the
same flesh and blood: or why, because she's the weaker
Vessel, should all the unreasonable burden of the Honour
of our House, as they call it, be laid on her Shoulders,
whilst we may commit a thousand Villanies? but 'tis so—
Here, open the Door; —

I'll put her before me however.

[She opens the Door, and brings out Cloris.

Lau. Sir, 'tis Philibert from the Prince.

Lor. Why how now, Youngster, I see you intend to
thrive by your many Trades; so soon, so soon, if faith?
but, Sirrah, this is my Sister, and your Prince's Mistress;
take notice of that.

Clo. I know not what you mean.

Lor.

324 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

Lor. Sir, you cannot deceive me so ;
And you were right serv'd, you would be made fit for
nothing but the Great *Turk's* Seraglio.

Clo. You mistake my business, Sir.

Lor. Your Blushes give you the lye, Sirrah ; but for
the Prince's sake, and another reason I have, I will par-
don you for once.

Lau. He has not done a fault, and needs it not.

Lor. Was he not alone with thee ?
And is not that enough ? Well, I see I am no *Italian*
in *Punctilio's* of honourable Revenge. There is but
one experiment left to prove my self so ; and if that fail,
I'll e'en renounce my Country.—Boy, harkye,—there is
a certain kindness you may do me, and get your pardon
for being found here.

Clo. You shall command me any thing.

Lor. Prithee how long hast thou been set up for thy
self, hah ?

Clo. As how, Sir ?

Lor. Poh, thou understand'st me.

Clo. Indeed I do not, Sir ; what is't you mean ?

Lor. A smooth-fac'd Boy, and ask such a Question ?

Fy, fy, this Ignorance was ill counterfeited
To me that understand the World.

Clo. Explain your self, Sir.

Lor. Lookye, ten or twenty Pistoles will do you no hurt,
will it ?

Clo. Not any, Sir.

Lor. Why so, 'tis well any thing will make thee ap-
prehend.

Clo. I shall be glad to serve you, Sir, without that fee.

Lor. That's kindly said—

I see a Man must not be too easy of belief : had I been
so, this Boy would have been at, what d'ye mean Sir ?
And Lord I understand you not. Well, *Philibert*, here's
earnest to bind the Bargain ; I am now in haste ; when
I see thee next, I'll tell thee more. [*Lorenzo whispers*
to *Laura*.

Clo. This 'tis to be a Favourite now ;
I warrant you I must do him some good office to the
Which I'll be sure to do.

(Prince,
Lor.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 325

Lor. Nay it must be done, for she has us'd me basely ;
Oh 'tis a Baggage.

Lau. Let me alone to revenge you on *Isabella*,
Get me but from this Imprisonment.

Lor. I will : whilst I hold the old Man in a dispute,
Do you two get away ; but be sure thou pay'st her home.

Lau. I warrant you, Sir, this was happy ;
Now shall I see *Curtius*.

Lor. *Philibert*, I advise you to have a care of wench-
ing : 'twill spoil a good Face, and mar your better market
of the two. [Ex. Lor.]

Lau. Come let us haste, and by the way, I'll tell thee
of a means that may make us all happy. [Exeunt.]

S C E N E II.

Enter *Alberto melancholy*.

Alb. *Antonio* said he would be here,
I'm impatient till he come——

Enter *Antonio*.

Ant. *Alberto*, I have such a Project for thee !

Alb. Hah——

Ant. What ails thee, art thou well ?

Alb. No.

Ant. Where art thou sick ?

Alb. At Heart, *Antonio*, poison'd by thy Jealousy ;
——Oh thou hast ruin'd me, undone my Quiet,
And from a Man of reasonable Virtue,
Hast brought me to a wild distracted Loyer.

Ant. Explain your self.

Alb. Thou'st taught me, Friend, to love *Clarina* ;
Not, as I promis'd thee, to feign, but so,
That I, unless I do possess that Object,
I think must die ; at best be miserable.

Ant. How, Sir, have I done this ?

Alb. Yes, *Antonio*, thou hast done this.

Ant. My dear *Alberto*, said you that you lov'd her ?

Alb. Yes, *Antonio*, against my will I do ;
As much against my will, as when I told her so ;
Urg'd by thy needless Stratagem.

Ant.

326 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Ant. Name it no more, it was an idle Fault,
Which I do so repent me,
That if you find I should relapse again,
Kill me, and let me perish with my Weakness:
And were that true you tell me of your Passion,
Sure I should wish to die, to make you happy.

Alb. That's kindly said, and I submit to you,
And am content to be out-done in Amity.

Ant. Yes, I'll resign my Claims, and leave the World;
Alberto, 'tis unkind to think I would be happy
By ways must ruin you:

But sure you tell me this, but only to afflict me.

Alb. 'Tis truth, *Antonio,* I do love *Clarina*;
And, what is yet far worse for thy repose,
Believe my self so blest'd to be belov'd.

Ant. How, to be belov'd by her!
—Oh dire effects of Jealousy!

Alb. All that you saw to day was only feign'd,
To let you see, that even your Eyes and Ears
Might be impos'd upon.

Ant. Can it be possible!

Alb. And now she thinks she is enough reveng'd,
And lets you know, in her feign'd Scorn to me,
That all your Sleights and Cunning's are but vain:
She has deceiv'd them all, and by that Art,
Gives you a Confidence, and me a Heart.

Ant. I must confess, it is but just in her
To punish thus the Errors of my Fear;
I do forgive her, from my Soul I do.

—But, Sir, what satisfaction's this to you?

Alb. *Clarina* happy, I'll from Court retire,
And by that Absence quench my hopeless Fire:
War I will make my Mistress, who may be,
Perhaps, more kind than she has been to me;
Where tho I cannot conquer, 'twill allow
That I may die; that's more than this will do.

Ant. —Why did you, Sir, betray my Weakness to her?
Tho 'twas but what I did deserve from you.

Alb. By all that's good, she knew the Plot before,
From *Isabella,* who it seems o'erheard us,

When

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 327

When you once press'd me to't:
And had we wanted Virtue, thoud'it been lost.

Ant. I own the Crime;
And first I beg thy Pardon,
And after that will get it from *Clarina*;
Which done, I'll wait upon thee to the Camp,
And suffer one year's Penance for this Sin,
Unless I could divert this Resolution,
By a Proposal *Clarina* bid me make you.

Alb. What was it, Sir?

Ant. I have a Sister, Friend, a handsome Virgin,
Rich, witty, and I think she's virtuous too;
Return'd last Week from *St. Teresa's* Monastery.

Alb. Sure any thing that is to thee ally'd,
Must find a more than bare Respect from me;
But certain 'tis I ne'er shall love again,
And have resolv'd never to marry any,
Where Interest, and not Love, must join our hands.

Ant. You cannot tell what Power there lies in Beauty;
Come you shall see her, and if after that,
You find you cannot love her,
We'll both to *Candia*, where we both will prove
Rivals in Honour, as we're now in Love.

—But I'd forgot to tell thee what I came for;
I must this Evening beg your Company,
Nay, and perhaps your Sword; come along with me,
And by the way I'll tell you the Adventure. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *The Lodgings of Curtius.*

Enter Curtius and Pietro, disguis'd as before.

Cur. I wonder we hear no news yet of the Prince,
I hope he'll come; *Pietro*, be the Bravoes ready,
And the Curtezans?

Piet. My Lord, they'll be here immediately, all well
dress'd too.

Cur. They be those Bravoes that did belong to me?

Piet. Yes, Sir, the same;
But *Antonio* is their Patron.

328 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Cur. They be stout and secret ; 'tis well,
Is the Musick and all things ready ?
For I'll not be seen till my Part is to be play'd.
What Arms have they ?

Piet. Pistols, Sir, would you have other ?

Cur. No, I have not yet consider'd how to kill him,
Nor scarce resolv'd to do so any way.

What makes this strange Irresolution in me ?

—Sure 'tis the force of sacred Amity,
Which but too strictly was observ'd by me.

—My Prince, and Friend, my Wife, and Sister too ;
Shall not those last, the powerful first out-do ?

My Honour, and my Love, are there engag'd,
And here, by ties of Duty, I'm oblig'd :

I satisfy but these, if he must bleed ;
But ruin the whole Dukedom in the Deed,
The hopeful Heir of all their noble Spoils,
And Joy and Recompence of all their Toils.

—Why so was *Cloris*, *Laura* too, to me,
Which both were ravish'd from me, Prince, by thee.

[Knocks within.

Piet. Sir, they be the Bravoës and Curtezans.

[Pietro goes out.

Cur. 'Tis well, I need not talk with them,
They understand their work.

Piet. They do, my Lord, and shall be ready at your
They are all *Neopolitans*, you know, Sir. (stamp ;

Cur. Are they the better for that ?

Piet. Much, Sir, a *Venetian* will turn to your Enemy,
If he will give him but a Soufe more than you have done ;
And your *Milanese* are fit for nothing but to
Rob the Post or Carrier ; a *Genoese* too
Will sooner kill by Usury than Sword or Pistol ;
A *Roman* fit for nothing but a Spy.

Cur. Well, Sir, you are pleasant with my Country-
men.

Piet. I'll be so with my own too, Sir ; and tell you,
That the *Maltese*, who pretend to so much Honour
And Gravity, are fit only to rob their Neighbours
With pretence of Piety.

And

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 329

—And the *Sicilians* so taken up with Plots,
How to kill their Vice-Roy, that it keeps them
From being Rogues to a less degree.

But I have done, Sir, and beg your pardon.

Cur. Didst leave the Letter, I commanded thee,
For *Laura* ?

Piet. I did, my Lord.

Enter Lorenzo.

Lor. Well, here's the Prince just coming.

Cur. Pray, Sir, conduct him in,
I'm ready for him.

[*Ex. Cur. and Piet.*

*Enter the Prince, conducted by two Women in Masque-
rade, with Lights, he endeavouring to take off their
Masks.*

[*Ex. two Women.*

He walks about while this Song is singing.

*What is the recompence of War,
But soft and wanton Peace ?*

*What the best Balsam to our Scars,
But that which *Veuus* gave to *Mars*,
When he was circled in a kind Embrace ?*

*Behold a Prince, who never yet
Was vanquish'd in the Field ;
Awhile his Glories must forget,
And lay his Laurels at the feet
Of some fair Female Power, to whom he'll yield.*

Fred. What's this the Preparation ?

Lor. Yes, so it should seem ; but had you met with
so many defeats as I have done to night, you would wil-
lingly excuse this Ceremony.

Musick for the Dance.

*Enter Antonio with Ismena, Alberto with Clarina,
Laura and Cloris with two Men more, and all dress'd
in Masquerade, with Vizards ; they dance. The
Prince sits down : the Dance being done, they retire to
one side ; and Alberto comes and presents him Clarina,
and*

330 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

and bows and retires; who puts off her Mask, and puts it on again, and retires.

Fred. She's wondrous fair;
Sure in his whole Cabal he cannot shew a fairer—

Lor. She resembles *Clarina*; I wish your Highness would see further, and then perhaps this would fall to my lot, for I love her for likeness sake.

[Antonio presents Ismena, and retires as the other.]

Fred. This I confess out-does the other; an Innocency dwells upon her Face, that's strangely taking, is it not, *Lorenzo*?

Lor. To say truth, she is very fine indeed.

[They present Laura.]

Fred. Hah! I am amaz'd; see *Lorenzo*,
Dost thou not know that Face?

Lor. O' my Conscience and Soul, 'tis my own Sister *Laura*; why how now Mistress, do things go thus with you i' faith? *[She shakes her Hand, as not understanding him.]*

Ant. Sir, she understands you not.

Lor. Is it not *Laura* then?

Ant. No, Sir, it is a Stranger.

Fred. Let her be what she will, I'll have her.

[Fred. seems to talk, when she answers in Grimaces.]

Lor. There have been Examples in the World of the good Offices done by a Brother to a Sister; but they are very rare here, and therefore will surely be the more acceptable.

Well, Sir, have you fix'd, that I may chuse?

Fred. I have, and had he thousands more, *[Lor. goes to Clar.]*
I would refuse them all for this fair Creature.

Enter Pietro.

Piet. Sir, all things are ready as you desire,
But my Master must first speak with you alone.

Fred. About the Price I'll warrant you;
Let him come in: *[All go out but Fred. to him Cur.]*

—Are you the Master of the Ceremony?

Cur. I am,

Fred.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 331

Fred. Be speedy then, and by my Impatency to be with that agreeable Stranger, guess at my Approbation of the Ladies, and which I chuse.

Cur. Your mighty Heat, Sir, will be soon allay'd.

Fred. Shall it?

Cur. Yes, Sir, it shall, for you must die.

Fred. Sure thou art mad to tell me so, whoe'er thou be'st,

Whilst I have this about me.

[*Draws.*

Cur. That, Sir, you draw in vain; stand off——

[*Offers a Pistol.*

Fred. What new conceited Preparation's this?

Cur. When you know this Face, it will inform you.

[*Pulls off his false Beard.*

Fred. *Curtius!* I am betray'd, oh Villain!

[*Offers to fight.*

Cur. Ho, within there——

[*He calls, and all the masked Men come out, and offer their Pistols at Frederick.*

Fred. Hold, I am the Prince of Florence.

Cur. These, Sir, are Rogues, and have no sense of But Mischief in their Souls; (ought, Gold is their Prince and God,——go, be gone——

[*They withdraw.*

——See, Sir, I can command them.

Fred. *Curtius,* why dost thou deal thus treacherously Did I not offer thee to fight thee fairly? (with me?

Cur. 'Tis like the Injuries, Sir, that you have done me; Pardon me if my Grievs make me too rude, And in coarse terms lay all your Sins before you,

——First, Sir, you have debauch'd my lovely Sister, The only one I had;

The Hope and Care of all our noble Family:

Thou Prince didst ravish all her Virtue from her, And left her nothing but a desperate sense of Shame,

Which only serv'd to do her self that Justice,

Which I had executed, had she not prevented me.

Fred. In this, upon my Soul, you do me wrong.

Cur. Next, (Oh how unlike a brave and generous Man!)

Without

332 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Without a Cause, you cast me from your Bosom ;
 Withdrew the Honour of your promis'd Friendship,
 And made me partner in my Sister's Fate ;
 Only with this difference, that she
 You left to act a Murder on her self ;
 And mine you would have been so kind to've done
 With your own hand, but my Respect prevented it.
 — Next, Sir, you ravish'd *Laura* from me,
 And under a pretence of sacred Friendship,
 You prov'd your self the worst of Enemies ;
 And that's a Crime you dare not say was Ignorance,
 As you perhaps will plead your Sin to *Cloris* was.

Fred. *Cloris*, why what hast thou to do with *Cloris* ?

Cur. She was my Sister, *Frederick*.

Fred. Thy Sister !

Cur. Yes, think of it well,
 A Lady of as pure and noble Blood,
 As that of the great Duke thy Father,
 Till you, bad Man, infected it.

— Say, should I murder you for this base Action,
 Would you not call it a true Sacrifice ?

And would not Heaven and Earth forgive it too ?

Fred. No, had I known that she had been thy Sister,
 I had receiv'd her as a Gift from Heaven ;
 And so I would do still.

Cur. She must be sent indeed from Heaven,
 If you receive her now.

Fred. Is *Cloris* dead ? Oh how I was to blame !

[Weeps.]

— Here thou mayst finish now the Life thou threaten'dst.

Cur. Now, Sir, you know my Justice and my Power ;
 Yet since my Prince can shed a Tear for *Cloris*,
 I can forgive him ;— here, Sir,— send me to *Cloris*,

[Kneels, and offers the Sword.]

That Mercy possibly will redeem the rest
 Of all the Wrongs you've done me ;
 And you shall find nothing but Sorrow here,
 And a poor broken Heart that did adore you.

Fred. Rise *Curtius*, and divide my Dukedom with me ;
 Do any thing that may preserve thy Life,

And

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 333

And gain my Pardon; alas, thy Honour's safe,
Since yet none knows that *Cloris* was thy Sister,
Or if they do, I must proclaim this truth;
She dy'd thy Prince's Wife.

Cur. These Tidings would be welcome to my Sister,
And I the fitting'st Man to bear that News.

[*Offers to stab himself; is held by Frederick, Laura,
and Cloris, who come in with Isabella, dress'd
like Philibert, and the rest.*]

Lau. Stay *Curtius*, and take me with thee in the way.

Cur. *Laura*, my dearest *Laura*! how came you hi-
ther?

Lau. Comanded by your Letter; have you forgot it?

Fred. *Curtius*, look here, is not this *Cloris*'s Face?

Cur. The same; Oh my sweet Sister, is it thee?

[*Curtius goes to embrace her, she goes back.*]

Fred. Do not be shy, my Soul, it is thy Brother.

Cur. Yes, a Brother who despis'd his Life,

When he believ'd yours lost or sham'd:

But now the Prince will take a care of it.

Clo. May I believe my Soul so truly blest'd?

Fred. Yes, *Cloris*, and thus low I beg thy pardon

[*Kneels.*]

For all the Fears that I have made thee suffer.

*Enter all the rest, first Antonio and Alberto, without
their Vizards.*

Clo. Rise, Sir, it is my Duty and my Glory.

Alb. Sir, we have Pardons too to beg of you.

Fred. *Antonio* and *Alberto*, what turn'd Bravoes?

Cur. I am amaz'd.

Ant. You'll cease your Wonder, Sir, when you shall
know,

—Those Bravoes which formerly belong'd to you,
Are now maintain'd by me; which *Pietro* hir'd

For this night's service; and from them we learnt
What was to be done, (tho not on whom)

But that we guess'd, and thought it but our duty

To put this Cheat on *Curtius*;

Which had we seen, had been resolv'd to kill you,

Had been by us prevented:

The

334 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

The Ladies too would needs be Curtezans
To serve your Highness.

Fred. I'm much oblig'd to them, as you.
—*Cloris*, a while I'll leave thee with thy Brother,
Till I have reconcil'd thee to my Father;
To marry me, is what he long has wish'd for,
And will, I know, receive this News with Joy.

[*Exit.*

Jor. Here's fine doings; what am I like to come to
if he

Turn honest now? This is the worst piece of Incon-
stancy

He ever was guilty of; to change ones Humour, or so,
Sometimes, is nothing: but to change Nature,
To turn good on a sudden, and never give a Man
Civil warning, is a Defeat not to be endur'd;
I'll see the end on't tho.

[*Goes out.*

Alb. Here *Antonio*—imagine how I love thee,
Who make thee such a Present.

[*Gives him Clarina, who is dress'd just as Ismena
was, and Ismena in a Masquing Habit.*

Ant. *Clarina*, can you pardon my Offence,
And bless me with that Love,
You have but justly taken from me?

Clar. You wrong me, Sir, I ne'er withdrew my Heart,
Tho you, but too unkindly, did your Confidence.

Ant. Do not upbraid me; that I was so to blame,
Is shame enough: pray pardon, and forget it.

Clar. I do.

Ant. *Alberto*, to shew my Gratitude in what I may,
I beg you would receive *Ismena* from me.

Alb. Who's this?

Ant. *Ismena*, whom I promis'd thee.

Alb. It is *Clarina*; do you mock my Pain?

[*Shows Ismena.*

Ant. By Heaven not I; this is *Clarina*, Sir.

Alb. That thy Wife *Clarina*!

A Beauty which till now I never saw. (but now?)

Ant. Sure thou art mad, didst thou not give her me
And hast not entertain'd her all this night?

Alb.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 335

Alb. Her Habit and her Vizard did deceive me;
I took her for this Lady, — Oh blest'd Mistake!

Ism. I see you're in the dark, but I'll unfold the Riddle.
— Sir, in the Passage from the Monastery,
Attended only by my Confessor,
A Gentleman, a Passenger, in the same Boat,
Address'd himself to me;
And made a many little Courtships to me:
I being veil'd, he knew not who receiv'd them,
Nor what Confusion they begot in me.
At the first sight, I grew to great esteem of him,
But when I heard him speak —
I'm not ashamed to say he was my Conqueror.

Alb. Oh, Madam, was it you?
Who by your Conversation in that Voyage,
Gave me Disquiets,
Which nothing but your Eyes could reconcile again?

Ism. 'Twas I whom you deceiv'd with some such
Language.

— After my coming home I grew more melancholy,
And by my silence did increase my Pain;
And soon *Clarina* found I was a Lover,
Which I confess'd at last, and nam'd the Object.
She told me of your Friendship with *Antonio*,
And gave me hopes that I again should see you:
— But *Isabella* over-heard the Plot,
Which, Sir, *Antonio* did contrive with you,
To make a feigned Courtship to *Clarina*,
And told us all the story.

Alb. Oh how I'm ravish'd with my Happiness!

Ism. *Clarina*, Sir, at first was much intrag'd,
And vow'd she would revenge her on *Antonio*;
But I besought her to be pleas'd again,
And said I wou'd contrive a Counter-Plot,
Should satisfy her Honour and Revenge.
Thus, Sir, I got a Garment like to hers;
And to be courted, tho but in jest, by you,
I run all hazards of my Brother's Anger,
And your opinion of my Lightness too.

Clar.

336 *The AMOROUS PRINCE.*

Clar. 'Twas a Temptation, Sir, I would not venture,
Left from the reasons of a just Revenge, (on,
And so much Beauty as *Alberto* own'd,
My Virtue should not well secure your Interest.

Ant. But why, *Ismena*, was that killing Plot,
When I was hid behind the Arras? for now I confess all.

Ism. To make *Alberto* confident of my Love,
And try his Friendship to the utmost point.

—*Alberto* too I found had some reserves,
Which I believ'd his Amity to you.

Alb. Yes, Madam, whilst I took you for his Wife,
I thought it crime enough but to adore you;
But now I may with honour own my Passion:
I will, *Ismena*, confidently assure you,
That I will die, unless you pity me.

Ism. She that durst tell you, Sir, how much she lov'd,
When you believ'd it was a Sin to do so,
Will now make good that Promise with *Antonio's* leave.

Ant. With perfect Joy, *Ismena*, I resign thee.

[*Ant.* gives him *Ism.*

Alb. By double Ties you now unite our Souls;
Tho I can hardly credit what I see,
The Happiness so newly is arriv'd. [To *Ant.*

*Enter Prince, Lorenzo and Guiliam, who comes up
scraping to Cloris.*

Fred. My Father is the kindest Man on Earth,
And *Cloris* shall be welcome to his Bosom;
Who'll make him happy in my Reformation.

—Here *Curtius*, take *Laura*, who, I find,
Had rather be my Sister than my Mistress:
The Duke commands it so.

Cur. Till you have pardon'd me my late Offences,
I must deny my self so great a Happiness. [*Cur.* kneels.

Fred. Rise, you have it.

Enter Salvator.

Sal. Is here not a Renegado belongs to me?

Lau. No, Sir, my Faith's entire,
And *Curtius* has the keeping of it.

Sal. Who made him Master of it, hau?

Lau. Heaven, my Inclinations, and the Prince.

Sal.

The AMOROUS PRINCE. 337

Sal. Three powerful Opposers ;
Take her, since it must be so,
And mayst thou be happy with her.

Fred. *Alberto*, would this Court afforded
A Lady worthy thee.

Alb. Sir, I'm already sped, I humbly thank you.

Lor. Sped, quoth ye ? Heaven defend
Me from such Fortune.

Fred. *Lorenzo*, I had forgot thee ; thou shalt e'en
marry too.

Lor. You may command me any thing but marrying.

Ifab. What think you then of a smooth-fac'd Boy ?

Lor. A Pox on him, sure he will not tell now, will
he ?

Ifab. My Lord, I beg your leave to challenge *Lorenzo*.

Fred. What to a Duel, *Philibert* ?

Lor. *Phil.* *Phil.* hold, do not ruin the Reputation
Of a Man that has acquir'd Fame amongst the female Sex ;
I protest I did but jest.

Ifab. But, Sir, I'm in earnest with you.

Fred. This is not *Philibert*.

Ifab. No, Sir, but *Isabella*——that was *Philibert*.

[*Pointing to Cloris.*]

Clo. Yes, Sir, I was the happy Boy to be belov'd,
When *Cloris* was forgotten.

Fred. Oh how you raise my Love and Shame !
But why did *Isabella* change her Habit ?

Clo. Only to take my place, lest you would miss me,
Who being with *Laura*, at the Lodgings of *Clarina*,
And comparing the Words of her Letter
With what the Bravoës had confess'd to *Antonio*,
We found the Plot which was laid for you,
And join'd all to prevent it.

Fred. 'Twas sure the work of Heaven.

Ifab. And now, Sir, I come to claim a Husband here.

Fred. Name him, and take him.

Ifab. *Lorenzo*, Sir.

Lor. Of all Cheats, commend me to a Waiting-Gen-
I her Husband ? (tlewoman ;

Ant. I am a Witness to that Truth.

VOL. IV.

P

Fred.

338 *The* AMOROUS PRINCE.

Fred. 'Tis plain against you ; come, you must be honest.

Lor. Will you compel me to't against my will ?
Oh Tyranny, consider, I am a Man of Quality and Fortune.

Isab. As for my Qualities, you know I have sufficient,
And Fortune, thanks to your Bounty, considerable too.

Fred. No matter, he has enough for both.

Lor. Nay, Sir, an you be against me,
'Tis time to reform in my own defence ;
But 'tis a thing I never consider'd, or thought on.

Fred. Marry first, and consider afterwards.

Lor. That's the usual way I confess ;
Come, *Isabella*, since the Prince commands it,
I do not love thee, but yet I'll not forswear it ;
Since a greater Miracle than that is wrought,
And that's my marrying thee :

Well, 'tis well thou art none of the most beautiful,
I should swear the Prince had some designs on thee else.

Clo. Yes, *Guilliam*, since thou hast been so faithful,
I dare assure thee *Lucia* shall be thine. [*Aside to Guil.*
Guil. bows.

Fred. Come, my fair *Cloris*, invest thy self
In all the Glories which I lately promis'd :
—And Ladies, you'll attend her to the Court,
And share the Welcomes which the Duke provides her ;
Where all the Sallies of my flattering Youth
Shall be no more remember'd, but as past.
Since 'tis a Race that must by Man be run,
I'm happy in my Youth it was begun ;
It serves my future Manhood to improve,
Which shall be sacrific'd to War and Love.

EPILOGUE,

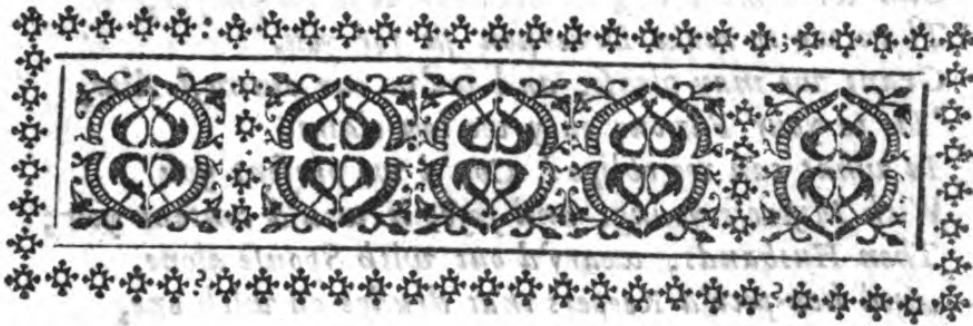
Spoken by Cloris.

Ladies, the Prince was kind at last,
 But all the Danger is not past ;
 I cannot happy be till you approve
 My hasty condescension to his Love.
 'Twas want of Art, not Virtue, was my Crime ;
 And that's, I vow, the Author's Fault, not mine.
 She might have made the Women pitiless,
 But that had harder been to me than this :
 She might have made our Lovers constant too,
 A Work which Heaven it self can scarcely do ;
 But simple Nature never taught the way
 To hide those Passions which she must obey.
 E'en humble Cottages and Cells,
 Where Innocence and Virtue dwells,
 Than Courts no more secure can be
 From Love and dangerous Flattery.
 Love in rural Triumph reigns,
 As much a God amongst the Swains,
 As if the Sacrifices paid
 Were wounded Hearts by Monarchs made :
 And this might well excuse th' Offence,
 If it be so to love a Prince.
 But, Ladies, 'tis your Hands alone,
 And not his Power, can raise me to a Throne ;
 Without that Aid I cannot reign,
 But will return back to my Flocks again.

Guilliam advances.

*Guil. How, go from Court! nay, say not so.
Hear me but speak before you go:
Whoy say the Ladies should refuse ye,
The Bleads I'm sure will better use ye—
So long as ye are kind and young,
I know they'll clap ye right or wrong.*

T H E



THE
YOUNGER BROTHER;
OR,
The Amorous Jilt.

PROLOGUE,

By an unknown Hand.

Spoke by Mr. Powell.



*S Rivals of each other jealous prove,
And both strive which shall gain the Lady's Love,
So we for your Affections daily vie :
Not an Intriguer in the Gallery
(Who squeezes hand of Phillis mask'd, that stood
Ogling for sale, in Velvet Scarf and Hood)*

*Can with more Passion his dear Nymph pursue,
 Than we to make Diversion fit for you.
 Grant we may please, and we've our outmost Aim,
 'Tis to your Favour only we lay claim.
 In what can we oblige? Cou'd we present you
 With Mistress young, and safe, it wou'd content you;
 Then Husbands, weary'd out with Spouse alone,
 And hen-peck'd Keepers that drudge on with one,
 I fancy hither wou'd in Crouds resort,
 As thick as Men for Offices to Court:
 Who'd stay behind? the Beau above Threescore,
 Wou'd hobble on, and gape for one bit more;
 Men of all Stations, from the Nobles, down
 To grave Sir Roger in his Cap and Gown,
 Wou'd hither come. But we some time must take,
 E'er we a Project of such moment make;
 Since that's laid by, for your Diversion then,
 We do invite the Brothers of the Pen;
 The Courtier, Lawyer, Soldier, Player too,
 Wit ne'er had more Encouragement than now;
 Tho' free, or Aliens to our Stage, we take 'em,
 Not kick 'em out, but native Subjects make 'em.
 The Ladies too are always welcome here,
 Let 'em in Writing or in Box appear.
 To that fair Sex we are oblig'd to day,
 Oh! then be kind to a poor Orphan-Play,
 Whose Parent while she liv'd oblig'd you all;
 You prais'd her living, and you mourn'd her Fall.
 Who cou'd, like her, our softer Passions move,
 The Life of Humour, and the Soul of Love?
 Wit's eldest Sister; thro-out every Line,
 You might perceive some female Graces shine.
 For poor Alstrea's Infant we implore,
 Let it then live, tho' she is now no more.*

Dramatis

Dramatis Personæ.

M E N.

Prince Frederick,
Sir Rowland Marteen,
George Marteen,
Mr. Welborn,
Sir Merlin Marteen,
Sir Morgan Blunder,
Mr. Twang,
Britton,

Mr. Verbruggen.
Mr. Johnson.
Mr. Powel.
Mr. Horden.
Mr. Pinkethman.
Mr. Bullock.
Mr. Smeaton.
Mr. Kent.

Constable and Watch.

W O M E N.

Mirtilla,
Olivia,
Teresia,
Lady Blunder,
Mrs. Manage,
Lady Youthly,

Mrs. Knight.
Mrs. Verbruggen.
Mrs. Temple.
Mrs. Powel.
Mrs. Willis.
Mrs. Harris.

ACT I. SCENE I.

A Chamber.

Enter George Marteen, in a rich Riding Habit, with his Valet Britton.

Geo. WERE you with Mrs. Manage, Britton?
Britt. Yes, Sir; and she cries as much for her wanting room for you in her House, as she would have done some forty Years ago for a Disappointment of her Lover. But she assures me, the Lodging she has taken for you, is the best in all *Lincolns-Inn-Fields*.

Geo. And did you charge her to send *Mirtilla's* Page to me?

Britt. I did, Sir; and he'll be with you instantly.

Geo. 'Tis well——Then shall I hear some News of my *Mirtilla*. *[Aside.*

Britton, haste thee, and get my Equipage in order; a handsome Coach, rich Liveries, and more Footmen: for 'tis Appearance only passes in the World.—And d'ye hear, take care none know me by any other Name than that of *Lejers*.

Britt. I shall, Sir. *[Exit.*

Geo. I came not from *Paris* into *England*, as my old Father thinks, to reform into a dull wretched Life in *Wales*. No, I'll rather trust my kind Mistress Fortune, that has still kept me like her Darling, than purchase a younger Brother's narrow Stipend, at the expence of my Pleasure and Happiness.

Enter Olivia in a Page's Habit. She runs and embraces George.

Oliv. My ever-charming Brother!

Geo. My best, my dear *Olivia*!

Oliv.

Oliv. The same lovely Man still! Thy Gallantry and Beauty's all thy own; *Paris* could add no Graces to thy Air; nor yet pervert it into Affectation.

Geo. Spare me, and tell me how *Mirtilla* fares.

Oliv. I think, Brother, I writ you word to *Paris*, of a Marriage concluded betwixt me and *Welborn*.

Geo. That Letter I receiv'd: but from the dear *Mirtilla*, not one soft word; not one tender Line has blest my Eyes, has eas'd my panting Heart this tedious three Months space; and thou with whom I left the weighty Charge of her dear Heart, to watch her lovely Eyes, to give me notice when my Rivals press'd, and when she waver'd in her Faith to me, even thou wert silent to me, cruel Sister.

Oliv. Thou wilt be like a Lover presently, and tire the Hearer with a Book of Words, of heavy Sighs, dying Languishments, and all that huddle of Nonsense; and not tell me how you like my Marriage.

Geo. *Welborn's* my Friend, and worthy of thy Heart.

Oliv. I never saw him yet; and to be sold unseen, and unsigh'd for, in the Flower of my Youth and Beauty, gives me a strange aversion to the Match.

Geo. Oh! you'll like him when you see him—But my *Mirtilla*.——

Oliv. Like him——no, no, I never shall——what, come a Stranger to my Husband's Bed? 'Tis Prostitution in the leudest manner, without the Satisfaction; the Pleasure of Variety, and the Bait of Profit, may make a lame excuse for Whores, who change their Cullies, and quit their nauseous Fools.——No, no, my Brother, when Parents grow arbitrary, 'tis time we look into our Rights and Privileges; therefore, my dear *George*, if e'er thou hope for Happiness in Love, assist my Disobedience.

Geo. In any worthy Choice be sure of me; but canst thou wish Happiness in Love, and not inform me something of *Mirtilla*?

Oliv. I'll tell you better News——our hopeful elder Brother, Sir *Merlin*, is like to be disinherited; for he is, Heaven be thanked.——

346 *The Younger Brother ;*

Geo. Marry'd to some Town-Jilt, the common fate of Coxcombs.

Oliv. Not so, my dear *George*, but sets up for a celebrated Rake-hell, as well as Gamester ; he cou'd not have found out a more dextrous way to have made thee Heir to four Thousand Pounds a Year.

Geo. What's that without *Mirtilla* ?

Oliv. Prithee no more of her——Love spoils a fine Gentleman : Gaming, Whoring and Fighting, may qualify a Man for Conversation ; but Love perverts all one's Thoughts, and makes us fit Company for none but one's self ; for even a Mistress can scarce dispense with a sighing, whining Lover's Company long, tho' all he says flatters her Pride.

Geo. Why dost thou trifle with me, when thou knowest the Violence of my Love ?

Oliv. I wish I could any way divert your Thoughts from her, I would not have your Joy depend on such a fickle Creature.

Geo. *Mirtilla* false ! What, my *Mirtilla* false !

Oliv. Even your *Mirtilla*'s false, and married to another.

Geo. Married ! *Mirtilla* married ! 'Tis impossible.

Oliv. Nay married to that bawling, drinking Fool, Sir *Morgan Blunder*.

Geo. Married, and married to Sir *Morgan Blunder* ! a Sot, an ill-bred senseless Fool ; almost too great a Fool to make a Country Justice ?

Oliv. No doubt, she had her Aims in't, he's a very convenient Husband, I'll assure you, and that suits her Temper : he has Estate and Folly enough, and she has Youth, and Wantonness enough to match 'em.

Geo. Her Choice gives me some Comfort, and some Hopes ; for I'll pursue her, but for Revenge, not Love.

Oliv. Forget her rather, for she's not worth Revenge, and that way 'twill be none ; prostitute in Soul as Body, she doats even on me in Breeches.

Geo. On thee, her Page ! doat on thee, a Youth ! she knew thee not as Woman.

Oliv.

Oliv. No, that Secret I have kept to do you Service.— At first she said she lov'd me for your sake, because you recommended me; and when I sung, or plaid upon my Flute, wou'd kiss my Cheek, and sigh, and often (when alone) wou'd send for me, and smile, and talk, and set my Hair in Curls, to make me saucy and familiar with her. One Day she said, *Endimion*, thy Name-sake was thus caress'd by *Cynthia*: A Goddess did not scorn the humble Swain, whom by her Love she equal'd to her Deity. She found that I had Sense to understand her, and paid her Advances back with equal Ardour.

Geo. Oh, Curse! where learnt she all this Wickedness?

[*Aside.*

Oliv. But she being oblig'd to go for *Flanders*, to see her Sister take the holy Habit, I feign'd a Sickness to be left behind, hoping that Absence might abate her Flame; yet she return'd more amorous, and fearing the Thefts of Love might wound her Honour, she thought a Husband would secure that Shame; and luckily my Aunt arriv'd from *Wales*, and brought *Sir Morgan* with her, who lodging where we did, at *Mrs. Manage's*, my Aunt (that doats on Quality in either Sex) made up this hasty Match, unknown to me, tho for my sake.

Geo. What will not faithless Woman do, when she is raging?

Oliv. And now having so well prepar'd the way, she grows impatient for an Opportunity; and thou art arriv'd, most happily to succour me.

Geo. No, for some days keep this Habit on, it may be useful to us; but I must see this faithless perjur'd Woman, which I must contrive with *Mrs. Manage*.

Oliv. Yet pray resolve to see my Father first; for now's the critical time to make thy Fortune: he came to Town last night, and lodges here at *Mrs. Manage's*, with my Aunt *Blunder*.

Geo. What, in the House with thee, and not know thee?

Oliv. No more than a Priest does Compassion; he thinks me at *Hackney*, making Wax Babies, where he intends to visit me within these three days.—But I forgot

got

got to tell you, our Brother, Sir *Merlin*, lodges in this House with you; and shou'd he know you——

Geo. 'Tis impossible—— I've not seen him, or my Father, these five Years. Absence, my Growth, and this unexpected Equipage, will not be penetrated by his Capacity.

Oliv. True, he'll never look for his Brother *George*, in the Gallantry and Person of Monsieur *Lejere*—— My good Father expects you home, like the prodigal Son, all torn and tatter'd, and as penitent too.

Geo. To plod on here, in a laborious Cheating, all my Youth and Vigour, in hopes of drunken Pleasures when I'm old; or else go with him into *Wales*, and there lead a thoughtless Life, hunt, and drink, and make love to none but Chamber-maids. No, my *Olivia*, I'll use the sprightly Runnings of my Life, and not hope distant Pleasures from its Dregs.

Oliv. For that, use your Discretion; now equip your self to your present Business; the more simply you are clad and look, the better. I'll home and expect you.

[*Exit.*

Geo. Do so, my good Sister; a little formal Hypocrisy may do, 'twill relish after Liberty; for a Pleasure is never so well tasted, as when it's season'd with some Opposition.

Enter Britton.

Britt. Sir, I've News to tell you, will surprize you; Prince *Frederick* is arriv'd.

Geo. Is't possible? I left him going for *Flanders*.

Britt. Passing by our Door, and seeing your Livery, he enquir'd for you; and finding you here, alighted just now. But see, Sir, he's here.

Enter Prince Frederick; they meet and embrace.

Geo. My Life's Preserver, welcome to my Arms, as Health to sick Men.

Fred. And thou to mine, as the kind Mistress to the longing Lover; my Soul's Delight, and Darling of the Fair.

Geo. Ah Prince! you touch my bleeding Wound.

Fred.

Fred. Ha *Lejere!* leave to unhappy Lovers, those Sighs, those folded Arms, and down-cast Eyes.

Geo. Then they are fit for me: my Mistress, Sir, that Treasure of my Life, for whom you've heard me sigh, is perjur'd, false, and married to another. Yet what is worse, I find my Prince, my Friend, here in my native Country, and am not able to pay him what his Greatness merits.

Fred. You pain me when you compliment my Friendship. [Embracing.]

Geo. Perhaps you will not think me worth this Honour, when you shall hear my Story.

Prince. Thou canst say nothing I can value less.

Geo. Perhaps too my way of Living has deceiv'd you, being still receiv'd by Princes, as Companions in all their Riots, Loves, and Divertisements; where ev'n you did me the Honour to esteem, and call me Friend.

Prince. Whate'er thou art, I'm sure thy Mind's illustrious.

Geo. My Family, I must confess, is honourable; but, Sir, my Father was the younger House, of which my unhappy self was destin'd to be last: I'm a *Cadet*, that Out-cast of my Family, and born to that Curse of our old *English* Custom. Whereas in other Countries, younger Brothers are train'd up to the Exercise of Arms, where Honour and Renown attend the Brave; we basely bind our youngest out to Slavery, to lazy Trades, idly confin'd to Shops or Merchants Books, debasing of the Spirit to the mean Cunning, how to cheat and chaffer.

Prince. A Custom insupportable! ———

Geo. To this, to this low wretchedness of Life, your Servant, Sir—— was destin'd by his Parents, and am yet this bound indentur'd Slave.

Prince. Thou hast no cause to quarrel with thy Stars, since Virtue is most valu'd when oppress'd—Are all your Merchants Apprentices thus gay?

Geo. Not all——but, Sir, I could not bow my Mind to this so necessary Drudgery; and yet however, I assum'd my native Temper, when out o'th' Trading City; in it, I forc'd my Nature to a dull slovenly Gravity, which
well

well enough deceiv'd the busy Block-heads: my Clothes and Equipage I lodg'd at this End of the Town, where I still pass'd for something better than I was; when'er I pleas'd to change the Trader for the Gentleman.

Prince. And liv'd thus undiscover'd —

Geo. With Ease, still lov'd and courted by the Great, ever play'd high with those durst venture most; and durst make Love where'er my Fancy lik'd: but sometimes running out my Master's Cash, (which was supply'd still by my Father) they sent me, to reform my expensive Life, a Factor, into *France*—still I essay'd to be a plodding Thriver, but found my Parts not form'd for dirty Business.

Prince. There's not a Thought, an Action of thy Soul, that does not tend to something far more glorious.

Geo. If yet you think me worthy of your Favour, command that Life you have so oft preserv'd.

Prince. No more;—Thou hast increas'd my Value for thee.—Oh! take my Heart, and see how't has been us'd by a fair Charmer, since I saw thee last—That sullen day we parted, you for *England*, you may remember I design'd for *Flanders*.

Geo. I do with Melancholy, Sir, remember it.

Prince. Arriv'd at *Ghent*, I went to see an *English* Nun initiated, where I beheld the pretty Innocent, deliver'd up a Victim to foolish Chastity; but among the Relations, then attending the Sacrifice, was a fair Sister of the young Votress, but so surpassing all I'd seen before, that I neglecting the dull holy Business, paid my Devotion to that kneeling Saint.

Geo. That was the nearest way to Heaven, my Lord.

Prince. Her Face, that had a thousand Charms of Youth, was heighten'd with an Air of Languishment; a lovely Sorrow dwelt upon her Eyes, that taught my new-born-Passion Awe and Reverence.

Geo. This Description of her fires me.— [*Aside.*

Prince. Her dimpl'd Mouth, her Neck, her Hand, her Hair, a Majesty and Grace in every Motion, compleated my Undoing; I rav'd, I burnt, I languish'd with Desire, the holy Place cou'd scarce contain my Madness; with
Pain,

Pain, with Torture, I restrain'd my Passion when she retir'd, led sadly from the Altar. I, mixing with the Croud, enquir'd her Name and Country; her Servant told me; that she was of Quality, and liv'd in *England*, nay, in this very Town: this gave me Anguish not to be conceiv'd, till I resolv'd to follow her, which is the cause you find me here so soon. Thy Aid, thy Aid, *Lejere*, or I am lost.

Geo. I wish to live no longer than to serve your Highness: if she be, Sir, a Maid of Quality, I shall soon find her out, and then you'll easily conquer. You've all the Youth, and Beauty, that can charm; and what gains most upon a Woman's Heart, you've a powerful Title, Sir, a sort of Philter, that ne'er fails to win. But you've not told me yet the Lady's Name.

Prince. I had forgot that; — 'Tis in these Tablets:
[Gives him the Tablets.]

I'm now in haste, going to receive some Bills: I lodge at *Welborn's*, who came over with me, being sent for to be marry'd.

Geo. I know the House, 'tis in *Southampton-Square*: I'll wait upon your Highness. — [Exit Prince.]
Let me see — Daughter to a deceas'd Lord; a Maid, and no Dowry, but Beauty; living in *Lincolns-Inn-Fields*.

[Opening the Tablets, reads.]
—Ha! — her Name *Mirtilla!* *Mirtilla!* [Pauses.]

Prince, thou hast paid thy self for all the Favours done me.
Mirtilla! — [Pauses.]

Why yes, *Mirtilla!* He takes but what she has given away already. —

Oh! damn her, she has broke her Faith, her Vows, and is no longer mine — And thou'rt my Friend.

[Pauses again.]
Mirtilla's but my Mistress, and has taken all the Repose of my poor Life away — Yes, let him take her, I'll resign her to him; and therefore shut my Eyes against her Charms: fix her Inconstancy about my Heart, and scorn whatever she can give me. [Exit.]

SCENE II. *A Chamber.*

*Enter Sir Morgan Blunder in a Night-Gown and Cap ;
to him Manage with a Caudle.*

Man. Your Lady Mother has sent you a Caudle, Sir.

Sir Mor. Good Mrs. *Manage*, remember my kind Love to my Lady Mother, and tell her, I thank her for her Poffet, but never eat in a Morning after hard drinking over night.

Man. Ah, Sir, but now you're marry'd to a fine Lady, you ought to make much of your self.

Sir Mor. Good Madam, as little of your Matrimony as of your Caudle ; my Stomach is plaguy squeamish, and a hair of the old Dog's worth both of 'em. Oh ! sick ! sick !

*Enter Sir Merlin, singing a Song in praise of a Rake-
hell's Life.*

A S O N G.

The Town-Rake ; written by Mr. Mottewæ.

I.

What Life can compare with the jolly Town-Rake's,
When in Youth his full Swing of all Pleasure
he takes ?

*At Noon he gets up, for a Whet, and to dine,
And wings the dull Hours with Mirth, Musick and Wine ;
Then jogs to the Play-house, and chats with the Masks,
And thence to the Rose, where he takes his three Flasks.
There, great as a Cæsar, he revels, when drunk,
And scours all he meets, as he reels to his Punk ;
Then finds the dear Girl in his Arms when he wakes.
What Life can compare with the Jolly Town-Rake's ?*

II.

*He, like the Great Turk, has his Favorite She ;
But the Town's his Seraglio, and still he lives free.*

Some

Sometimes she's a Lady; but as he must range,
Black-Betty, or Oyster-Doll, serves for a Change.
As he varies his Sports, his whole Life is a Feast;
He thinks him that's soberest the most like a Beast.
At Houses of Pleasure breaks Windows and Doors;
Kicks Bullies and Cullies, then lies with their Whores.
Rare work for the Surgeon, and Midwife he makes.
What Life can compare with the Folly Town-Rake's?

III.

Thus in Covent-Garden he makes his Campaign,
And no Coffee-house haunts, but to settle his Brain.
He laughs at dry Morals, and never does think,
Unless 'tis to get the best Wenches and Drink.
He dwells in a Tavern, and lies ev'ry where,
And improving his hours, lives an Age in a Year:
For as Life is uncertain, he loves to make haste;
And thus he lives longest, because he lives fast:
Then a Leap in the dark to the Devil he takes.
What Death can compare with the Folly Town-Rake's?

Sir Mer. Why, how now, Sir Morgan, I see you'll
make a Husband of the right Town-Mode: What, mar-
ried but four Days, and at your separate Apartment
already?

Sir Morg. A Plague of your what d'ye call ums.

Sir Mer. Rakehells you would say, Cousin, an honour-
able Appellation for Men of Bravery.

Sir Morg. Ay, ay, your Rakehells—I was never so
muddled with Treason, Tierce Claret, Oaths and Dice, all
the Days of my Life—Was I in case to do Family duty?
S'life you drank down all my Love, all my Prudence too;
Gad forgive me for it.

Sir Mer. Why, how the Devil cam'st thou to bear thy
Liquor so ill? Ods my Life, you drunk like a French-man
new come to the University.

Sir Mor. Pox, I can bear their drinking as well as any
Man; but your London way of Bousing and Politics does
not agree with my Constitution. Look ye, Cousin, sit
quietly

quietly to't, and I'll stand my ground ; but to have screaming Whores, noisy Bullies, rattling Dice, swearing and cursing Gamesters, Couz. turns the Head of a Country-Drinker, more than the Wine.

Sir Merl. Oh ! Use, Cousin, will make an able Man.

Sir Mor. Use, Cousin ! Use me no Uses ; for if ever you catch me at your damn'd Clubs again, I'll give you my Mother for a Maid : Why you talk downright Treason.

Sir Merl. Treason, ay————

Sir Morg. Ah Cousin, why we talk'd enough to—— hang us all.

Sir Merl. My honest Country-Couz. when wilt thou understand the *Guelphs*, and the *Gibelins* ; and learn to talk Treason o' this side the Law ? bilk a Whore without remorse ; break Windows, and not pay for 'em ; drink your Bottle without asking Questions ; kill your Man without letting him draw ; play away your Money without fear of your Spouse, and stop her Mouth by undermining her Nose ?

Sir Morg. Come, come, look you Cousin, one word of Advice now I'm sober ; what the Devil should provoke thee and me to put ourselves on our twelve Godfathers for a Frolick ? We who have Estates. I shou'd be loth to leave the World with a scurvy Song, composed by the Poet *Sternhold*.

Enter at the Door Sir Rowland, hearkning.

Or why, d'ye see, shou'd I expose my Noddle to the Billmen in Flannel, and lie in the *Roundhouse*, when I may go to bed in a whole skin with my Lady Wife ?

Sir Mer. Gad, *Sir Morgan*, thou hast sometimes pretty smart satirical Touches with thee ; use but *Will's* Coffee-house a little, and with thy Estate, and that Talent, thou mayst set up for a Wit.

Sir Mor. Mercy upon me, *Sir Merlin*, thou art stark mad : What, I a Wit ! I had rather be one of your Rake-hells : for, look ye, a Man may swear and stare, or so ; break Windows, and Drawers Heads, or so ; unrig a needy Whore, and yet keep one's Estate : but shou'd I

turn

turn Wit, 'twere impossible ; for a Wit with an Estate, is like a Prisoner among the Cannibals.

Sir *Merl.* How so, good Sir *Morgan* ?

Sir *Morg.* Why, the needy Rogues only feed him with Praise, to fatten him for their Palates, and then devour him,

Sir *Merl.* I applaud your choice, Cousin ; for what Man of Bravery wou'd not prefer a Rake to a Wit ? The one enjoys the Pleasures, the other can only rail at ; and that not out of Conscience, but Impotence : for alas ! a Wit has no quarrel to Vice in Perfection, but what the Fox had to the Grapes ; he can't play away his hundred Pound at sight ; his Third Day won't afford it ; and therefore he rails at Gamesters : Whores shun him, as much as Noblemen, and for the same cause, Money ; those care not to sell their Carcases for a Sonnet, nor these to scatter their Guineas, to be told an old Tale of a Tub, they were so well acquainted with before.

Sir *Mor.* What's that, Sir *Merlin* ?

Sir *Merl.* Why, their Praise ; — for the Poet's Flattery seldom reaches the Patron's Vanity ; and what's too strong season'd for the rest of the World, is too weak for their Palates.

Sir *Morg.* Why, look ye, Cousin, you're a shreud Fellow : Whence learn'd you this Satire ? for I'm sure 'tis none of thy own ; for I shou'd as soon suspect thee guilty of good Nature, as Wit.

Sir *Merl.* I scorn it ; and therefore I confess I stole the Observation from a Poet ; but the Devil pick his Bones for diverting me from the noble Theme of Rakehells.

Sir *Morg.* Noble Theme, Sir *Merlin* ! look ye, d'ye see : Don't mistake me, I think 'tis a very scurvy one ; and I wou'd not have your Father know that you set up for such a Reprobate ; for Sir *Rowland* would certainly disinherit thee.

Sir *Merl.* O keep your musty Morals to your self, good Country Couz ; they'll do you service to your *Welch* Criminals, for stealing an Hen, or breaking up a *Wenches* Inclosure, or so, Sir *Morgan* ; but for me, I despise 'em : I have not been admitted into the Family of the *Rakehellorisms*

bellorum for this, Sir: Let my Father drink old *Adam*, read the *Pilgrim's Progress*, *The Country Justice's Calling*, or for a Regale, drink the dull Manufacture of Malt and Water; I defy him; he can't cut off the Entail of what is settled on me: and for the rest, I'll trust Dame *Fortune*; and pray to the Three Fatal Sisters to cut his rotten Thred in two, before he thinks of any such Wick- edness.

Enter Sir Rowland in a great Rage.

Sir Rowl. Will you so, Sir? Why how now, Sirrah! get you out of my House, Rogue; get out of my Doors, Rascal. [Beats him.]

Enter Lady Blunder.

L. Blund. Upon my Honour now, Brother, what's the matter? Whence this ungenerous Disturbance?

Sir Rowl. What's the matter! the Disturbance! Why, Sister, this Rogue here——this unintelligible graceless Rascal here, will needs set up for a Rakehell, when there's scarce such a thing in the Nation, above an Ale-draper's Son; and chuses to be aukardly out of fashion, merely for the sake of Tricking and Poverty; and keeps company with the senseless, profane, lazy, idle, noisy, groveling Rascals, purely for the sake of spending his Estate like a notorious Blockhead: But I'll take care he shall not have what I can dispose of——You'll be a Rake-hell, will you?

L. Blun. How Cousin! Sure you'll not be such a filthy beastly thing, will you?

Sir Merl. Lord, Aunt, I only go to the Club sometimes, to improve my self in the Art of Living, and the Accomplishments of a fine Gentleman.

Sir Rowl. A fine Gentleman, Sot, a fine Coxcomb!

[Beats him.]

Sir Morg. Hold, hold, good Uncle; my Cousin has been only drawn in, a little or so, d'ye see, being Heir to a good Estate; and that's what his Club wants, to pay off old Tavern-Scores, and buy Utensils for Whores in Fashion.

Sir Rowl. My Estate sold to pay Tavern-Scores, and keep nasty Whores!

L. Blun.

L. Blun. Whores! ay filthy Creatures; do they deal in Whores? Pray Cousin what's a Rake-hell?

Sir Rowl. A Rake-hell is a Man that defies Law and good Manners, nay, and good Sense too; hates both Morality and Religion, and that not for any Reason (for he never thinks) but merely because he don't understand 'em: He's the Whore's Protection and Punishment, the Baud's Tool, the Sharper's Bubble, the Vintner's Property, the Drawer's Terror, the Glasier's Benefactor; in short, a roaring, thoughtless, heedless, ridiculous, universal Coxcomb.

Sir Merl. O Lord, Aunt, no more like him than an Attorney's like an honest Man. Why a Rake-hell is—

Sir Rowl. What, Sirrah! what, you Rebel?

[Strikes him.]

L. Blun. Nay, good Brother, permit my Nephew to tell us his Notion.

Sir Merl. Why, Aunt, I say a Rake-hell is your only Man of Bravery; he slights all the Force of Fortune, and sticks at no Hazard——plays away his hundred Pounds at sight, pays a Lady's Bill at sight, drinks his Bottle without equivocation, and fights his Man without any Provocation.

Sir Rowl. Nay then, Mr. Rogue, I'll be sworn thou art none: Come, Sir, will you fight, Sir? will you fight, Sir? Ha!

[Draws his Sword.]

Sir Merl. Fight, Sir! fight, Sir!

Sir Rowl. Yes, fight, Sir: Come, spare your Prayers to the three Fatal Sisters, and cut my Thred thy self, thou graceless reprobate Rascal——Come, come on, you Man of Bravery.

[Runs at Sir Merlin, who retires before him: Sir Morgan holds Sir Rowland.]

Sir Merl. Oh, good Sir, hold: I recant, Sir, I recant.

Sir Rowl. [Putting up.] Well, I'm satisfy'd thou'll make no good Rake-hell in this Point, whatever you will in the others. And since Nature has made thee a Coward, Inclination a Coxcomb, I'll take care to make thee a Beggar; and so thou shalt be a Rake-hell but in Will. I'll disinherit thee, I will, Villain.

L. Blun. What, disinherit your eldest Son, Brother?

Sir

358 *The Younger Brother ;*

Sir Merl. Ay, Aunt, his very Heir apparent ? Aunt, to show you how the old Gentleman has misrepresented us, give me leave to present you a Dance I provided to entertain your Son with, in which is represented all the Beauties of our Lives.

L. Blun. Oh! by all means, Cousin, by all means.

Sir Merl. What hoa ? Roger, bring in the Dancers.

Here the Dance, representing Rake-hells, Constable, Watch, &c.

Enter Philip.

Phil. Sir, who do's your Worship think is arriv'd ?

Sir Row. My Son *George*, I hope, come in the Nick.

Phil. Even so, Sir, from *Paris*.—— [Exit.

Sir Rowl. The Prodigal return'd ! then kill the fatted Calf.

Enter George dress'd like a Prentice.

—My own dear Boy, thou art welcome to my Arms, as e'er thy Mother was ; for whose dear sake, I pardon all thy Follies. [Kneels.

Sir Merl. Ay, Sir, I had a Mother too, or I'm bely'd—— [Weeping.

Pox take him that he should come just in the nick, as the old Fellow says—— [Aside.

Sir Row. Yes, you had a Mother, whom in my Youth I was compel'd to marry ; and Gad, I think, I got thee with as ill a Will ; but *George* and my *Olivia* in heat of Love, when my desire was new. But harkye Boy *George*, you have cost me a damn'd deal of Money, Sirrah ; but you shall marry, and redeem all, *George*.

Geo. What you please, Sir ; to study Virtue, Duty and Allegiance, shall be my future Business.

Sir Rowl. Well said, *George*, here's a Boy now.

Sir Merl. Virtue and Allegiance ! Lord, Lord, how came so sneaking a fellow to spend five thousand Pounds of his Master's Cash ?

Sir Rowl. She's rich, *George*, but something homely.

Geo. She'll not be proud then, Sir.

Sir

Sir Row. Not much of her Beauty—she's of a good staid Age too, about some fourscore.

Geo. Better still, Sir, I shall not fear Cuckoldom.

Sir Row. For that I cannot answer; but she has two thousand a year. I mean to settle my Family, and then—marry my self, *George*.

L. *Blun*. What to this old Lady's Grand-daughter? Methinks she's more fit for your Son, Sir Rowland, and the old Lady for you.

Sir Row. No, no, the young Rogues can help themselves with Mistresses; but 'tis well if an old Man can keep his Wife to himself—I've invited 'em to Dinner to day, and see, they are come.

Enter Lady Youthly, led by her Chaplain, and leaning on a Staff, and Teresia.

L. *Youth*. Where's Sir Rowland Marteen? Oh, your Servant, Sir, I am come. [*Runs against George.*]

Chap. Your Ladyship is mistaken, this is not Sir Rowland, but a handsome proper young Man.

L. *Youth*. A young Man! I cry your mercy heartily—Young Man, I alighted in the Sun, and am almost blind.

Geo. With wondrous old Age. [*Aside.*]

L. *Youth*. Good lack, Sir Rowland, that I shou'd mistake a young Man so!

Sir Row. Ay, Madam, and such a young Man too.

L. *Youth*. Ay, ay, I see him now.

[*Puss on her Spectacles.*]

Geo. S'death, what a Sepulcher is here, to bury a Husband in? How came she to escape the Flood? for sure she was not born since. [*Aside.*]

Sir Row. This is the lusty Lad, my Son *George*, I told your Ladyship of.

L. *Youth*. Cot so, cot so, is it so, Sir? I ask your Pardon, Sir. Mr. *Twang*, take a survey of him, and give me your Opinion of his Person, and his Parts.

Twang. Truly, Madam, the young Man is of a comely Personage and Lineaments.

L. *Youth*. Of what, Sir?—Lord I have such a Cold. [*Coughs.*]

Geo.

Geo. Which she got when the *Picks* went naked.

L. Blun. Madam, you have a Power over *Sir Rowland*; pray intreat him to take his Son, *Sir Merlin*, into Grace again. [To *Teresia*.

Tere. That, Sir, you must grant me; pray let me know the Quarrel. [Sir *Rowland* seems to tell.

Geo. By Heaven she's fair, as the first ruddy Streaks of opening Day. [Looking on *Teresia*.

Young as the budding Rose, soft as a *Cupid*, but never felt his Dart, she is so full of Life and Gaiety. Pray, Madam, who is that Lady? [To *Lady Blun*.

L. Blun. The Grandchild of your Mistress, and your Mother that must be.

Geo. Then I shall cuckold my Father, that's certain.

[*Aside*.

Sir Row. For your sake, Madam, once again I re-establish him in my Family; but the first Fault cashier's him—Come let's in—Here, my Lady *Youthly*, take *George* by the hand; but have a care of the young Rogue, if he comes once to touch so brisk a Widow, he sets her Heart on fire.

Geo. Which will burn like a snuff of a Candle; no body will be able to endure it. [*Aside*.

—So Fortune, I see, provides for me:
On this hand Wealth, on that young Pleasures lie;
He ne'er wants these, who has that kind Supply.

ACT II. SCENE I.

Enter Sir Rowland, Teresia, and Lady Youthly, &c.

L. Youth. WELL, *Sir Rowland*, if I should be inclin'd to cast away my self on your Son *George*, what wou'd you settle?

Sir Row. Settle! not a Souse, Madam; he carries the best younger Brother's Fortune in *Christendom* about him.

L. Youth.

L. Youth. Why, the young Man's deserving, I confess. But he's your Son, Sir Rowland, and something ought to be settled upon the Heirs of our Bodies, lawfully begotten.

Sir Row. All *Hercules* his Labours were a Jig to his that shall beget 'em. [Aside.]
If you like him upon these terms, to make him Master of your Fortune—

L. Youth. For that, let him trust to me, and his own deservings.

Sir Row. No trusting in these fickle Times, Madam— Why, I'll let the young sturdy Rogue out to hire; he'll make a pretty Livelihood at Journey-Work; and shall a Master-Workman, a Husband, deserve nothing?

L. Youth. Ay, these Husbands that know their own Strength, as they say, set so high a Value on their conjugal Virtues.—And if he be disloyal, again o't'other side he gives a Wife so ill an Example—for we are all liable to Temptations.

Sir Row. Well said; if thou beest so, it must be the old Tempter himself.

Look ye, Madam, I'll propose a fair Swap; if you'll consent that I shall marry *Teresia*, I'll consent that you shall marry *George*. [Aside.]

L. Youth. How, my Grand-daughter? Why, I design'd her for your eldest Son, Sir *Merlin*; and she has a good Fortune of five hundred a year that I cannot hinder her of; and is too young for you.

Sir Row. So is *George* for your Ladyship; and as for his Fortune, 'tis more than likely I shall make him my eldest Son.

L. Youth. Say you so, Sir? well, I'll consider, and take Advice of my Friends.

Sir Row. Consider! alas, Madam, my House will be besieged by all the Widows in Town; I shall get more by shewing him, than the *Rhinoceros*. Gad, I'll sell the young Rogue by Inch of Candle, before he's debauch'd and spoil'd in this leud Town.

L. Youth. Well, suppose—

Sir Row. Nothing under *Teresia*—Gad, I think some old Dog-Star reigns to Day, that so many old Heats are

362 *The Younger Brother ;*

burning in their Sockets—I'm in love with this young Tittymouse here, most damnably—Well, what say you, Widow? Speak now, or you know the Proverb.

L. Youth. Well, Sir Rowland, you are too hard for me. [*Ex. all but Terefia.*

Enter Olivia, runs to her and embraces her.

Tere. 'Tis as you said, *Olivia*, I am destin'd to your Father.

Oliv. What, the Sentence is past then?

Tere. Ay, but the Devil is in us, if we stay till Execution Day: Why this is worse than being mew'd up at *Hackney-School*—my Fortune's my own, without my Grandmother, and with that Stock I'll set up for my self, and see what Traffick this wide World affords a young beginner.

Oliv. That's well resolv'd; I am of the same mind, rather than marry Mr. *Wellborn*, whom I never saw.—But prithee let's see what we have in Stock, besides ready Money—What Toys and Knick-nacks to invite.

Tere. Faith my Inventory is but small—Let me see—First, one pretty well made Machine, call'd a Body, of a very good Motion, fit for several uses—one pretty conceited Head-Piece, that will fit any body's Coxcomb, —when 'tis grave and dull, 'twill fit an Alderman; when politick and busy, a Statesman; turn it to Intrigue, 'twill fit a City Wife; and to Invention, it will set up an Evidence.

Oliv. Very well!

Tere. Item, One Tongue that will prattle Love, if you put the Heart in time (for they are Commodities I resolve shall go together) I have Youth enough to please a Lover, and Wit enough to please my self.

Oliv. Most excellent Trifles all! As for my out-side, I leave to the Discretion of the Chafferer; but I have a rare Device, call'd an Invention, that can do many Feats; a Courage that wou'd stock a Coward; and a pretty Imple-ment, call'd a Heart, that will strike Fire with any convenient force: I have eight thousand Pounds to let out on any able Security, but not a Groat, unless I like the Man.

Tere.

Tere. Thus furnish'd, we shall ruin all the *Jews*, and undo the *India Houses*—— But where shall we show? where meet with the *Love-Merchants*?

Oliv. What think you of the Gallery at the Play in Masks?

Tere. Shu, a State-Trick, first taken up by Women of Quality, and now run into Ridicule, by all the little common Devils of the Town; and is only a Trap for a Termer, a small new rais'd Officer, or a City Cully, where they baul out their eighteen Pence in Baudy, and filthy Nonsense, to the disturbance of the whole House, and the King's Peace: the Men of Quality have forsaken it.

Oliv. What think you of the Mall?

Tere. As too publick to end an Intrigue; our Affairs require a Conquest as sudden as that of *Cæsar*, who came, saw and overcame.

Oliv. 'Tis true, besides there's so many Cruisers, we shall never board a Prize. What think you of the Church?

Tere. An hypocritical Shift; of all Masks I hate that of Religion; and it shou'd be the last place I'd wish to meet a Lover in, unless to marry him.

Oliv. And Faith that's the last thing a Lover shou'd do, but we are compell'd to haste, 'tis our last Refuge: if we cou'd but see and like our Men, the business were soon dispatch.——Let me see—Faith e'en put on Breeches too, and thus disguis'd seek our Fortune——I am within these three days to be fetch'd from *Hackney School*, where my Father believes me still to be, and thou in that time to be marry'd to the old Gentleman; Faith resolve—and let's in and dress thee—away, here's my Lady——

[*They run out.*]

S C E N E II.

*Enter Mirtilla and Mrs. Manage.**Mirt.* Ah, let me have that Song again.

A Song by Mr. Gildon.

I.

NO, Delia, no: *What Man can range
From such Seraphic Pleasure?*
*'Tis want of Charms that make us change,
To grasp the Fury, Treasure.*
*What Man of Sense wou'd quit a certain Bliss,
For Hopes and empty Possibilities?*

II.

*Vain Fools! that sure Possessions spend,
In hopes of Chymic Treasure,
But for their fancy'd Riches find
Both want of Gold and Pleasure.*
*Rich in my Delia, I can wish no more;
The Wand'rer, like the Chymist, must be poor.*

Man. Not see him, Madam—I protest he's handsomer, and handsomer, *Paris* has given him such an Air:—Lord, he's all over Monsieur—Not see him, Madam—Why? I hope you do not, like the foolish sort of Wives, design a strict Obedience to your Husband.

Mir. Away, a Husband!—when Absence, that sure Remedy of Love, had heal'd the bleeding Wound *Lejere* had made, by Heaven I thought I ne'er shou'd love again—but since *Endymion* has inspir'd my Soul, and for that Youth I burn, I pine, I languish.

Enter

Enter George richly drest, stands at a distance gazing on Mirilla.

Man. See, Madam, there's an Object may put out that Flame, and may revive the old one.

Mir. Shame and Confusion.—Lejere.

[Turns and walks away.

Geo. Yonder she is, that Mien and Shape I know, tho the false Face be turn'd with shame away.

[Offers to advance, and stops.

——'Sdeath, —— I tremble! yet came well fortify'd with Pride and Anger. I see thou'st in thy Eyes a little Modesty,

[Goes to her nearer.

That wou'd conceal the Treasons of thy Heart.

Mir. Perhaps it is their Scorn that you mistake.

Geo. It may be so; she that sets up for Jiking, shou'd go on; 'Twere mean to find remorse, so young, and soon: Oh, this gay Town has gloriously improv'd you amongst the rest; that taught you Perjury.

Mir. Alas! when was it sworn?

Geo. In the blest Age of Love, When every Power look'd down, and heard thy Vows.

Mir. I was a Lover then; shou'd Heaven concern it self with Lovers Perjuries, 'twould find no leisure to preserve the Universe.

Geo. And was the Woman so strong in thee, thou couldst not wait a little? Were you so raving mad for Fool and Husband, you must take up with the next ready Coxcomb. Death, and the Devil, a dull clumsy Boor! —— What was it charm'd you? The beastly quantity of Man about him.

Mir. Faith a much better thing, five thousand Pounds a Year, his Coach and Six, it shews well in the Park.

Geo. Did I want Coach, or Equipage, and Shew?

Mir. But still there wanted Fool, and Fortune to't; He does not play at the Groom-Porter's for it; nor do the Drudgery of some worn-out Lady.

Geo. If I did this, thou hadst the spoils of all my Nation's Conquests, while all the whole World was wondering whence it came; for Heav'n had left thee [nothing

366 *The Younger Brother;*

but thy Beauty, that dear Reward of my industrious Love.

Mir. I do confess——

Geo. Till time had made me certain of a Fortune, which now was hastening on.——

And is that store of Love and wondrous Joys I had been hoarding up so many tender Hours, all lavish'd on a Brute, who never lusted 'bove my Lady's Woman? for Love he understands no more than Sense.

Mir. Prithee reproach me on —— [Sighs.

Geo. 'Sdeath, I cou'd rave! Is this soft tender Bosom to be prest by such a Load of Fool? Damnation on thee —Where got'st thou this coarse Appetite? Take back the Powers, those Charms she's sworn adorn'd me, since a dull, fat-fac'd, noisy, taudry Blockhead, can serve her turn as well. [Offers to go.

Mir. You shall not go away with that Opinion of me.——

Geo. Oh, that false Tongue can now no more deceive——Art thou not marry'd? Tell me that, false Charmer.

Mir. Yes.—— [Holding him.

Geo. Curse on that word: wou'd thou hadst never learnt it—it gave thy Heart, and my Repose away.

Mir. Dost think I marry'd with that dull design? Canst thou believe I gave my Heart away, because I gave my Hand? ——Fond Ceremony that——A necessary trick, devis'd by wary Age, to traffick 'twixt a Portion and a Jointure; him whom I lov'd, is marry'd to my Soul.

Geo. Art thou then mine? And wilt thou make Atone-ment, by such a charming way?——Come to my clasping Arms.

Enter Lady Blunder at the Door. Sees 'em, and offers to go out again.

L. Blun. Oh, Heavens! How rude am I?——Cry Mercy, Madam, I protest I thought you'd been alone.

Geo. 'Sdeath! my Aunt Blunder! [Aside.

Mir. Only this Gentleman, Madam——

L. Blun. Sir, I beg your Pardon——and am really sorry——

Geo.

Geo. That you find me with your Daughter, Madam.

L. Blun. I hope you take me to be better bred, Sir: Nor had I interrupted you, but for an Accident that has happen'd to *Sir Morgan*, coming out of the City in a beastly Hackney-Coach, he was turn'd over in *Cheap-side*, and striking the filthy Coach-man, the nasty Mob came out, and had almost kill'd him, but for a young Gentleman, a Stranger, that came to his Rescue, and whom he has brought to kiss your Ladyship's Hands—But I'll instruct him in his Duty, he shall wait till your Ladyship is more at leisure—alas! he's already on the Stairs.

[*Exit.*

Mir. Let him wait there—*Lejere*, 'tis necessary you depart, sure of my Heart, you cannot fear the rest; the Night is hastening on; trust me but some few Hours, and then, *Lejere*, I'll pay you back with Interest.

Geo. All Blessings light on thee.

But will your Lady Mother make no Discovery of my being here?

Mir. She'd sooner pimp for me, and believe it a part of good Breeding:—away, I hear 'em coming.

[*She puts him out at a back-Door.*

Enter Lady Blunder peeping.

L. Blun. He's gone—*Sir Morgan*, you may approach.

Enter Sir Morgan, pulling in the Prince, Sir Merlin, and a Page to the Prince.

Sir Mor. Nay, as Gat shall save me, Sir, you shall see my Lady, or so, d'ye see, and receive the Thanks of the House.

Prince. As Gat shall save me, Sir, I am sorry for it—another time, Sir: I have earnest Business. Now, I am sure nothing worth seeing can belong to this litter of Fools.

L. Blun. My Daughter is a Person of Quality, I assure you, Sir.

Prince. I doubt it not Madam—if she be of the same Piece—Send me a fair Deliverance.

368 *The Younger Brother ;*

[*Sir Morgan leads him to Mirtilla, he starts.*

—Ha ! What bright Vision's that ?

Mir. Heav'n ! 'Tis the lovely Prince I saw in *Flanders.*

[*Aside.*

Sir Merl. Look how he stares—why, what the Devil ails he ?

Sir Morg. To her, Sir, or so d'ye see, what a Pox are you afraid of her ?

L. Blun. He's in Admiration of her Beauty, Child.

Prince. By Heav'n the very Woman I adore !

[*Aside.*

Sir Morg. How d'ye, see Sir, how do ye, ha, ha, ha ?

Prince. I cannot be mistaken ; for Heav'n made nothing but young Angels like her !

Sir Morg. Look ye Page, is your Master in his right Wits ?

Sir Merl. Sure he's in love, and Love's a devilish thing.

Sir Morg. Sa, ho, ho, ho, where are you Sir, where are you ?

Prince. In Heav'n ! [Puts him away.

Oh ! do not rouse me from this charming Slumber, lest I shou'd wake, and find it but a Dream.

Sir Merl. A plaguy dull Fellow this, that can sleep in so good Company as we are.

Sir Morg. Dream—A Fiddle-stick ; to her, Man, to her, and kifs her soundly, or so, d'ye see.

Sir Merl. Ay, ay ; kifs her, Sir, kifs her—ha, ha, ha, he's very simple.

Prince. Kifs her,—— there's universal Ruin in her Lips.

Mir. I never knew 'em guilty of such Mischiefs.

Sir Morg. No, I'll be sworn, I have kift 'em twenty times, and they never did me harm.

Prince. Thou kifs those Lips ? impossible, and false ; they ne'er were prest but by soft *Southern Winds.*

Sir Morg. *Southern Winds*—ha, ha, lookye d' ye see Boy, thy Master's mad, or so, d'ye see.—why, what a Pox, d'ye think I never kifs my Wife, or so d'ye see.

Prince.

Prince. Thy Wife!——

Mir. He will betray his Passion to these Fools: Alas, he's mad——and will undo my Hopes. [Aside.

Prince. Thou mayst as well claim Kindred to the Gods; she's mine, a Kingdom shall not buy her from me.

Sir Morg. Hay day, my Wife yours! look ye, as d'ye see, what is it *Midsummer-moon* with you, Sir, or so, d'ye see?

Mir. In pity give him way, he's madder than a Storm.

Prince. Thou know'st thou art, and thy dear Eyes confess it——a numerous Train attended our Nuptials, witness the Priest, witness the sacred Altar where we kneel'd——when the blest silent Ceremony was perform'd.

Mir. Alas! he's mad, past all recovery mad.

Sir Merl. Mad, say, poor Soul——Friend, how long has your Master been thus intoxicated?

Page. He's mad indeed to make this Discovery.

[Aside.
Alas, Sir, he's thus as often as he sees a beautiful Lady, since he lost a Mistress, who dy'd in *Flanders* to whom he was contracted.

Sir Merl. Good lack——ay, ay, he's distracted, it seems.

Page. See how he kneels to her; stand off, and do but mind him.

Mir. Rise, Sir,——you'l ruin me——dissemble if you love——or you can ne'er be happy.

[In a low Voice, and raising him.
Prince. My Transport is too high for a Disguise——give me some hope, promise me some Relief, or at your Feet I'll pierce a wounded Heart.

Mir. Rise, and hope for all you wish: Alas, he faints——
[She takes him up, he falls upon her Bosom.

Page. Hold him fast, Madam, between your Arms, and he'll recover presently. Stand all away.——

Prince. Oh! tell me, wilt thou bless my Youth and Love? Oh! swear, lest thou shouldst break—for Women wou'd be Gods, but for Inconstancy.

Page. See, he begins to come to himself again——keep off——

Mir. You have a thousand Charms that may secure you—The Ceremony of my Nuptials is every Evening celebrated, the noise of which draws all the Town together; be here in Masquerade, and I'll contrive it so, that you shall speak with me this Night alone.

Prince. So, now let my Soul take Air——

L. Blun. What pity 'tis so fine a Gentleman shou'd be thus.

Mir. You must be bringing home your Fops to me, and see what comes of it. [*As she passes out.*]

Sir Mor. Fops! I thought him no more a Fop, than I do my own natural Cousin here. [*Ex. Mir. in Scorn.*]

Prince. Where am I? [*The Page has whisper'd him.*]

Sir Merl. Why, here, Sir, here, at Sir Morgan Blunder's Lodging in *Lincolns-Inn-Fields*.

Prince. That's well, he has told me—Where have I been this long half hour, and more?

Sir Merl. Nay, the Lord knows.

Prince. I fancy'd I saw a lovely Woman.

Sir Merl. Fancy'd——why so you did Man, my Lady *Mirtilla Blunder*.

Prince. Methought, I slept upon her snowy Bosom, and dreamt I was in Heaven, where I claim'd her.

Sir Merl. Good lack aday—why, so you did, Sir, ha, ha, ha.

Prince. And rav'd on Love; and talk'd abundance of Nonsense.

Sir Morg. Ha, ha, ha, by my Troth, and so you did, Sir.

Prince. I ask your Pardon, Sir, 'tis an infirmity I have that ever takes me at the approach of a fine Woman, which made me so unwilling to see your Lady.

Sir Morg. Lookye, I ask your Pardon heartily, or so, d'ye see—and am sorry you are not in a Condition to visit her often.

Prince.

Prince. I shall be better when I am us'd to her; 'tis the first time only affects me.

Sir Morg. Pray, Sir, be pleas'd to use your self to her, or so, d'ye see — she's a civil Person, and a Person of Quality before I marry'd her, d'ye see.

L. Blun. My Son tells you Truth, Sir.

Prince. Madam, I doubt it not, pray beg her Pardon, and do you give me yours. *[Bows and kisses her Hand, and goes out.]*

L. Blun. A most accomplish'd Person — *[Exeunt.]*

S C E N E III.

Enter Olivia and Teresa, in Mens Clothes.

Oliv. Well, the Ball does not begin these three Hours, and we'll divert our selves at my Aunt's Basset-Table, which you see is preparing; her natural Propensity to oblige both Sexes makes her keep a Bank on purpose to bring 'em together. There we shall see the old and the young, the ugly and the handsome, Fools that have Money, and Wits that have none; and if the Table affords us nothing to please the Appetite, we'll abroad for Forage.

Enter Sir Merlin pulling in George, follow'd by

Sir Morgan, Page and Footmen to George.

Sir Merl. Nay, Sir, I am resolv'd you shall honour my Aunt's Basset-Table —

Geo. My Aunt's Basset-Table! There may be Money stirring among these Fools, and Fortune may befriend me. *[Aside.]*

Sir Merl. Sir Morgan, pray know this worthy Gentleman, I have the honour to lodge in the House with him.

[They salute one another.]

Sir, this is Sir Morgan Blunder, a Person of Quality in Wales, I assure you.

Geo. I question it not, Sir, and am proud of the Honour of kissing your Hands.

Tere. Yonder's a handsom Gentleman.

Oliv. My Brother George, as I live, 'tis as I cou'd wish. *[Aside.]*

Enter

*Enter Welborn.**Welb. Leisure !**Geo. Welborn ! Welcome from Paris, I heard of your arrival from Prince Frederick.**Welb. Yes, I am come to my Destruction, Friend.**Geo. Ay, thou'rt to be marry'd, I hear, to a Welch Fortune.**Welb. Tho' Matrimony be a sufficient Curse, yet that's not the worst—I am fall'n most damnably in love, since I arriv'd, with a young Creature I saw in the Mall t'other Night ; of Quality she was, I dare swear, by all that was about her ; but such a Shape ! a Face ! a Wit ! a Mind, as in a moment quite subdu'd my Heart : she had another Lady with her, whom (dogging her Coach) I found to be a Neighbour of mine, and Grand-Daughter to the Lady Youthly ; but who my Conqueror was I never since could arrn.**Oliv. 'Slife, Teresa, yonder's the handsome Fellow that entertain'd us with so much Wit, on Thursday last in the Mall.**Tere. What, when you chang'd your Breeches for Petticoats at my Lodgings.**Oliv. That Night, and ever since, I have felt a sort of Tendre for him.**Tere. As I do for his Friend——Pray Heav'n he be not marry'd ! I fear he has laid an Imbargo on my Heart, before it puts out of the Port.**Geo. Are you not for the Basset ?**Welb. No, I've business at the Ball to night ; besides, my Lady Blunder has a Quarrel to me for last Night's Debauch ; I'll wait on you in the Morning.**[Exit Welborn.**Geo. Well, you to your Business, and I to mine.**[Speaks as the rest go out.]*

Let the dull trading Fool by Business live,
 Statesmen by Plots ; the Courtier cringe to thrive ;
 The Fop of Noise and Wealth be cullied on,
 And purchase no one Joy by being undone,

Whilst

Whilst I by nobler careless ways advance,
Since Love and Fortune are acquir'd by Chance.
[Exeunt.]

A Song, sung by Sir Rowland in the second Act.

TO TERESIA.

TH O the Young prize Cupid's Fire,
'Tis more valu'd by the Old;
The Sun's Warmth we now admire,
More than when the Season's cold.

Dialogues in the Masque, at the beginning
of the third Act.

He. Time and Place you see conspire,
With tender Wishes, fierce Desire;
See the willing Victim stands
To be offer'd by your Hands:
Ah! Let me on Love's Altars lying,
Clasp my Goddess whilst I'm dying.

She. Oh Lord! what hard words, and strange things
d'ye say;
Your Eyes too seem closing, and just dying away:
Ah! pray what d'ye want? Explain but your mind,
Which did I but know, perhaps I'd be kind.

He. My pretty soft Maid, full of innocent Charms,
I languish to sigh out my Soul in thy Arms;
Oh! then, if I'm lov'd, deny not the Blifs,
But tell me I'm happy, with a ravishing Kifs.

She.

She. Oh! Fy, Sir, I vow I cannot endure you ;
 Be civil, or else I'll cry out I assure you ;
 I will not be kiss'd so, nor tumbled, not I,
 I'll tell all your tricks, that I will, if I die.

He. Nay, never dissemble, nor smother that Fire ;
 Your Blushes, and Eyes betray your Desire.
 The Practis'd, not Innocent, dally with Blifs,
 Then prithee be kind, and taste what it is.

She. Let me die now, you're grown a strange sort of a
 Man,
 To force a young Maid, let her do what she can ;
 I fear now I blush to think what we're doing,
 And is this the end of all you Men's wooing?

He. At this Pleasure all aim, both Godly and Sinners,
 And none of 'em blush for't but poor young Beginners,
 In Pleasure both Sexes, all Ages agree,
 And those that take most, most happy will be.

Chorus. In Pleasure both Sexes, &c.

A C T

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter Olivia as a Man, Tereſia in Maſquerade; the Scene opens, and diſcovers Lady Youthly, Lady Blunder, Mirtilla, Manage, Prince Frederick in a rich Habit, Welborn in one like his, with a Cloke over him, ſtands aſide, and ſeveral others of both Sexes.

Oliv. **O**H, my dear *Tereſia*, I'm loſt in Love! I've ſeen a Man,——or rather 'tis an Angel! ſo gay, ſo ſoft, ſo charming, and ſo witty; ſo dress'd! ſo ſhap'd! and danc'd with ſuch an Air!

Tere. Hey day! Prithee where's this Wonder to be ſeen?

Oliv. Why doſt thou aſk? Haſt thou not ſeen a Man of Dress, and Movement of uncommon Fashion?

Tere. A great many, very odd, and fantaſtick, I'm ſure my dear Man is none of 'em. [Sighs.]

Oliv. Thy Heart when fir'd burns eaſily, and ſoft, but I am all impatient, Darts, and Flames, all the effects of Love are panting in my Heart, yet never ſaw his Face: but ſee, he comes, and I muſt find a way to let him know the miſchiefs he has done.

Mir. *Endimion*, where's *Sir Morgan*?

Oliv. At his uſual Diverſion, Madam, drinking.

Mir. Do you wait near me to Night, I may perhaps have kinder Buſineſs for you e'er the Morning.

Oliv. You heap too many Bleſſings on me, Madam.

Prince. Oh, turn thy lovely Eyes upon thy Slave, that waits and watches for a tender Look.

Mir. Oh, Sir, why do you prefs a yielding Heart too much, undone by what you've ſaid already?

Oliv. Thoſe ſoft Addreſſes muſt be thoſe of Love.

Mir. My Honour was in danger when I promis'd —— and yet I bluſh to tell you I was pleas'd, and bleſt the dear neceſſity that forc'd me.

Oliv.

Oliv. Ha! 'tis the Man I love——and courts *Mirtilla*, and she receives him with inviting Looks. 'Sdeath, she's a common Lover! already I'm arriv'd to Jealousy!

Enter George in Masquerade, with a Paper on his Back and Breast, goes to Mirtilla, sees one courting her.

Geo. What gilded thing is that?——I must disturb 'em——

'Tis I, *Mirtilla*, languishing for the appointed Happiness, while you, perhaps, are taken up with different Thoughts——

Mir. Lejere! How very feeble do old Lovers charm! Only the new and gay have pow'r to warm—How shall I put him off? For now my ambitious Love declares for *Fredorick*; 'tis great to enslave a Prince. [*Aside.*

——*Lejere*——wait till I give the word——perhaps it may be late—go mix your self i'th' Crowd, you may be else suspected—— [*Goes from him.*

Tere. I have a shreud guess that this shou'd be my Man by his Shape, and Mein. [*Looking round about George.* Let me see——What's this written on his Back?—— To be lett ready furnish'd—— [*Reading it.*

A very good hearing: So ho, ho, ho, who's within here? [*Claps him on the Back.*

Geo. Who's there?

[*Exit Olivia.*

Tere. Love and Fortune.

Geo. Two very good Friends of mine, prithee who art thou that bring'st 'em?

Tere. A wandring Nymph, that has had a swinging Character of your Person and Parts——if thou be'st the Man, prithee dear Stranger, let me see thy Face; and if I'm not mistaken, 'tis ten to one, but we may go near to strike up some odd Bargain or other.

Geo. And I am as likely a Fellow for some odd Bargain or other, as ever you met with——Look ye, am I the Man?

Tere. Let me see—a very handsome Face, inclining to round; fine wanton Eyes, with a plaguy roguish Lear; plump, round, red Lips; not tall, nor low, and extremely

ly well fashion'd. [Reads all this in her Tablets.

—Ay, ay, you are the Man——

Geo. I am glad on't, and prithee dear Creature, let me see if thou art not the Woman—

Tere. Heav'n! what Woman, Sir?

Geo. Why, any Woman that's pretty, witty, young, and good-natur'd.

Tere. I had rather shew any thing almost than my Face.

Geo. Faith, and that's kind; but every thing in its due time: I love to arrive at Happiness by degrees, there's as much Pleasure in the Journey of Love, as in the Arrival to't, and the first Stage is a handsom Face.

Tere. Where you bait a while, take a short Survey, and away.

Geo. To Wit, and good Humour; where a Man finds Pleasure enough to engage him a long while.

Tere. Then to all the small Villages, call'd little Freedoms, kissing, playing, fooling, fighting, dying—and so on to the last Stage, where Whip and Spur laid by, all tir'd and dull, you lazily lie down and sleep.

Geo. No, I'm a more vigorous Lover: And since in the Country of true Love, there remains a *Terra Incognita*, I shall always be making new Discoveries.

Tere. True Love! is there such a thing in the whole Map of Nature?

Geo. Yes, I once discover'd it in my Voyage round the World.

Tere. Sure 'tis some enchanted Place, and vanishes as soon as 'tis approach'd.

Enter Sir Rowland.

Geo. Faith, let's set out for it, and try; if we lose our Labour, we shall, like Searchers for the Philosophers Stone, find something that will recompense our pains.—

[Lady Youthly sees her, and sends her Woman to take her from him.

Ha, gone—I must not part so with you—I'll have you in my Eye.

[The Spanish Dance: Whilst they dance, the Prince talks to Mirtilla.

378 *The Younger Brother;*

Mir. This Night gives you an Affignation—I tremble at the thought—Ah, why will you pursue me thus to Ruin? Why with resistless Charms invade my Heart, that cannot stand their Force—alone—without my Woman?—the Enterprize with you would be too dangerous.

Prince. Dangerous to be ador'd! and at your Feet behold your Slave making eternal Vows?

Mir. If I were sure that you would pass no further—

Prince. Let the fond God of Love be my Security—will you not trust a Deity?

Mir. Whom should she trust, that dares not trust herself?

Geo. That is some Lover, whom I must observe.

[*Aside.*

Mir. Alas, the Foe's within that will betray me, Ambition, and our Sex's Vanity—Sir, you must prevail—

Prince. And in return, for ever take my Soul.

Mir. Anon I'll feign an Illness, and retire to my Apartment, whither this faithful Friend shall bring you, Sir.

[*Pointing to Manage.*

Geo. Hum!—that looks like some Love Bargain, and *Manage* call'd to Witness. By Heav'n, gay Sir, I'll watch you.

Tere. But hark ye, my Fellow-Adventurer, are you not marry'd?

Geo. Marry'd—that's a Bug-word—prithee if thou hast any such Design, keep on thy Mask, lest I be tempted to Wickedness.

Tere. Nay, truth is, 'tis a thousand pities to spoil a handsome man, to make a dull Husband of: I have known an old batter'd Bully of Seventy, unmarried, more agreeable for a Gallant, than any scurvy, out-of-humour'd Husband at Eight and Twenty.

Geo. Gad, a thousand times.

Tere. Know, I have Five Hundred Pounds a Year.

Geo. Good.

Tere. And the Devil and all of Expectation from an old Woman.

Geo. Very good.

Tere.

Tere. And this Youth, and little Beauty to lay out in love. *[Pulls off her Mask.]*

Geo. *Teresia!* the lovely Maid design'd for my Mother! now, what a Dog am I? that gives me the greater Guilt to her, and wou'd fain cuckold my Father.

[Talks to her aside.]

[Mirtilla seems to faint.]

Man. My Lady faints——help, help.

Mir. Only the Heat oppresses me——but let it not disturb the Company, I'll take the Air a little, and return.

[Goes out with Manage.]

Geo. Is this design'd, or real? —perhaps she is retir'd for me——*Mrs. Manage.*——

[Manage re-enters, he pulls her by the Sleeve.]

Man. Ha! *Monsieur Jejeje!* what shall I feign to put him off withal. *[Aside.]*

Geo. Why dost thou start? How does my dear *Mirtilla?*

Man. Reposing, Sir, a while, but anon I'll wait on her for your admittance.

[Prince Frederick puts on Welborn's Cloke, goes out, and Welborn enters into the Company dress'd like the Prince.]

Geo. Ha, she spoke in passing by that gay thing——What means it, but I'll trace the Mystery.

Sir Row. The young People are lazy, and here's nothing but gaping and peeping in one another's Vizards; come, Madam, let you and I shame 'em into Action.

[Sir Rowland and Lady Youthly dance. After the Dance, Olivia enters with a Letter, and gives it to Welborn.]

Wel. Ha! what's this, Sir, a Challenge?

Oliv. A soft one, Sir.

Wel. A Billet——whoever the Lady be, *(Reads.)* She merits something for but believing I am worth her Mirth.

Oliv. I know not, Sir, how great a Jest you may make of it; but I assure you the Lady is in earnest, and if you be at leisure to hear Reason from her——

Wel.

380 *The Younger Brother ;*

Wel. Fair and softly, my dear Love-Messenger, I am for no hasty Bargains ; not but I shou'd be glad to hear Reason from any of the Sex——But I have been so damnably jilted——Is she of Quality ?

Oliv. Yes.

Wel. Then I'll not hear any thing from her : they are troublesome, and insolent ; and if she have a Husband, to hide her Intrigues she has recourse to all the little Arts and Cunning of her Sex ; and she that jilts her Husband, will her Lover.

Oliv. She is not troubled with a Husband, Sir.

Wel. What, she's parted from the Fool ; then she's expensive, and for want of Alimony, jilts all the believing Block-heads that she meets with.

Oliv. But this is a Maid, Sir.

Wel. Worse still ! At every turn she's raving on her Honour ; then if she have a Kinsman, or a Brother, I must be challeng'd.

Oliv. Sir, you mistake, my Lady is for Matrimony.

Wel. How !

Oliv. You have not forsworn it, I hope.

Wel. Not so——but——

Oliv. If a Lady, young and handsom, and Ten Thousand Pounds——

Wel. Nay, I am not positive——

Enter Sir Morgan, and Sir Merlin, drunk, singing.
Wife Coxcombs be damn'd, here's a Health to that Man,
That since Life is but short, lives as long as he can.

Sir Morg. Where is my Lady Mirtilla, Rogues ?

Sir Merl. And my Mistress, Rascals ? For we are resolv'd to shew our selves in Triumph to our Wives and Mistresses.

L. Youth. Your Mistress, Sir Merlin ? mistake not your Mark.

Sir Merl. Ha ! Art thou there, old Cathedral ? Why thou look'st as magnificently as old Queen *Bess* in the *Westminster-Cupboard*.

Sir Morg. Lookye as d'ye see, when *Adam* wore a Beard, she was in her Prime, or so, d'ye see. [*Sings,*

L. Youth.

L. Youth. Sir, you are a saucy Jack, and your Father shall correct you.

Sir Merl. My Father! my Father's an old Toast, d'ye see; and I hope to see him hang'd.

Sir Row. Here's a Heathen-Christian! see his Father hang'd!

Sir Merl. Ay hang'd, and all the old Fathers in *Christendom*. Why, what a Pox shou'd Fathers trouble the World for? when I come to reign in Parliament, I will enact it Felony, for any Father to have so little Grace to live, that has a Son at Years of Discretion.

Sir Row. A damn'd Rogue, I'll disinherit him immediately.

L. Blun. Is it so great a Crime, Brother, for a Gentleman to be drunk?

Sir Merl. You lye like a Son of a Whore — I have been drinking Confusion to all the Fathers and Husbands in *England*.

Sir Morg. How, Sir, Confusion to Husbands! Look ye d'ye see, Sir, swallow me that Word, or I'll make you deposit all the conjugal Wine you have drunk.

Sir Merl. I deposit all your Wine! Sirrah, you're a Blunderbuss.

Sir Morg. Sirrah, you are a diminutive Bully.

Sir Merl. Sirrah, you're the Whore of *Babylon*, and I defy you.

Sir Morg. Lookye d'ye see, I scorn to draw upon a drunken Man, or so, I being sober; but I boldly challenge you into the Cellar, where thou shalt drink till thou renounce thy Character, or talk Treason enough to hang thee, and that's fair and civil.

Sir Merl. Agreed; and when I'm drunk enough to ravish, I'll cuckold my old Dad, and fight him for his Mistress.

Sir Row. I have no Patience; I'll kill the Dog, because I'll have the Law on my side — Come on, Sir.

[Draws, the Ladies run out.

[Sir Merlin draws. George runs in and parts 'em.

Geo. Villain! Rascal! What, draw upon thy Father!

Sir Row. Pray, Sir, who are you? that I may thank you for my Life.

Geo. One, Sir, whose Duty 'twas.

[Pulls off his Vizard.

Sir Row. What, my dear George!—I'll go and cut off the Intail of my Estate presently, and thou shalt have it all, Boy, thou shalt—

[Exeunt all but George.

Geo. Fortune is still my Friend: Had but *Mirtilla* been so! I wonder that she sends not to me: my Love's impatient, and I cannot wait—while the dull Sot is boozing with his Brother-Fools in the Cellar, I'll softly to the Chamber of my Love—Perhaps she waits me there—

[Exit.

S C E N E II *A Chamber, and Alcove, discovers Mirtilla, and Prince Frederick.*

Prince. Oh! I am ravish'd with excess of Joy.

Mir. Enough, my charming Prince! Oh, you have said enough.

Prince. Never, my *Mirtilla*!

The Sun that views the World, nor the bright Moon, that favours Lovers Stealths, shall ever see that Hour. Vast, as thy Beauties, are my young Desires; and every new Possession kindles new Flames, soft as thy Eyes, soft as thy tender Touches; and e'er the Pantings of my Heart are laid, new Transports, from new Wishes, dance about it, and still remain in Love's harmonious Order.

[Kisses and embraces her.

Enter George, softly.

Geo. This House I know, and this should be her Bed-Chamber, because the best; and yet methought I heard another Voice—but I may be mistaken.

Prince. I faint with Pleasure of each tender Clasp: I sigh, and languish, gazing on thy Eyes; and die upon thy Lips, with every Kiss.

Geo. Surely I know that Voice! Torments, and Hell! —but 'tis impossible.

[Aside.

Prince.

Prince. Oh! satisfy my Doubt, my trembling Doubt! Am I belov'd? Have I about me ought engaging to thee, Charmer of my Soul?

Geo. It is the Prince.

[*Aside.*

Mir. Ah, Prince! Can you such needless Questions ask, after the Sacrifice which I have made?

Geo. Hell take thee for that Falshood.

[*Draws.*

Mir. Think not the mighty Present of your Jewels, enough to purchase Provinces, has bought one single Sigh, or Wish: No, my dear Prince, you owe 'em all to Love, and your own Charms.

Geo. Oh damn'd, dissembling Jilt!

[*Aside.*

Prince. No more, no more, my Soul's oppress'd with Joy: let me unload it in thy tender Arms, and sigh it out into thy ravishing Bosom.

Geo. Death, and Damnation! —————

I shall forget his Quality and Virtue, forget he was my Friend, or sav'd this Life; and like a River, swell'd with angry Tides, o'erflow those Banks that made the Stream so gay.

Mir. Who's there?—I heard a Voice—*Manage?*

Geo. Yes.

[*Softly.*

Prince. Approach, thou Confident of all my Joys; approach, and be rewarded——

[*Prince takes his Jewel from his Hat.*

Geo. Yes, for my excellent Bauding——By Heav'n I dare not touch his princely Person.

Prince. Where art thou? take this Jewel, and retire.

[*Gropes for his Hand, gives it him.*

Geo. Ee'n my Misfortunes have a sort of Luck; but I'll withdraw, for fear this Devil about me shou'd raise my too rash Hand against his Life.

[*Exit.*

Prince. Come, my eternal Pleasure——each Moment of the happy Lover's Hour, is worth an Age of dull, and common Life.

[*Exeunt into the Alcove, the Scene shuts.*

SCENE III. *A Garden by Night still.*

Enter George with his Sword in his Hand, as before.

Geo. Why do I vainly call for Vengeance down, and have it in my Hand?—By Heav'n, I'll back—Whither? To kill a Woman, a young perjur'd Woman!—Oh, ye false Fair Ones! shou'd we do you Justice, a universal Ruin wou'd ensue; not one wou'd live to stock the World anew. Who is't among ye All, ye Fair Deceivers, ye charming Milchiefs to the noble Race, can swear she's Innocent, without Damnation? No, no, go on—be false—be false still: You act but Nature—But my faithless Friend—where I repose the Secrets of my Soul—except this one—Alas! he knew not this:—Why do I blame him then?

Enter Olivia, dress'd as before.

Oliv. Fire! Fire! Fire!

Geo. *Olivia's Voice!*—Ha! what art thou? Thy Voice shou'd be *Olivia's*, but thy Shape—and yet a Woman is all o'er Disguise.

Enter Lady Blunder in her Night-Gown.

L. Blun. Fire! Fire! Fire! My Son, my dear Sir *Morgan*.

Enter Sir Rowland, and Servants.

Sir Row. A Pox on your Son, and mine to boot; they have set all the Sack-Butts a Flaming in the Cellar, thence the Mischief began. *Timothy, Roger, Jeffrey,* my Money-Trunks, ye Rogues! my Money-Trunks!

L. Blun. My Son, good *Roger!* my own *Sir Moggy!*

Sir Row. The ten thousand Pounds, ye Rascal, in the Iron Trunk, that was to be paid *Mr. Welborn* for *Olivia's* Portion. [Exit.

L. Blun. Oh my Son! my Son!—run to the Parson, *Sam.* and let him send the Church-Buckets. Oh, some help! some help!

Enter Manage.

Man. Oh, Heavens! my Lady *Mirtilla's* Chamber's all on Flame.

Enter

Enter Britton.

Geo. Ha! — the Prince! I had forgot his Danger.

Man. Ah! look up, and see how it burns.

Geo. Britton, a Million for a Ladder!

Man. Blessing on you, Sir, if you dare venture thro the House; there lies one in the Fore-Garden.

Brit. The Passage is on fire, Sir, you cannot go.

Geo. Revenge is vanish'd, and Love takes its place; Soft Love, and mightier Friendship seizes all. I'll save him, tho I perish in the Attempt.

[Runs out, Britton after him.]

Enter at another Door, Sir Rowland.

L. Blun. A thousand Pound for him that saves Sir Morgan!

Sir Rowl. And, do ye hear, let my Rogue lie; I'd rather, he should be burnt, than hang'd on Tyburn Road, for murdering his Father. — But where's Boy George?

Enter Men with Trunks.

Rog. Safe, Sir, I hope; he was not in the House.

Sir Rowl. So, so, away with these Trunks to my Lady Youthly's in Southampton-Square, and tell her we must trouble her to night. Come, Sister, let's away.

[Ex. Lady Blunder, and Sir Rowland.]

Prince Frederick and Mirtilla, appear at the Window, the Flame behind 'em.

Prince. Help, help, and save Mirtilla! Ask any Price, my Life, my Fortune! All!

Mir. Oh, Heav'ns! the Flame pursues us as we fly.

Prince. No help! Oh Gods, I shall prevent the Flame, and perish by my Fears to see you die!

Mir. Alas! Sir, you with ease may save your Life! This Window you may leap, but I want Courage.

Prince. No, my Mirtilla, if it be thy Fate, I'll grasp thee, ev'n in Flames, and die with thee.

Mir. We die! we die! the Flame takes hold of us.

Enter George with a Ladder, and puts it to the Window.

Prince. Ha! some pitying God takes care of us.

386 *The Younger Brother*;

Haste, haste, my Charmer; Heav'n has sent us Aid.

[*Puts her on the Ladder, she descends into George's Arms; after her, the Prince. George puts her into Manage's Arms, she faints; he runs up to receive the Prince.*]

Prince. *Lejere!* dear Man of Luck — Some happy Star reign'd at thy glorious Birth; every thing is prosperous thou espoudest. — How fares my Love, the Treasure of my Soul?

Man. Only fainting with the Fright, but she recovers.

Prince. My Chair there, quickly, that waits for me. —

Enter Chair; he puts her, and Manage into it.

Enter Olivia.

Carry 'em to Mr. *Welborn's*, to my Lodgings there, and then return to me; for I am wondrous faint, and cannot walk.

Oliv. Ha! by my Life, my Man!

Prince. But if I might impose so much, *Lejere*, upon thy Friendship, I beg thou wouldst see her safely carry'd to my Lodgings at *Welborn's*.

Geo. You shall command me, Sir.

[*Exeunt Chair, George and Britton.*]

Oliv. You seem not well, Sir, pray repose upon my Arm a while.

Prince. I thank you, Sir, indeed I am not well.

Oliv. Methinks I find a Pleasure but in touching him — Wou'd I cou'd see his Face by all this fatal Light.

Enter Constable and Watch.

Const. So, so, the Fire abates, the Engines play'd rarely, and we have Ten Guineas here, Neighbours, to watch about the House; for where there's Fire, there's Rogues — Hum, who have we here? — How now, Mr. — Hum, what have you got under your Arm there, ha? Take away this Box of Jewels.

[*Sir Morgan, and Sir Merlin, creeping out of the Cellar Window.*]

Ha, who have we here creeping out of the Cellar-Window? more Rogues!

Sir *Merl.* Sirrah! you're a Baud, Sirrah! and for a Tester will wink at the Vices of the Nation, Sirrah! Call Men of the best Quality Rogues! that have stood for Knights of the Shire, and made the Mobile drunk, Sirrah!

Const. We cry you Mercy, Sir, we did not know your Worships.

Sir *Morg.* Lookye d'ye see, here's a Crown for you; carry us to the next Tavern, and we'll make thee, and all thy Mirmidons, as drunk as a Boat in a Storm.

Oliv. Sir, I find you have Interest with these arbitrary Tyrants of the Parish; pray will you bail me, and this Gentleman?

Sir *Merl.* What, *Endimion!* my Lady *Mirtilla's* Page? He lent me Money to night at the Basset-Table; I'll be bound Hand and Foot for him, Mr. Constable, and gad we'll all to the Tavern, and drink up the Sun, Boys.

Oliv. Yonder Gentleman too has receiv'd some hurt by the Fire, and must go home, Sir; but you must restore him the Box, Mr. Constable.

Sir *Morg.* Ay, ay, lookye d'ye see, return the Gentleman all; they're Gentlemen, and our intimate Friends, d'ye see.

[*Exeunt Prince, and Olivia.*]

Enter a Servant.

Const. Stand: Who goes there?

Sir *Morg.* *Philip*——Lookye d'ye see, he shall along with us to the Tavern.

Serv. Sir *Morgan*, I came to seek you: your Lady Mother sent me back on purpose; she has spoil'd her Beauty with crying for you.

Sir *Morg.* And wash'd off all her Paint?——Or so d'ye see! Gad sa' me, *Philip*, this is ill Luck. Come let us go drink down Sorrow.

Serv. Being sent of such an Errand, as your Safety, Sir, I dare not stay and drink now, before I've satisfy'd your Mother.

Sir *Merl.* Not drink! I charge you in the King's Name, Mr. Constable, bring him along.

[*The Constable and Watch seize him.*]

Sings.

*Wife Coxcombs be damn'd, here's a Health to the Man,
That since Life is but short, lives as long as he can.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

The Prince's Lodgings.

Enter Page with Lights, sets 'em on the Table. [Ex.

Enter Mirtilla led by Mrs. Manage.

Mir. HA! where am I, *Manage*?

Man. Heav'n be thank'd, Madam, at the Prince's Lodgings.

Mir. What happy Star conducted us, and sav'd us from the Fury of the Flames?

Man. Those whose Influence are always gracious to your Ladyship.

Mir. But where's the Prince? where's my illustrious Lover?

Man. Waiting the Return of the Chair, Madam.

Mir. But my *Endimion*!— Is *Endimion* safe?

Man. Madam, he is: I saw him in the Garden.

Mir. Then perish all the rest—Go send to search him out, and let him instantly be brought to me—Ha—
Lejere.

Enter George.

Geo. Baud, stand aside—and do your Office yonder—

[*Puts away Manage.*

Why are you frighted, Madam, because I'm not the Lover you expected?

Mir. What Lover! be witness Heaven—

Geo.

Geo. That thou art false, false as the insatiate Seas,
that smiling tempt the vain Adventurer, whom flattering,
far from any saving there, swell their false Waves to a
destructive Storm.

Mir. Why all this mighty Rage?—Because I dis-
appointed you to night?

Geo. No, by Heaven, I dully cou'd have waited for
the Hour; have hop'd, and wish'd, and languish'd out
an Age. But, oh *Mirtilla!* Oh thou perjur'd Fair!—
But vanish all the Softness of my Soul, I will be sa-
tirical.

*A Plague, a Torment, to your fickle Sex,
Those smiling, sighing, weeping Hypocrites.*

Mir. And can you think my Flight is criminal? because
I sav'd this worthless Life — for you—

Geo. What Innocence adorns her Tongue, and Eyes!
while Hell and Furies give her Heart its motion. You
know not where you are?

Mir. Perhaps I do not.

Geo. Swear, for thou'rt damn'd already, and by what
black Degrees I will unfold: When first I saw this gay,
this glorious Mischief, tho nobly born, 'twas hid in mean
Obscurity; the shining Viper lay half dead with Poverty,
I took it up, and laid it next my Heart, fed it, and call'd
its faded Beauties back.

Mir. Confess'd; And what of this?

Geo. Confirm'd you mine, by all the Obligations Pro-
fuseness cou'd invent, or Love inspire.

Mir. And yet at your Return you found me marry'd
to another.

Geo. Death and Hell! that was not yet the worst:
You flatter'd me with some Pretence of Penitence; but
on the Night, the dear destructive Night, you rais'd my
Hopes to all distracting Love cou'd wish—that very
Night—Oh let me rave and die, and never think that
Disappointment o'er!

Mir. What, you saw me courted at the Ball, per-
haps.

390 *The Younger Brother;*

Geo. Perhaps I saw it in your Chamber too. Breathless and panting, with new-acted Joys, the happy Lover lay—Oh *Mirtilla!*

Mir. Nay, if he knows it, I'll deny't no more.

[*Aside.*

Geo. There is no Honesty in all thy Kind.

Mir. Or if there be, those that deal in't are weary of their Trade. But where's the mighty Crime?

Geo. No, I expect thou shouldst out-face my Eyes, out-swear my Hearing, and out-lye my Senses—The Prince! the Prince! thou faithless dear Destruction.

Mir. The Prince! good Heaven! Is all this Heat for him?

Geo. Thou own'st the Conquest then?

Mir. With as much Vanity as thou wouldst do, if thou hadst won his Sword: Hast thou took care wisely to teach me all the Arts of Life, and dost thou now upbraid my Industry? Look round the World, and thou shalt see, *Lejere*, Ambition still supplies the place of Love. The worn-out Lady, that can serve your Interest, you swear has Beauties that out-charms Fifteen; and for the Vanity of Quality, you feign and languish, lye, protest, and flatter—All Things in Nature cheat, or else are cheated.

Geo. Well said; take off thy Veil, and shew the Jilt.

Mir. You never knew a Woman thrive so well by real Love, as by Dissimulation: This has a thousand Arts and Tricks to conquer; appears in any Shape, in any Humour; can laugh or weep, be coy or play, by turns, as suits the Lover best, while simple Love has only one Road of Sighs and Softness; these to *Lejere* are due: But all my Charms, and Arts of gay dissembling, are for the credulous Prince.—Ha—he's here!—and with him the dear Youth that has enslav'd me, who triumphs o'er the rest.

[*Aside.*

Enter Prince Frederick, Olivia following, sees Mirtilla, and withdraws.

Oliv. Ha! *Mirtilla*, and my Brother here? Oh how I long to see that Stranger's Face.

[*Aside.*

Prince. *Mirtilla*, thou Charmer of Life's dull and tedious Hours, how fares thy Heart? Dwells any Pantings

ings there, but those that Love, and his dear Joys create ?

Mir. Or if there do, you shou'd excuse it now.

Geo. How many Devils reign in beauteous Woman !

Prince. My dear *Lejere*, congratulate my Joys ; take all my Friendship thou—but thou my Soul. Come, come, my Friend, let us retire together ; I'll give thee leave to gaze upon my Heaven, and feed on all the Sweets that Friendship may : But all the rest of the vast Store is mine.

Man. Madam, *Endimion* is already here.

Mir. Thou hast reviv'd me—Let him wait my Call. [*Aside to her.*

[*Exit Prince and Mirtilla, George goes out, and peeps at the Door. Olivia comes forward.*

Oliv. Spite, Spite, and dire Revenge, seize my fond Soul! — Oh that I were a Man, a loose leud Man ; how easily wou'd I rob him of her Heart, and leave him but the shadow of Enjoyment !

Re-enter George.

Geo. Now, my dear Sister, if thou ever lov'dst me, revenge thy Brother on this perjur'd Woman, and snarch her from this gallant Rival's Arms. She loves thee—Dissemble thou to love again ; meet her Advances with an equal Ardour, and when thou hast wound her up to dalliance, I'll bring the Prince a witness of her Shame.

Oliv. But what if he shou'd kill me——

Geo. I'll take care of that.

Oliv. Then e'er the morning dawns, you shall behold it : She languishes to see me, and I wait on purpose for her Commands.

Geo. As I cou'd wish : Be sure to act the Lover well.

[*Exit.*

Oliv. As well as I can act it.

Enter Welborn, habited as last.

That all Mankind are damn'd, I'm positive ; at least all Lovers are.

Wel. What have we here ? the Spark that rally'd me about a Woman at the Ball to night ? Who is it, Sir, you curse so heartily ?

392 *The Younger Brother;*

Oliv. Ha, how beautiful he is—— how many Charms dwell in that lovely Face—— [*Aside.*

'Tis you I curse.

Wel. Gad, I thank you for that, you were kinder to night, when you told me of a fine Woman that was in love with me.

Oliv. Why, what have you to do with Woman-kind ?

Wel. A pretty civil Question; has the Lady that sent you a mind to be inform'd ?

Oliv. Or if she had, you're not at leisure now, you are taken up, Sir, with another Beauty. Did not you swear, never to speak to Woman-kind, till I had brought her, I told you, sigh'd for you ?

Wel. Right, and I have kept my word religiously.

Oliv. The Devil you have, witness the Joy *Mirtilla* gave your Soul : Even now you were all Transport, all Extasy of Love ; by Heaven you had forgot you brought me in, and past triumphant in *Mirtilla's* Arms, Love in your Heart, and Pleasure in your Eyes.

Wel. Ay, sure he mistakes me for the amorous Prince, and thus, perhaps, has mistook me all the Night : I must not undeceive him. [*Aside.*

Whate'er you saw, I have a Heart unwounded, a Heart that never soundly loved, a little scratch it got the other day by a young Beauty in the *Mall*, her Name I know not, but I wish'd to know it, and dogg'd her Coach, I sigh'd a little after her, but since ne'er saw the lovely Vision.

Oliv. Sure this was I. [*Aside.*

What Livery had she, Sir ?

Wel. That I took notice of, 'twas Green and Gold—— Since that, I trifle now and then with Love, to chase away this Image, and that's all.

Oliv. Ha, now I view him well, 'tis the same handsome Fellow that entertain'd us in the *Mall* last Thursday.

Wel. Come, Sir, 'tis late, please you to take a Bed with me to Night, where we'll beget a better Understanding.

Oliv.

Oliv. A better than you imagine——'Sdeath to bed with him, I tremble at the thought—Sir, I do not love a Bedfellow.

Wel. Sir, I have lent my Lodgings to a Stranger of Quality, or I wou'd offer you a single Bed——but for once you may dispense with a Bedfellow.

Oliv. I will not put you to that trouble, Sir.

Wel. Do you design to make me your Friend, and use me with Ceremony? Who waits there?

Enter Footman.

Oliv. 'Slife, what shall I do? I cou'd even consent, to prevent his going to *Mirtilla*——besides, I have no home to go to——

Wel. Come, no more Scruples—here—a Night-Gown and a Cap for the Gentleman.

Oliv. What shall I do?—I have a little urgent Business, Sir.

Wel. If there be absolute necessity, I'll see you to your Lodgings.

Oliv. Oh, by no means, Sir. 'Sdeath, whither can I go?

Wel. Why do you pause? Deal freely with me, Sir, I hope you do not take me for a Lover of my own Sex—Come, come, to bed.

Oliv. Go you, Sir, I'll sit and read by you till Day,

Wel. 'Sdeath, Sir, d'ye think my Bed's infectious?

Oliv. I shall betray my Sex in my denial, and that at last I can but do if Necessity compel me to't. [*Aside.*
Go on, Sir, you have sham'd me. [*Exeunt.*

Enter Prince and George.

Prince. And thus thou hast my whole Adventure out, short was the Conquest, but the Joys are lasting.

Geo. I am glad on't, Sir.

Prince. Why dost wear a Cloud upon thy brows, when Love's gay Sunshine dances in my Eyes? If thou'rt her Lover too, I pity thee; her solemn Vows breath'd in the height of Love, disarm me of thy hopes, if Friendship wou'd permit thee.

Geo. I do not think it, Sir——

Prince. Not think it, not think that she has sworn!

394 *The Younger Brother ;*

Geo. Yes, doubtless, Sir—she's prodigal of Vows, and I dare swear, by all she's sworn by, she'll break 'em all: She has less Faith than all the fickle Sex, uncertain and more wanton than the Winds, that spare no Births of Nature in their wild course, from the tall Cedar to the Flowers beneath, but ruffle, ravish and ruin all.

Prince. I speak of my *Mirtilla*.

Geo. Why so do I—of yours, of mine, or any Man's *Mirtilla*.

Prince. Away, she that with force of Love can sigh and weep—

Geo. This very she, has all the while dissembled! Such Love she deals to every gaudy Coxcomb, how will she practise then upon a Hero?

Prince. Away, it cannot be.

Geo. By all your Friendship to me, Sir, 'tis truth.

Prince. Racks and Tortures!—let her have made of me a mere Example, by whom the cozen'd World might have grown wise: No matter, then I had been pleas'd, tho' cullied—Why hast thou ruined my Repose with Truths that carry more Damnation than a Lye? But Oh—thou art my Friend, and I forgive thee.

Geo. Sir, I have done, and humbly ask your Pardon.

[*Offers to go.*]

Prince. Stay, stay, *Lejere*,—if she be false, thou'rt all the World has left me; and I believe—but canst thou prove this to me?

Geo. Perhaps I may before the Morning's dawn.

Prince. Ha, prove it here—here, in this very House!

Geo. Ay, here, Sir.

Prince. What, in my Lodgings will she receive her Spark—by Heaven, were he the darling Son of a Monarch, an Empire's Hope, and Joy of all the Fair, he shou'd not live to rattle me of Peace.—Come, shew me this destin'd Victim to my Rage.

Geo. No, my Revenge is only comical—If you wou'd see how Woman can dissemble, come on, and follow me.

Prince. What, disturb her Rest! Didst thou not see her fainting with the Fatigues this Night had given her, and begg'd me I wou'd leave her to Repose?

Geo.

Geo. Yes, and wonder'd at her Art; and when you
begg'd to watch by her Bed-side, with what dear Pro-
mises she put you off; while every word fell freely from
her Tongue, as if't had been her last, so very sick she
was—till you were gone—Hark—a Door opens—I will
obscure the Lights. [Puts away the Lights.]

Enter Olivia. They retire a little.

Oliv. Was ever Maid so near being undone? Oh
Heavens! in bed with the dear Man I love, ready to be
betray'd by every Sigh. [George peeps.]

Geo. 'Tis Olivia.

Enter Manage groping.

Man. I left him here—what, by dark? *Endimion,*
young, handsome Sir, where are you? [Calls Olivia.]

Geo. Do you hear that, Sir?

Man. Oh, are you here?— [Runs against Olivia.]

Oliv. 'Slife, 'tis *Manage*—how shall I escape?—

[Aside.]

Man. Come, Sir, my Lady *Mirtilla* has dismiss'd her
troublesome Lovers, for your more agreeable Com-
pany.

Geo. D'ye hear that, Sir?

Man. Come softly on, Sir, and follow me.

Oliv. I'm all Obedience—

She cannot ravish me, and that's a Comfort.

[Aside, going out.]

Prince. Oh, *Lejere*—can this be possible? Can there
be such a Woman?

Geo. Follow him, Sir, and see—

Prince. See what!—be witness of her Infamy? Hell!
Hell, and all the Fires of Lust possess her! when she's
so old and leud, all Mankind shun her.—I'll be a Coward
in my own dire Revenge, and use no manly Mercy.—
But oh, I faint, I faint with Rage and Love, which like
two meeting Tides, swell into Storms.—Bear me a
minute to my Couch within.

Geo. What have I done! now I repent my Rashness.

SCENE

SCENE *draws off, discovers Mirtilla at her Toylet, dress'd.*

Enter Manage, leading Olivia in as Endymion, who falls at Mirtilla's Feet, whilst she's there, sings a Song ; she takes him up.

Mir. Rise,—When Lovers are alone they pardon Ceremony.—I sent for you to end the Night with me ; say—how shall we employ it ?

Oliv. I'll sigh, and gaze upon your lovely Face.

Mir. Nothing but sigh, and gaze ; we shall grow dull.

Oliv. I'll tell you Tales of Love, and sing you Songs.

Mir. Thy Voice, 'tis true, can charm a thousand ways ; but Lovers time their Joys, these for the Day, those for the lovely Night. And when they would be silently in love, have Musick of soft Sighs and gentler Whispers.

Oliv. Oh, Love inspires all this—What shall I do ?

[Aside.

Mir. Nay, think not because I sent for you alone, while Night and Silence favour Lovers Stealths, to take advantage of my yielding Heart.

Oliv. I wou'd to Heaven she were in earnest now.

A Noise. Enter Manage.

Man. Oh, hide your Favourite, Madam—do you hear.

Mir. A jealous Lover only, comes in such a Storm—Dear, to my Heart, whose safety is my Life. Submit to be conceal'd—but where—Oh Heavens, he comes—'Tis for you I fear—

[They search for a place.

Man. He comes—

Mir. Here, let my Train secure you—Till now I never found the right Use of long Trains and Farthingals.

[She kneels, Man. puts her Train over Olivia.

Enter Prince and George, at the Door.

Geo. 'Sdeath, you have made these Pauses and Alarms to give her time to jilt you.

Printe.

Prince. Pray Heaven she do——I'd not be undeceiv'd
for all the Sun surveys. [Enters.]

Mir. My Lord the Prince! now you are kind indeed.
[Goes and embraces him.]

—hah! what means this Unconcern?

Prince. I thought I'ad left you sick, extremely sick.

Mir. And are you griev'd to find my Health return?

Prince. No, wondrous glad of it. You're mighty gay,
Mirtilla, much in Glory.

Mir. Can he, who lays his Fortune at my Feet, think
me too glorious for his Arms and Eyes?

Geo. Fifty to one, the Gipsy jilts him yet. [Aside.]

Prince. Pray Heaven she lyes but handsomly—— [Aside.]
—for mine, *Mirtilla*! Ha—ha—

Mir. Am I not yours? You cannot doubt my Vows.

Geo. She'll do't, and make me love her anew for her
rare dexterity at dissembling.

Prince. I left you wearied, going to your Bed, but
find you at your Toylet gayly dress'd, as if some Con-
quest you design'd e'er morning.

Mir. Manage, Sir, from the Fire, secur'd these Trifles:
and I was trying several Dresses on; that this slight Beauty
that you say has charm'd you, might, when you saw it
next, complete the Conquest.

Geo. And that thou wilt, if Flattery can do't.

Prince. Now, were she guilty, as I am sure she's not,
this Softness would undo me, and appease me.

Mir. You seem as if you doubted what I say.

[This while, *Olivia* gets off unseer.]

By all the Powers——

Prince. Hold, I scorn to need an Oath to fix my
Faith: Oh! thou art all divine, and canst not err.

[Embraces her.]

Curs'd be the Tongue that dares profane thy Virtue, and
curs'd the listning Fool that dares believe it.

Geo. What a poor, wretched, baffled thing is Man,
by feebler Woman aw'd and made a Coxcomb!

Mir. Durst any one traduce my Virtue, Sir? and is it
possible that you could hear it?——Then perish all the

Beauties you have flatter'd. [Tears her Head-things.]

Prince.

Prince. Come to my Arms, thou Charmer of my Soul! and if one spark of Jealousy remain, one of those precious Tears shall quench the Crime—Oh, come, and let me lead thee to thy Bed, and breathe new Vows into thy panting Bosom.

[*Leads her off, she looks back on George and smiles.*]

Geo. Now all the Plagues of injur'd Lovers wreck thee; 'Sdeath, where has she hid *Olivia*? or how am I deceiv'd?—'Tis Day, and with it new Invention rise to damn this Woman to the sin of Shame; break all the Chains that hold the princely Youth, and sink her with her fancy'd Power and Vanity. [Exit.]

S C E N E *changes to Lady Youthly's.*

Enter Sir Rowland half dress'd, Lady Blunder in an Undress, Lady Youthly in her morning-dress, Terefia and Mr. Twang.

Sir Row. Morrow my Lady *Youthly*, and thank you for my Night's-Lodging—You are as early up as if it had been your Wedding day.

L. Youth. Truly, *Sir Rowland*, that I intend.

Sir Row. But where's the Bride-groom, Madam?

Enter Roger.

How now, *Roger*, what, no news yet of *George*?

Rog. Alas! none *Sir*, none, till the Rubbish be removed.

Sir Row. Rubbish—What—what is *George* become the Rubbish of the World then? [Weeps.]

Twang. Why, Man is but Dust, as a Man may say, *Sir*.

L. Blun. But are you sure, *Roger*, my Jewel, my *Sir Moggy* escap'd?

Rog. The Watch drew him out of the Cellar-window, Madam.

L. Youth. How, *Mr. Twang*, the young Gentleman burnt—Oh— [Falls in a Chair.]

Tere. Alas! my Grandmother faints with your ill News—Good *Sir Rowland* comfort her, and dry your Eyes.

Sir

Sir Row. Burnt, Madam! No, no, only the House fell on him, or so—

[Feigns Chearfulness, and speaks to Lady Youthly.

L. Youth. How! the House fell on him—Oh!

Sir Row. Ah, Madam, that's all; why, the young Rogue has a Back like an Elephant—'twill bear a Castle, Madam.

L. Youth. Alas, good Man: What a Mercy 'tis, Mr. Twang, to have a Back like an Elephant!

L. Blun. Of what wonderful Use it is upon occasion—

Sir Row. Ay—but—but I shall never see him more, Back nor Breast. [Weeps.

Twang. Good Sir, discomfort not my Lady—Consider Man's a Flower—

Sir Row. Ay, but George was such a Flower! He was, Mr. Twang, he was the very Pink of Prentices. Ah! what a rare rampant Lord Mayor he wou'd have made? And what a swinging Sheriff— [Cries.

Tere. What, cry, so near your Wedding-day, Sir Rowland?

Sir Row. Well, if he be gone—Peace be with him; and 'Ifaks, Sweet-heart, we'll marry, and beget new Sons and Daughters—but—but I shall ne'er beget another George. [Cries.

Tere. This is but a scurvy Tune for your hymenical Song, Sir.

Sir Row. Alas! Mrs. Terefia, my Instrument is untun'd, and good for nothing now but to be hung upon the Willows.

Cry within. Murder, Murder, Murder!

Enter Footman. Sir Merlin with his Sword drawn, and Sir Morgan.

Sir Row. What's here, my Rogue?

Twang. What's the matter, Gentlemen, that ye enter the House in this hostile manner?

Sir Morg. What, Mr. Twang, d'ye see!

Sir Mer. Ay, ay—stand by Divinity—and know, that we, the Pillars of the Nation, are come, d'ye see—to ravish.

L. Blun. Oh, my dear Sir Morgan. [Embraces him.
Sir

400 *The Younger Brother;*

Sir Morg. I do not intend to ravish, like a Jew, in my own Tribe——

L. Youth. What say they, Mr. Twang, ravish? Oh, save my Honour—lead me to my Bed-Chamber, where, if they dare venture to come, they come upon their Peril. [*Twang leads her out. Sir Morgan goes to Tere.*]

Sir Mer. Old Fellow, do'st hear? *Sir Pandarus* of Troy, deliver me my *Cressida*, d'ye see, peaceably, or I am resolv'd to bear her off *Vi & Armis*.

L. Blun. Sweet Nephew retire, we are just upon making your Peace.

Sir Mer. Ha—Old Queen *Gwiniver*, without her Ruff on?

[*Sir Merlin takes hold of her to bear her off;*

she cries out: Sir Rowland draws upon him.

As they are going to fight, George enters.

Geo. Is there a Man in Nature's Race so vile, dares lift a guilty Hand against his Father?

Sir Mer. Father me no Fathers; I fight for *Teresia*, my lawfully begotten Spouse.

Geo. That I once called you Brother, saves your Life; therefore resign your Sword here at his reverend Feet.

Sir Mer. Sirrah; you lye, Sirrah——

Geo. There, drag away this Brute.

[*Disarms him. To the Footman.*]

Sir Mer. Rogues, Dogs, bring Mrs. *Teresia* along with you.

Tere. Sure this is my fine Fellow—and yet the very same that's to be marry'd to my Grandmother; nor can that City Habit hide the Gentleman.

[*George speaks this while with his Father, who embraces him.*]

Sir Morg. Burnt, say you, Mrs. *Teresia* d'ye see—— my Lady *Mirtilla* burnt! Nay then, 'tis time to go to sleep, get sober, and marry again. [*Goes out.*]

Sir Row. Enough, my Boy, enough; thou deserv'st my whole Estate, and thou shalt have it, Boy—This day thou shalt marry the Widow, and I her Grand-child. I'll to my Lawyers, and settle all upon thee instantly. [*Goes out.*]

Geo. How! marry to day—Old Gentleman, you must be cozen'd; and Faith, that goes against my Conscience——

Ha,

Ha, the fair, the young *Teresia* there—When a Man's bent upon Wickedness, the Devil never wants an Opportunity to present him with : that she shou'd be in my way now—Fair Creature, are you resolv'd to be my Mother-in-law ?

Tere. As sure as you to be my Grandfather, Sir—
And see—the News of your being come, has rais'd my Grandmother.

Enter Lettice and Lady Youthly.

Geo. A Pox upon her, her Ghost had been less frightful.

Tere. I cou'd have spar'd her now too ; but see she advances as swift as Time.

Geo. And as old : What shall I do ? I die to speak with you—

L. Youth. Where, where's this young welcome Gentleman ?—Oh, are you here, Sir—

[She sees him not, but runs upon him.]

Lettice, take *Teresia*, and get you to your Chamber, she has her Trinkets to get ready against the Wedding anon, for we'll make but one work of both.

Tere. Ay, 'twill save Charges, Madam—

L. Youth. Ay, ay, get you gone, Lovers sometimes wou'd be private.

Geo. Harkye—leave me not to her mercy ; by Love, if you do, I'll follow you to your Chamber.

Tere. Leave you ! no, hang me if I do, till I have told you a piece of my mind, for I find there's no dallying.

L. Youth. Well, Sir, I have finish'd the great Work.

Geo. I wish you had—*Teresia*, once you made me hope you did not hate me.

L. Youth. What says he, *Teresia* ?

Tere. He says, he hopes you do not hate him, Madam.

L. Youth. No, by my Troth, Sir ; I feel something for you, I have not felt before.

Geo. Not these threescore Years, I dare swear—
You have too much Wit, *Teresia*, to have been only pleas'd with the embroider'd Coat, and gaudy Plume, where still the Man's the same.

L. Youth. What says he, embroider'd Coat and Plume ?

Tere.

Tere. He hopes your Ladyship likes him ne'er the worse, for being without those Fopperies.

L. Youth. Marry do I not, I love not this over-finery in a Husband; those Fellows that dress, think so well of themselves, they never mind their Wives.

Geo. Are you so dull, *Teresia*, not to see, this Habit was put on, only to get an opportunity to tell you my Passion?

L. Youth. Tell me of his Passion! was it so, alas, good young Man——Well, well, I'll defer your Joys no longer, this Night shall make you happy; Mr. *Twang* shall join us, Sir.

Geo. A blessed hearing——you see, charming Maid, how very short a space there is between this and the hastning Hour; stand not on Virgin Niceties, but answer me, our time admits of no Consideration.

Tere. I have not been this Four and Twenty Hours a Lover, to need considering; as soon as you had my Heart, you had my Consent, and that was the first moment I saw you at the Basset-Table.

Geo. Ha! at the Basset-Table?

Tere. Yes, I was the frank Youth that lent you Money—but no more——your Time and Place.

L. Youth. What are you prating to him there?

Tere. He doubts your Love, Madam, and I'm confirming it.

L. Youth. Alas, good Gentleman!——anon I'll convince him——for in the Ev'ning, Sir, the Priest shall make us one.

Geo. Ah, Madam, I cou'd wish 'twere not so long defer'd, for sure I love you like a fighting Swain; and as a Proof of it, I have here prepar'd an Emblem of my Love in a Dance of Country Lovers, where Passion is sincere.

L. Youth. Good-lack-a-day, indeed you're so obliging: But pray let us have the Dance. [Dance.

L. Youth. Very pretty indeed. Come, good Gentleman, don't droop, don't droop; come, hold up your Head——you may be allowed one Kiss beforehand.

Geo.

Geo. [*Kisses her.*] Oh, what a pestilential Blaft was there?
[*Aside.*]

L. Youth. Come, come, *Teresia*, come with me.

Geo. to *Teresia*. I'll send a Chair to your Back-gate anon, that shall wait you on the Field-side, and bring you whither I shall appoint. Get ready instantly.

Tere. And if I fail, may I be eternally damn'd to the Embraces of old Age. [*Exeunt all but George.*]

Geo. *Mirtilla*, thus thy Scorn I will out-brave,
And let my Father the kind Cheat forgive;

*If I with dexterous charitable care
Ease him of Burdens he wants strength to bear.*

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Welborn dressing himself; to him a Footman with a Letter.

Wel. **P**Rithee what became of the Spark that lay with me last Night?

Foot. I know not, Sir, he 'rose before day—What Letter's this, Sir? It lay upon your Toilet.

[*Gives Welborn a Letter.*]

Wel. To the dear Man whose Name I would be glad to know——

[*Reads.*]

Hum——a Woman's Hand——

[*Opens it.*]

The Lady you saw last Thursday in the Mall, you had in Bed with you last Night. Adieu.

Oh! dull Divinity of Love! that by no Instinct, no sympathizing Pains or Pleasure, could instruct my Sense, how near I was to Happiness!

Enter George, fine.

——*Lejere*, behold me here the most unlucky Fellow breathing. Thou know'st I told thee how I was in love with

404 *The Younger Brother ;*

with a young Woman in the *Mall*: And this very Night, I had this very Woman in my Arms.

Geo. Is this your ill Luck, Sir?

Wel. 'Sdeath, all the while I took her for a Man: But finding me asleep, she softly rose; and, by a Light yet burning in my Chamber, she writ this Billet, and left it on my Table. [*Gives it George, he reads it.*]

Geo. By all that's good, *Olivia*!—And were you very honest, Sir?

Wel. To my eternal Shame, as chaste as Ice.

Geo. What will you say now, *Charles*, if I bring this Woman to you again?

Wel. Canst thou? Oh, let me kifs thy Lips away.

Geo. For all her Frolick, *Charles*, she's very honest, a Fortune, and of Quality—and were't not for *Olivia*, thou shouldst marry her.

Wel. *Olivia* I ne'er saw, and now 'twill be too late.

Geo. Nay then, Sir, I must fight in her Defence.

Wel. You fight in her defence! Why, dost thou love her?—By all that's good, I will resign her to thee.

Geo. You shall not, Sir; and know she is my Sister.

Wel. *Olivia* thy Sister!—

Geo. Ask no more Questions, but defend your self, if you refuse to marry her; for her Honour's mine.

Wel. Were she an Angel, I must love this Woman.

Geo. Then thou shalt have her—Haste, and get a Licence—no more—trust my Friendship—Go.

[*Exit Welborn.*]

Enter Olivia.

Olivia, where did you lie last Night?—Nay do not blush, for you may yet be virtuous.

Oliv. Virtuous! Not the young Roses in the bud secur'd, nor breaking Morn ungaz'd at by the Sun, nor falling Snow has more of Purity.

Geo. I do believe you; but your dangerous Frolicks will make the World talk shamefully.

Oliv. Let them talk on, I will not humour Fools.

Geo. No more—here's *Manage*—Contrive an Affligation with *Mirtilla*; but do not hide again where none may

may find you. This done, I'll tell you more, and make you happy. How now, *Manage*, is the Prince stirring?

Man. He's in his Dressing-Room, Sir,——This from my Lady, Sir.

[Slides the Letter into Olivia's Hand as she passes out.

Geo. What have you there, *Olivia*? [Takes the Billet.

Oliv. An Assignment from your perjur'd Mistress, Sir.

Geo. 'Tis well——you must obey the Summons; and wind her up to all the height of Love; then let her loose to Shame. I'll bring her Lover in the height of Dalliance, who, when he sees her Perfidy, will hate her.

Oliv. And then the lovely Man stands fair for me.

Geo. Go write an Answer back——and wait her hour.

[Aside.

[Exeunt severally.

SCENE II. *The Dressing-Room.* Discovers the Prince at his Toylet, dressing. Musick and a Song.

Enter George, waits till the Song is ended. The Prince sees him, comes to him with Joy, and falls about his Neck.

SONG, by Mr. Gildon:

I.

AH Charmion! shroud those killing Eyes,
That dart th' extremes of Pleasure,
Else *Celidon*, tho' favour'd, dies
As well as him that you despise,
Tho' with this diff'rent measure:
While lingring Pains drag on his Fate,
Dispatch is all th' Advantage of my State;
For, ah! you kill with Love, as well as Hate.

}

Abate

II.

*Abate thy Luxury of Charms,
And only Part discover;
Your Tongue, as well as Eyes, has Arms
To give a Thousand fatal Harms
To the poor listening Lover:
Thy Beams, like Glorys veil'd shou'd be,
And like the Front of Heav'n, unseen, pass by;
For to behold 'em, in full force, we die.*

*Prince. Lydia, Oh! I faint, I die with thy Beauty's
Luxury! by Heaven, I'm all Rapture, Love, and Joy:
Such a dear Night, Lejere! — Poets may fancy pres-
sing Goddeses, on downy Beds of Clouds — But
oh, Lejere! — Those Gods were never half so blest
as I!*

Geo. What pity 'twere to wake you from this Dream.

*Prince. It is not in the Power of Time nor Age: For
even then *Mirilla* will have Charms! Oh, how she
speaks! how well she'll grace a Story!*

Geo. How gay her Wit! how movingly she writes!

Prince. I do believe she does. [A little seriously.]

*Geo. Would it displease you, should you see a Billet
from her?*

Prince. That's as it were directed. [Gravely.]

Geo. You would not credit what you saw last Night.

*Prince. Nor wou'd have lost that Night for all the Treas-
ure the vast Ocean hides.*

*Geo. I wou'd not have a Man, so good and great, be
made a Woman's Property — There, Sir.*

[Gives him the Billet.]

*Prince. I'll not believe it her's; there are a thousand
ways to ruin Innocence; if she be false — she's damn'd.
Confirm me, and of course I shall despise her. You cure
me, when you shew her worth my Scorn.*

*Geo. Will you be rul'd then, and believe it Friendship
in me?*

Prince. I will.

Geo.

Geo. Give her, by Absence, but an Opportunity; feign some Excuse to leave the Town to day.

Prince. See where she comes——

Enter Mirtilla.

Adorn'd with all the beauteous Wonders of her Sex. The Gods of Love are playing in her Eyes, and give us Wounds from ev'ry graceful Motion. Ah, my *Mirtilla!* how shall I support the Absence of a many coming Hours, that languish, being from thee but a Moment?

Mir. I hope, my Lord, Fate is not so unkind, to let me live without you many Hours.

Prince. Can all this be dissembl'd? [*Aside to George.*

Geo. How much more have I heard? yet all was false.

Prince. I must this Day——this tedious live-long Day, be absent from thy Sight——but shall be back i'th' Evening: I'll leave *Lejere* to wait on your Commands.

Mir. *Lejere* shall ever, Sir, be dear to me——But I'll retire, and sigh till your Return——that World affords no Pleasure where you are not.

Prince. Do you hear that, Sir? [*Aside to George.* Till Night, thou dearest Blessing of my Life——Adieu.

[*Mirtilla going out, pulls Lejere by the Sleeve.*

Mir. Thou little, mischievous informing Thing, how vainly hast thou lavish'd out Invention! [*Smiling. Exit.*

Prince. By Heaven, methinks 'twere Sin but to suspect her.

Geo. Think so; I'll trouble your Repose no more: I've done my Duty, and I wou'd not see you made a——

Prince. Property—Ha—A loath'd convenient Tool—A Woman's Implement—'Sdeath! she that off—Loose to the nasty Love of every Fool, that will be flatter'd, cozen'd, jilted, cuckolded—No more—I will, unseen, convey my self into the Closet in my Dressing-Room; 'tis near her Bed——and if I find her wanton——

Geo. If you find her——the Youth is waiting now that shall convince you.

Prince. Where?——Oh set the happy Slave but in my View, and——

408 *The Younger Brother ;*

Geo. No faith, Sir, be convinc'd before you strike, for fear she jilt you out of Sense and Reason——

Prince. Come to my Closet, from thence we may observe all that passes in her Chamber ; from whence I'll break upon the perjur'd Fair, like Thunder from a Cloud, and more destructive. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE *discovers Mirtilla and Manage.*

Mir. Is the Prince gone ?

Man. Yes, Madam.

Mir. Then bring *Endimion* to me.

Man. Madam, I wish you'd think no more of him ; for I foresee, that this Amour must ruin you. Remember you left a Husband for the Prince.

Mir. A Husband ! my Drudge, to toil for me, and save me the Expence of careful Thoughts : My Cloke, my Led-Horse, for Necessity to fill my Train—no more—but *Endimion* waits. [*Exit Manage.*

——There is a native Generosity in me, that checks my Inconstancy to this great Man ; yet I have so much Woman in my Soul, cannot pain my self to do him Justice —A new desire of humouring my Wish, sways all my Interest, and controuls all my Honour. Why should I lose a Pleasure for a Promise ? since Time, that gives our Youth so short a Date, may well excuse our needful Perjury. [*Enter Manage, and Olivia, she runs and embraces him.*

——Let the young bashful Maid, unskill'd in Love, deny the pressing Swain.

Let wither'd Age, who fondly dreams of Virtue, lose the dear Opportunities of Life.

The coming Hours present themselves to us ; and are too nice, not to be snatch'd when offer'd.

Oliv. So hasty ! this disarms me of Excuse. [*Aside.*

Mir. Why are thy Eyes bent down ? Why dost thou pause ?

Oliv. So hot !——I must prepare to shew my Sex's Evidence, if nothing else will do. [*Unbuttons her Coat.*

Mir. What not a Word !

Advance

Advance thou bashful Youth—Love in thy Eyes, and Coward in thy Heart! The one all Fire, the other too much Ice.

Prince and George looking out.

Prince. Yet stay me, my *Lejere*, from my hasty Vengeance.

Oliv. Ah, Madam, how are you mistaken! 'Tis not Coldness in me—but—

Mir. What, Bashfulness!

Oh, Love will lend thee Courage;
This Trembling is the soft Effects of it.

Oliv. Oh, how vilely she's mistaken!

Mir. Come to my Bed, and press the Roses down;
and lend more sweetness to 'em than they bring.

[She leading him to her Bed, the Prince enters, with Lejere, holding his Sword in Hand; he takes hold of Olivia.]

Prince. Love—thus I fling thy gaudy Fetters off,
and am no more a Slave to faithless Beauty.

[The Prince holding Olivia by the Bosom of her Coat, her Breast appears to Mirrilla.]

Mir. Ha! what do I see?—Two Female rising Breasts. By Heav'n a Woman.—Oh fortunate Mis-chance!

[This while George is arguing with the Prince not to hurt Olivia.]

Prince. No, I will not hurt thee, cease thy trembling.

Mir. Oh, Sir, 'twere Sin to hurt the lovely Youth.

Prince. No, Madam, since I have taken back my Heart, I can present you with another Lover.

[Gives Olivia to her.]

Mir. Ha! another Lover!—What means my Prince?

Prince. Eternally to leave you to your Frailty.

Mir. Can you so easily cancel all your Vows?
Then kill me at your Feet, I do implore it.

[Kneels and weeps.]

Prince. Away, I do forgive thee, wretched Woman.
—But yet be gone—lest Love and Rage return,
and I should kill you yet with your young Darling.

Mir. Whom mean you, Sir, this lovely Maid?

Oliv. Maid! ——— What means she? Sure she cannot know me.

Prince. Talk on, false Woman! till thou hast persuaded my Eyes and Ears out of their native Faculties, I scorn to credit other Evidences.

Mir. Try 'em once more, and then repent, and die.

[*Opens Olivia's Bosom, shews her Breasts.*]

Prince. Ha——by Heav'n a Woman!

Mir. You that wou'd smile at my suppos'd undoing, present your self no more before my Eyes.

'Twas to perplex you that I feign'd this Passion.
I saw you had your Spies to watch for Mischief,

[*To George.*]

And poison all my Happiness with the Prince. ———

And since I am thought so criminal, I'll take an everlasting leave of you.

[*To the Prince.*]

When I am dead, may she you honour next repay your Tenderness, as I have done——But may she never meet my wretched Fate. [She snatches Olivia's Sword out.]

Prince. Hold, thou most valu'd Treasure of the World, or turn the pointed Weapon to my Heart.

Mir. No, I'm false, unworthy of your Love.

Geo. Yes, by Heaven. But thou hast jilted him so handsomly, thou'st vanquish'd all my Rage.

Mir. Yes, I am false; false to this Gallant Man,——

[*To George.*]

false to my Husband, to my Sex's Fame; for you more charming, I alas am perjur'd.

Prince. Lejere, have I then injur'd thee?

Geo. This is the fatal Beauty, Sir, for whom so often you have seen me languish.

Prince. Ah! wouldst thou see me on a Precipice, and not prevent my Danger?

Geo. To mightier Friendship I cou'd all surrender, and silently have born her Perjuries; but those to you, awaken'd all my Rage: but she has out-trick'd me, and I beg her Pardon——And to secure her yours, have lov'd anew, and beg Protection in your Lodgings, Sir, for a young Maid whom I design to marry.

Prince.

Prince. Command my Life, my Fortune, and my Sword, for the unwilling Injury I have done thee—And is this the charming perjur'd Fair, *Mirtilla*?

Geo. It is, Sir.

Prince. Since it is possible that you cou'd cease to love this Gallant Man, whom I have heard with so much tender Passion tell your Loves, what sacred Vows had pass'd, and what Endearments, how can I hope from thee a lasting Faith?—Yet on the Oaths that thou hast sworn to me—by all thy Hopes of Pardon for thy Perjuries, to ease my panting Heart,—once speak the Truth—Didst thou not take this Woman for a Man?

Mir. I did—and were she so, I wou'd with Pride own all the Vows I've broke.

Prince. Why this is fair—and tho I buy this Knowledge at the vast Price of all my Repose; yet I must own, 'tis a better Bargain than chaff'ring of a Heart for feign'd Embraces—Thou hast undone me—yet must have my Friendship; and 'twill be still some Ease in this Extreme, to see thee yet repent, and love *Lejere*.

Mir. No, Sir, this Beauty must be first declining, to make me take up with a former Lover.

Geo. No, Sir, I have dispos'd my Heart another way; and the first knowledge of her Falshood cur'd me: Her Marriage I forgave—that thing of Form—but never could her Fondness to this Youth.

Prince. Who's this Lady, Sir, whose Pardon I must beg?

Geo. My Sister, Sir, who I disguis'd on purpose to be a Guard to this suspected Fair One.

Enter Welborn.

Wel. Ha, she's there!

Now every Feature points me out my Conqueress.—Nay start not—I have found Thee, thou malicious Charmer, to bring me so near to Bliss, and not afford me one kind hint.

Oliv. And are not you a very dull Fellow, that lov'd and long'd, and had the Maid so near you, and yet need'd a Hint?

Wel. Nay, if you conceal'd your precious Talent, how shou'd it profit any body?

Oliv. Conceal'd it!—No, Faith, I made a very fair Tender; but you refus'd it, as not being current Coin.

Wel. But if you most feloniously, and unlawfully de-face our Sovereign's Image, so as it may be as soon taken for the Grand Signior's, I may suspect the Metal too.

Oliv. What say you if I tender it before these lawful Witnesses?

Wel. I'll take it for good Payment—— I *Charles Welborn*——

Oliv. Ha, *Welborn*! [Aside.

Wel. Take thee—whom?—Gad if the Parson of the Parish knew your Name no better than I—'twill be but a blind Bargain.

Geo. *Olivia Marteen*——

Wel. My destin'd Wife!

Geo. The very same: Have you the Parson ready?

Wel. He waits in my Chamber.

Oliv. Madam, I beg you'll lend me something more becoming my Sex.

Mir. *Manage* will furnish you from my Wardrobe.

[Exit *Olivia*.

Enter Terefia.

Geo. And see my good Genius appears too.

Tere. See, Sir, I am resolv'd to be welcome to your Arms; look, here are the Writings of the Estate my Grandfather left me, and here's three thousand Pound my Grandmother has settled on me, upon her Marriage with you. [Gives him the Writings.

Geo. And here's my Father's Estate settled on me—— Come let's put them together——and go in, and let the Parson do as much for us. [Puts 'em in her Case.

Tere. But have you very well considered this Matter?

Geo. *Terefia*, we'll do like most Couples, marry first, and consider afterwards—— [Leads her in.

Enter

Enter a Footman.

Foot. Sir, here's Sir Merlin, with a Lady mask'd, wou'd speak with you.

Wel. Carry 'em into the Dining-Room, I'll wait on 'em anon. [Exeunt Omnes.

SCENE, my Lady Youthly's; Discovers her, and Lettice dressing her.

L. Youth. Hold the Glas higher, Lettice; is not this Tour too brown?—Methinks it does not give a youthful Aire to my Face.

Lett. That's not in Nature.

L. Youth. Like Nature! Ay, but Nature's self wants Art, nor does this Fontange suit with my Complexion—put on a little more red, Lettice, on my Cheeks, and Lips. [She does so.

Lett. Ay, for they are but a little too much upon the Coventry-Blue—This Tour must come more forward, Madam, to hide the Wrinkles at the corners of your Eyes. [Pulls it.

L. Youth. Ay, Lettice, but there are others, that neither Tours, nor Paint, nor Patches will hide, I fear—yet altogether, Lettice.

[Puts on her Spectacles, and looks in the Glas.

Enter Sir Rowland.

Sir Rowl. What, no Bride yet, nor Bridegroom?

L. Youth. Ay, what can be the meaning of this?

Sir Rowl. But Teresa, Madam, where can she be gadding?

L. Youth. Why Lettice tells me, she went to buy some Trifles to adorn her this Night—Her Governante is with her, and my Steward.

Enter Mr. Twang.

Twang. Alas, what pity 'tis; the Supper is quite spoil'd, and no Bridegroom come!

A Noise of hallowing without, and Musick.

Enter Lady Blunder.

L. Blun. Bless us! Here's a whole Regiment of Liveries, Coaches, and Flambeaux at the Door! the Fops of

414 *The Younger Brother;*

the Town have heard of a Wedding, and are come in Masquerade.

Enter Musick playing; after them, Prince Frederick leading Mirilla, George leading Terefia; Sir Merlin, Diana; Mrs. Manage, Britton; Pages, and Footmen, all in Masquerade. Sir Morgan comes in, all in Mourning; Welborn, and Olivia.

Sir Mer. Hearing of a high Wedding, Sir, we made bold (as the saying is) to give you Joy. Sir, are not you the Bridegroom?

Tere. Where's your Bride, Sir? Ha! ha! ha!

Sir Mer. Ay, ay, where's your Bride?

Sir Rowl. What's that to you, Sir Coxcomb?

Sir Mer. Hum—how the Devil came he to know me now?—Is this reverend Gentlewoman your Lady, Sir?

Sir Rowl. Ounds, they come to mock us!—Hark ye, hark ye Tawdrums, if you are Men, shew your Faces; if Apes, play over your Monkey-Tricks, and be gone, d'ye hear. ——— We are not at leisure for Fooling.

Geo. Be but at leisure, Sir, to pardon [George kneels. this one Disobedience of my Life, and all the rest I'll dedicate to please and humour you. Sir, I am marry'd.

[Pulls off his Mask.

Sir Rowl. What the Devil's that to me, Sir?

Geo. Do not you know me, Sir?

Sir Rowl. No, Sir, nor don't care to know any such flaunting Coxcombs.

Geo. Look on me, Sir. [Looks on him, knows him, goes away, and returns.

Sir Rowl. Hum, hum, hum ———

Tere. It is your Son, Sir, your darling Son, who has sav'd your Life from Infolence.

Sir Rowl. Hum——*Terefia!*

L. Youth. How, *Terefia!* what robb'd me of my intended Husband? Oh undone! undone!

[Falls into a Chair.

Sir Rowl. And hast thou, after all, served me such a Rogue's Trick, thou ungracious Varlet? What cuckold thine own Father!

Geo.

Geo. Oh do not frown, I cannot bear your Anger:
Here will I hang for ever till you pardon me.

[Clasps his Knees.

Sir Rowl. Look——look——now cannot I be angry
with the good-natur'd young Rogue—— [Weeps.
Well George——but harkye, Sirrah, this is a damn'd
Trick of yours.

Geo. Sir, I found my Youth was fitter for her than
your Age, and you'll be as fond of a Grand-Child of my
begetting, as you would of a Son of another Man's, per-
haps.

Sir Rowl. Thou'rt in the right on't.

Sir Mer. Ha! Is Monsieur Lejere then my Brother
George?

Geo. Sir, here's another Couple wants your Pardon;
my Brother Merlin, and my Lady Diana.

L. Blun. Diana! what, Sir Harry Modish's Mistress?

Dia. Yes, he pawn'd me at the Basset-Table; and, in
revenge, I resolv'd to marry the next Man of Fortune I
met with.

Sir Rowl. The Fool had more Wit than I thought he
had; for which I'll give him a thousand Pound a Year.

Geo. I humbly thank you, Sir.

Mir. Pray, melancholy Sir, who are you in Mourn-
ing for?

Sir Morg. Alas! Madam, for a Person of Quality that
was my Wife; but rest her Soul, she's burnt. [Weeps.
And I shall never see any thing again like her.

Mir. No! What think you of this Face, Sir?

Sir Morg. As Gad shall sa' me, as like as if the same.

L. Blun. In troth, and so she is.

Prince. 'Tis true, she was once your Wife; but I have
preserv'd her from the Flames, and I have most Right
to her.

Sir Morg. That's a hard Case, Sir, that a Man must
lose his Wife, because another has more Right to her than
himself; is that Law, Sir?

Prince. Lover's Law, Sir.

L. Blun. Ay, ay, Son, 'tis the Fashion to marry one
Week, and separate the next: I'll set you a Precedent for
it my self. In

*In this time Welborn kneels with Olivia ;
Sir Rowland takes 'em up, and kisses 'em.*

Sir Morg. Nay, if it be the Fashion, I'll e'en into the Country, and be merry with my Tenants, and hawk, and hunt, and Horse-match.

Prince. But now, Sir, I'll resign my Right to you, and content my self with the Honour to have perserv'd her from the Fire.

[Prince delivers Mirtilla to Sir Morgan, who receives her.]

Sir Morg. As Gad shall sa' me, Sir, you're a civil Person ; and now I find you can endure a Woman, Sir, I'll give you leave to visit her.

Sir Rowl. Well, since we're all agreed, and that the Fiddles are here, adsnigs we'll have a Dance, Sweet-heart, tho thou hast out-witted me.

*[Takes Teresia, George takes Lady Youthly, &c.
After the Dance, Lady Youthly weeps.]*

Geo. What, weeping yet? Here, Mr. Twang, take the Lady to your Care ; in these Cases, there's nothing like the Consolation of your young Chaplain.

*The Widow, with young Jointure, and old Face,
Affected Mien, and amorous Grimace,
Uses to fall to th' younger Brother's share ;
But I by Fortune, and industrious Care,
Have got one that's rich, witty, young, and fair.*

}
}

EPILOGUE,

Spoken by Mr. Horden.

WE're grown impatient to be out of pain,
 And fain wou'd know our Fortune, Loss, or Gain:
 The Merchants Phrase mayn't be improper now,
 If ye our City Character allow.
 But some spruce Critick, I hear, swears 'tis strange,
 To take a powder'd Beau off from the Exchange;
 A place more fam'd for Band, and Dress precise,
 For greasy Cuckolds, Stockjobbers, and Lyes,
 Than for a Spark o'th' Town: but now-a-days
 The Cit sets up in Box, puffs, perfumes, plays;
 And tho he passes for a Man of Trade,
 Is the chief Squeaker at the Masquerade.
 Let him his Sister, or his Wife beware,
 'Tis not for nothing Courtiers go so far.
 Thus for awhile he holds, till Cash is found
 To be a Debtor many a woful Pound;
 Then off he moves, and in another Year
 Turns true Alsatian, or Solicitor.
 For we (except o'th' Stage) shall seldom find,
 To a poor broken Beau, a Lady kind:
 Whilst pow'rful Guinea lasts, he's wondrous pretty,
 And much the finest Gentleman o'th' City;
 But when Fob's empty, he's an odious Creature,
 Fough how he stinks! h'as not one taking Feature;
 Then such an aukard Mein, and vulgar Sense,
 I vow I wonder at his Impudence.
~~'Tis well Lejere appear'd, George owes the Prize~~
 To the gay Monsieur, Footmen, and Disguise,

Charms

418 EPILOGUE.

*Charms which few English Women can withstand;
What can't a Man of Quality command?*

*As to the Faults, or Merits of the Play,
We leave you to be Judges of; yet say,
Ye ought in justice to be kind to day.*

*For to our Cost, alas, we soon shall find,
Perhaps not half the Money ye design'd,
Consider, Sirs, it goes to be refin'd.*

*And since in all Exchanges 'tis a Notion,
For what ye take to be in due Proportion;
So may we justly hope no wrong is done ye,
If ye have par of Wit, for par of Money.*

The End the Fourth Volume.

